

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3701 - The Greatest Love - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3701 - The Greatest Love

Chapter 3701 - The Greatest Love

“Senior.”

Chu Feng immediately rushed to support Gu Mingyuan.

At the same time, he released his spirit power and began to treat her injuries.

Upon beginning his treatment, he discovered that Gu Mingyuan was extremely weak, and her soul was not only scalding, but was also extremely chaotic. It seemed like her soul was on the verge of scattering.

An expert like Gu Mingyuan was actually on the verge of death.

“Buzz~~~”

Then, more spirit power appeared and enveloped Gu Mingyuan.

It was Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“Grandmaster, Chu Feng, how did Mingyuan become like this?” Chu Xuanzhengfa walked over.

Chu Xuanzhengfa’s face was covered in blood. It was an injury caused by Gu Mingyuan pushing him away earlier.

However, he did not bear any grudge against her. Instead, he was extremely worried about her condition.

“She ignited her soul,” said Chu Feng.

“Ignited her soul?!” Chu Xuanzhengfa’s expression immediately changed upon hearing those words.

As a martial cultivator, how could he not know how dangerous it was to ignite one’s soul? That was simply an act akin to suicide.

Thus, he immediately asked, “Why did she do that?”

“It’s most likely some sort of special method that could increase her speed by igniting her soul.”

“Otherwise, she wouldn’t have caught up to us this quickly after setting off for the Mirror Sea later than us.”

“Likely, she learned about what happened to your daughter upon returning to the Chu Heavenly Clan. For the sake of your daughter, she disregarded her life to chase after us,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

Hearing those words, Chu Xuanzhengfa felt enormous pain. With a ‘putt,’ he fell on his knees. Tears mixed with the blood on his face.

Chu Feng had known Chu Xuanzhengfa for a long time, and knew that he was a man of steel.

Even when the crusading army composed of ten thousand martial cultivation experts came to crush the Chu Heavenly Clan, even when the Blood-devouring Hall wanted to exterminate the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Xuanzhengfa did not cower in the slightest, and did not shed a single tear.

However, in the recent days, Chu Feng was no longer able to remember how many times Chu Xuanzhengfa had cried.

That said, only two people were able to cause Chu Xuanzhengfa to tear up.

One was his daughter, Chu Lingxi.

The other was his wife, Gu Mingyuan.

Regardless of whether or not Gu Mingyuan recognized Chu Xuanzhengfa as her husband, Chu Feng was able to tell that Chu Xuanzhengfa loved her deeply.

“Mingyuan, why are you so foolish?”

Chu Xuanzhengfa arrived before Gu Mingyuan again. Pain and grief filled his tear-filled eyes.

Chu Xuanzhengfa’s extended hand stopped before coming in contact with Gu Mingyuan. He did not dare to touch her.

Seeing Chu Xuanzhengfa like that, Chu Feng sighed in his heart, 'Senior, are you not foolish yourself?'

Chu Feng still remembered what Chu Xuanzhengfa said without any hesitation when Grandmaster Liangqiu mentioned that Chu Lingxi needed new eyes.

For the sake of his daughter, he was willing to lose his own eyes.

Remembering Chu Xuanzhengfa at that time and seeing Gu Mingyuan, who had ignited her soul in order to chase after them out of worry for Chu Lingxi, Chu Feng's heart was deeply moved.

If love truly existed in the world, then the greatest love of them all would be paternal and maternal love.

.....

As the situation was urgent, Grandmaster Liangqiu immediately handed the task of treating Gu Mingyuan's injury to Chu Feng after stabilizing her condition.

Then, bringing Chu Feng and the others along, he began to search for that old friend of his.

Although the Mirror Sea appeared to be tranquil like a mirror, the sky above it would rain year round without stopping for a single day.

However, there was a straw hut in such a poor environment.

That straw hut was very small, and appeared to be very frail. Normally, with the amount of rainfall present in the Mirror Sea, such a straw hut should be destroyed instantly.

However, that straw hut was standing above the sea beneath the black clouds. Although it was bombarded by rain and wind, not a single piece of straw was blown away. It was so tenacious that it seemed miraculous.

That straw hut was the residence of Grandmaster Liangqiu's friend.

Grandmaster Liangqiu's friend was a mysterious person.

Although Grandmaster Liangqiu had known him for many years, he still didn't know his name. All he knew was that that mysterious person was surnamed Zhu.

There were many hidden experts in the martial cultivation world. Although these people were not known to the public, they were very powerful.

In Grandmaster Liangqiu's impression of all the Ancestral Martial Starfield's hidden experts that he knew, this friend of his who would stay in the Mirror Sea year-round was the strongest of them all.

Zhu was not only an Utmost Exalted, but he was also already a Dragon Mark Saint-cloak World Spiritist by the time Grandmaster Liangqiu had met him.

Although everyone in the Ancestral Martial Starfield would say that Grandmaster Liangqiu was the Ancestral Martial Starfield's strongest world spiritist, only Grandmaster Liangqiu himself knew that the Zhu fellow hidden in the Mirror Sea was the actual strongest world spiritist in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

For a hidden expert that powerful, his residence would naturally not be a simple straw hut.

Although all of the rain was landing on the straw hut, there was actually a layer of spirit formation outside the straw hut.

Although that spirit formation did not affect the weather, it was capable of isolating martial cultivators.

That was a spirit formation cast by a Dragon Mark Saint-cloak World Spiritist. Ordinary people were simply unable to pass through it, much less discover the hidden expert surnamed Zhu.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, several figures ignored that spirit formation and arrived before the straw hut.

They were naturally Chu Feng, Grandmaster Liangqiu and the others.

After being treated by Chu Feng, Gu Mingyuan had regained consciousness. Although she was still very weak, she was awake.

Only Chu Lingxi was still unconscious...

“We are truly fortunate. That old codger is actually here.”

After passing through the spirit formation, joy appeared on Grandmaster Liangqiu’s face.

What he feared the most was his old friend not being there. After all, this old friend of his rarely stayed in the straw hut, and instead spent the majority of his time immersed in the Mirror Sea. Furthermore, every time he left the straw hut, he would spend at least half a month inside the Mirror Sea. On longer occasions, he would even be gone for several years.

At that moment, they were there to seek him out with an urgent matter. Thus, they could be said to be extremely lucky that he was inside the straw hut.

“Liangqiu, why did you bring strangers here?”

“Have you forgotten about our agreement?”

A voice sounded from the straw hut. Not only was this voice ice-cold, but it was also filled with displeasure. It simply did not sound like a voice of someone welcoming one’s old friend.

“Brother Zhu, I know that you do not like to be disturbed. But, I truly have no choice but to disturb you today. I truly hope that you can help us,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“What matter do you need my help with?” asked the person inside the straw hut.

“I wish to know the location of the Deepsea Pupils,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“Deepsea Pupils? How could I reveal the location of something so precious to others?” said the person in the straw hut.

“Brother Zhu, this is a matter of life and death. Please take me into consideration and help us,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“It’s a matter of life and death for someone else, not you,” said the person inside the straw hut.

“Quickly reveal where the Deepsea Pupils are or else I will tear down this hut of yours!”

Suddenly, a furious shout was heard. It was Gu Mingyuan.

Gu Mingyuan was very short-tempered to begin with. Furthermore, the matter concerned the life and death of her daughter.

For the sake of Chu Lingxi, Gu Mingyuan was willing to ignite her soul to chase after her. As such, she would naturally not be willing to waste time.

Everyone knew that Gu Mingyuan was not making a threat. She was really planning to do what she declared.

However, right after Gu Mingyuan said those words, Grandmaster Liangqiu was immediately terrified. Not only did he begin to give her meaningful looks, but he even sent voice transmissions to her urging her to calm herself.

The reason for that was because Grandmaster Liangqiu knew that this friend of his was the archetype of someone who was amenable to coaxing, but not coercion.

“Is this the attitude of someone requesting another’s help?”

“Very well. I shall see how you’re going to tear down my hut.”

Sure enough, the person inside the house showed no fear of Gu Mingyuan. Instead, his voice was filled with contempt.

He did not place Gu Mingyuan in his eyes at all.

When had the confident and arrogant Gu Mingyuan ever encountered such contempt?

Chu Feng was able to see fury surging in Gu Mingyuan’s eyes. In fact, he could even sense a faint killing intent emitting from her.

The current Gu Mingyuan was akin to an active volcano that could erupt at any moment.

Should she erupt, things would get out of hand. None of them would be able to stop her.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng, Chu Xuanzhengfa and Grandmaster Liangqiu were all extremely nervous.

They were extremely afraid that Gu Mingyuan would become violent. Disregarding whether or not the person inside the hut was really only amenable to coaxing but not coercion, it remained that that person was Grandmaster Liangqiu's friend.

Grandmaster Liangqiu going through such hardship to bring them there was already an act of great benevolence and righteousness.

If Gu Mingyuan decided to attack his friend now, it would be extremely disrespectful toward Grandmaster Liangqiu.

Unfortunately, they all knew that Gu Mingyuan was someone that could not be contained.

“Putt~~~”

Suddenly, a muffled sound was heard.

In the next moment, Chu Feng, Chu Xuanzhengfa, and Grandmaster Liangqiu were all stunned.

They were astonished to discover...

...that the insufferably arrogant Gu Mingyuan was actually kneeling on the ground!!!

Chapter 3702 - Exchange Using One's Life

Gu Mingyuan's action greatly stunned Chu Feng.

Whilst kneeling might seem to be a simple action, it would depend on who the person kneeling was.

Gu Mingyuan was a person filled with pride. How could she possibly kneel to others, much less someone who dared to show such contempt towards her?

However, at that moment, she had made her decision and decided to kneel.

Chu Feng and the others knew that the only reason Gu Mingyuan would make such a decision was Chu Lingxi.

“Senior, I apologize for my offensive words earlier. If senior is angry, please punish me however you wish.”

“However, I beg of you. Please inform us of the location of the Deepsea Pupils.”

Not only did Gu Mingyuan kneel, but she was even speaking with a petty and lowly tone as she apologized and begged the person inside the hut.

Seeing Gu Mingyuan like that, Chu Xuanzhengfa and Grandmaster Liangqiu’s eyes were filled with complicated emotions.

It was the first time they had seen Gu Mingyuan begging someone.

"Present to this old man ten loud kowtows and I will consider it," sounded the voice from the hut.

When that voice was heard, Chu Feng, Chu Xuanzhengfa and even Grandmaster Liangqiu felt their hearts tremble.

Even Grandmaster Liangqiu felt that this friend was being too excessive.

Even a kitten would have a temper. Thus, how could Gu Mingyuan, a fierce tiger even amongst tigers, not be furious?

To treat her like this was simply akin to inviting a disaster upon oneself.

However, to everyone’s surprise, Gu Mingyuan was not only not enraged, but she instead actually began to kowtow without any hesitation.

"Woosh~~~"

However, right when Gu Mingyuan’s head was about to touch the ground, a hand appeared before her forehead and stopped her.

That hand did not belong to Chu Feng, Grandmaster Liangqiu or Chu Xuanzhengfa.

Instead, it belonged to an old man...

That old man was as thin as a match. He had the deathly pale complexion of someone seriously ill.

Not only was that old man ugly, but he also had the face of a very cunning and ruthless individual.

That old man was naturally the friend of Grandmaster Liangqiu.

After helping Gu Mingyuan back up, the old man looked towards the unconscious Chu Lingxi on her back.

Seeing the current Chu Lingxi, even the old man revealed an emotional look.

“If I didn’t witness it myself, this old man wouldn’t have believed that someone was actually capable of making Gu Mingyuan kneel.”

“Little girl, you are truly quite capable,” that old man said with a faint smile.

“Senior, I beg of you, please tell me where the Deepsea Pupils are. I am willing to use anything in exchange for that information.”

Suddenly, Chu Xuanzhengfa also knelt. Impatient to cure Chu Lingxi, he began to beg that old man too.

However, faced with Chu Xuanzhengfa’s plea, that old man laughed coldly.

“Anything in exchange for that information? Someone as poor as you does not possess even an Incomplete Exalted Armament. What could you possibly use to exchange for the priceless Deepsea Pupils?”

Once he said those words, Chu Xuanzhengfa had a look of embarrassment. It was as the old man had said, he did not have anything worthy of exchanging for the Deepsea Pupils.

He was simply too anxious in wanting to save Chu Lingxi that he subconsciously said those things. However, he knew that he had misspoken.

“Senior, this junior did not intend to offend you. Merely, senior, you can also tell that Lingxi’s condition is extremely serious.”

“If there are other methods, this junior wouldn’t have come to trouble senior.”

“Senior, please give us a demand. Even if it’s something that we cannot honor right now, we will definitely honor your demand in the future.”

“Senior, please tell us where the Deepsea Pupils are,” said Chu Feng.

“Child, you know how to speak well. This old man is quite fond of your words,” the old man looked to Chu Feng. Then, he said, “That said, brat, you said that you will honor any demand I make? In that case, hand over your life in exchange for the Deepsea Pupils. Are you willing to do that?”

“I am,” Chu Feng said without hesitation.

“Chu Feng, you must not!!!”

Right after Chu Feng said those words, Chu Xuanzhengfa, Grandmaster Liangqiu and even Gu Mingyuan’s expressions changed enormously. At practically the same time, the three of them all urged Chu Feng against it.

Even though they all wanted to cure Chu Lingxi, none of them wanted to use his life in exchange for her vision.

If they were to truly regain Chu Lingxi’s vision using his life, they would not only feel guilty, but Chu Lingxi would not forgive herself either.

“Senior, if you really need my life, I will give it to you.”

Chu Feng had a look of determination.

Even though it was Chu Lingxi who had decided to take on Linghu Hongfei, it remained that Linghu Hongfei’s intention in coming to the Chu Heavenly Clan was to challenge him.

Thus, Chu Feng felt extremely guilty about what had happened to her.

Although he did not wish to die, as there were still a lot of things he needed to do, and he had not met his mother and grandfather yet, not saved Su Rou and Su Mei yet, not found Zi Ling yet and not bid his farewell to Eggy yet...

...he was still willing to die should that be required of him. He was truly willing to use his life to give Chu Lingxi the chance to restore her eyesight.

“There’s no grievance between this old man and you, why would I want your life?” That old man smiled. Then, he said, “However, you all need to know this. Every year, there are seven days when the tide of the Mirror Sea is the most violent.”

“These seven days could be said to be the most dangerous period of the Mirror Sea. No one will enter the Mirror Sea during these seven days.”

“These seven days are known as the Forbidden Seven Days. No one will dare to enter the Mirror Sea during the Forbidden Seven Days,” said the old man.

Hearing those words, Gu Mingyuan, Chu Xuanzhengfa and Grandmaster Liangqiu all revealed ugly expressions.

They had all heard about the so-called Forbidden Seven Days.

“Brother Zhu, could it possibly be that it’s the Forbidden Seven Days now?” asked Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“The timing of things is truly unlucky. It is indeed the Forbidden Seven Days right now.”

“Furthermore, the Forbidden Seven Days begins from today. In other words, if you want to wait for the most dangerous period to pass, it will take seven days.”

“However, this old man is able to tell that this little girl seems to only have two more days. Thus, you all cannot afford to wait.”

“If you all want to help her obtain the chance to regain her eyesight, you will have to risk your lives.”

“Are you all truly willing to do so?” asked the old man.

“I’m willing.”

Three voices sounded in unison.

They were Chu Feng, Gu Mingyuan and Chu Xuanzhengfa. They all voiced their determination without any hesitation.

“Very well, you have courage. Actually, the Deepsea Pupils do not belong to this old man. Instead, they belong to the Mirror Sea.”

“If you all are truly capable of obtaining it, they will naturally belong to you.”

“Since you all possess the courage to take on this challenge, this old man is quite interested in seeing whether or not you will succeed.”

“Follow me.”

After saying those words, the old man soared into the sky.

Chu Feng and the others immediately followed after him.

Guided by the old man, they arrived at an extraordinary region.

Although the undercurrents of the Mirror Sea were extremely violent, its surface appeared extremely tranquil. It could even be said to be very beautiful, unrealistically beautiful.

However, the water beneath Chu Feng and the others was different from the other regions of the Mirror Sea.

Even though that region of water was also mirror-like, the water was pitch-black.

Like the mouth of a vicious Evil Spirit, one could not see the bottom. Danger lurked from all around. Seeing this sea, one would feel uneasy.

“The Deepsea Pupils are located below. However, I must remind you, the Deepsea Pupils are not so easily obtained.”

“You shouldn’t bother entering. If you are to enter, you will only be throwing away your life,” the old man said as he pointed at Chu Xuanzhengfa.

After he finished saying those words, he turned to Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan, “Even for the two of you, you might not necessarily be able to return alive.”

“Puu~~~”

“Puu~~~”

Right after that old man finished saying those words, two splashes of water appeared below.

Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan had disappeared.

The two of them had dived into the Mirror Sea.

Only Chu Feng’s voice was still echoing in the torrential rain.

“Thank you for your guidance, senior.”

Chapter 3703 - The Stubborn Chu Feng

Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan entered the Mirror Sea at practically the same time.

Upon entering the Mirror Sea, Chu Feng was able to see surging waves wreaking havoc beneath.

Sure enough, the Mirror Sea's reputation was well-deserved.

Although its surface appeared tranquil, the water within surged violently. Danger lurked on every side within the Mirror Sea.

After entering the Mirror Sea, Chu Feng felt a piercing cold.

It was a feeling akin to ice-cold blades sweeping past his body repeatedly.

The further down he dove, the more intense that sensation became.

This sort of oppressive sensation that Chu Feng felt was caused by the Mirror Sea's seawater.

Fortunately, Chu Feng was still able to withstand the sensation, and the piercing cold was unable to cause substantial damage to his body.

Furthermore, what brought Chu Feng the greatest joy was that he discovered that, different from outside the Mirror Sea, his Heaven's Eyes were effective upon entering the Mirror Sea.

Chu Feng was able to see a deep blue light deep in the seawater.

Although that light was very faint, it was very peculiar.

Chu Feng determined that that light was the legendary Natural Oddity, the Deepsea Pupils.

“Woosh~~~”

At practically the same instant when Chu Feng discovered the Deepsea Pupils, Gu Mingyuan dove straight toward their location.

Evidently, she had also discovered the Deepsea Pupils using her own special observation ability.

“Wuuahh~~~”

However, before Gu Mingyuan could approach the Deepsea Pupils, she let out a scream.

Chu Feng saw an enormous wave of water rushing out from the seafloor below.

That wave was very powerful. Not only did it push Gu Mingyuan back, but it also left her completely bloodied.

Gu Mingyuan was injured. Furthermore, her injury was rather serious.

“Senior!!!”

Chu Feng immediately rush to Gu Mingyuan. He wanted to treat her injury.

However, right after Chu Feng arrived before her, she dove down again.

This time around, she was emitting a white light from her body.

It was an Immortal Technique. That Immortal Technique was capable of increasing her speed.

After using her Immortal Technique, Gu Mingyuan turned into a flash of white light as she rushed toward the Deepsea Pupils.

“Wuuahh~~~”

However, the result from this attempt was the same as the previous attempt. Before she could reach the Deepsea Pupils, a powerful wave battered her back.

“Damn it! What the hell is that?! It’s simply impossible to approach!”

Gu Mingyuan was completely bloodied. Open wounds filled her body.

However, her gaze was still fixed on the location of the Deepsea Pupils.

Anger and unreconciliation filled her eyes.

“Senior, the suppression of the Mirror Sea seems to not be determined too much by one’s cultivation, no?” Chu Feng asked.

The reason why Chu Feng asked that question was because there was an enormous difference in cultivation between him and Gu Mingyuan.

If the oppressive power from the Mirror Sea was a simple oppressive power, the depth that Gu Mingyuan was able to reach should be a depth that Chu Feng could not endure.

However, Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan were both at the same depth, and enveloped by the same region of water. Although they were both under pressure, their pressure seemed to be the same amount.

The pain that they were feeling was the same. Chu Feng did not feel greater pressure because his cultivation was weaker.

“That’s right. The oppression from the Mirror Sea is determined by the individual. Regardless of what cultivation one might have, everyone seems to be faced with the same amount of pressure,” said Gu Mingyuan.

“If everyone will be faced with the same pressure after entering the Mirror Sea, why would Grandmaster Liangqiu say those below Martial Immortal will be torn to pieces after entering the Mirror Sea?”

“Furthermore, why would Grandmaster Liangqiu’s friend tell senior Chu Xuanzhengfa that he must not enter this place?” Chu Feng asked.

“As one’s cultivation increases, one’s willpower will also increase. You should’ve discovered that the oppressive sensation from this place will bring you pain. However, your body is uninjured by it.”

“Actually, what the oppressive sensation from this place does is whittle away at your willpower.”

“More than anything, the Mirror Sea is a place that torments one’s willpower. If one’s willpower is insufficient, one’s soul will be torn apart.”

“Martial Immortals and those below do not possess sufficient willpower. Even if the oppression from the Mirror Sea is of the same degree, they will still not be able to endure it.”

“Chu Feng, you should’ve also realized that you’re able to withstand the oppression of this place due to your astonishing willpower, no?”

“After all, you’re not only an Exalted-level martial cultivator, but you’re also a Saint-cloak World Spiritist,” after Gu Mingyuan finished saying those words, her expression suddenly changed. She asked, “Why did you suddenly ask such a question?”

“This junior has already guessed that might be the case. However, I wanted to confirm it. That’s why I asked senior.”

“Now that I’ve received senior’s confirmation, we can retrieve the Deepsea Pupils.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng turned his gaze downward.

“Senior, earlier, I was inspecting the wave that injured you and pushed you back. That wave was released by a small-scale formation.”

“I will go and seal off that formation. Senior, you will then attempt to retrieve the Deepsea Pupils,” said Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, that wave is different from the oppression from the Mirror Sea. It is capable of causing considerable harm.”

“Look, even I was left injured to such a state. If you are attacked by that wave, you will definitely end up dying,” said Gu Mingyuan.

“Senior, I feel that the wave is the same as the oppression from the Mirror Sea.”

“Even though our cultivations differ greatly, it will bring the same amount of oppression to us.”

“I will not sustain greater injuries than senior,” after saying those words, Chu Feng was prepared to dive down.

“No, you must not do that,” however, before Chu Feng could dive down, he was pulled back by Gu Mingyuan.

“Senior, we don’t have much time. We must obtain the Deepsea Pupils quickly. Otherwise, we would’ve come here in vain,” Chu Feng turned around.

“Even if that’s the case, we cannot have you risk your life,” said Gu Mingyuan.

“Senior, you yourself said that I’m not an ordinary Exalted-level martial cultivator. I am also a Saint-cloak World Spiritist.”

“Thus, you should trust my judgement,” said Chu Feng.

Complicated emotions appeared in Gu Mingyuan’s eyes. For a moment, she didn’t know what to do.

“No, if you plan to go, then we will go together. I will block that formation and you will go retrieve the Deepsea Pupils,” said Gu Mingyuan.

“Senior, you already attempted it earlier. It’s impossible for you. However, it might be possible for me,” said Chu Feng.

“No, I cannot allow you to take such risks,” Gu Mingyuan spoke with determination.

Hearing those words, determination flashed through Chu Feng’s face. Then, he clenched his teeth and revealed a look of pain. Following that, blood flowed from the corner of his mouth.

In merely an instant, Chu Feng became much weaker. He seemed like he was seriously injured.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? Have you gone mad?”

Seeing this, Gu Mingyuan’s expression changed enormously.

The reason for that was because she discovered that Chu Feng was harming his own soul. His action was akin to suicide.

“Senior, this is my own decision. Please respect my decision, release me and allow me to attempt it,” Chu Feng said to Gu Mingyuan.

“You...” Gu mingyuan was left in a very difficult position.

She truly did not wish for Chu Feng to brave such dangers. However, he was simply too stubborn.

If she continued to hold him back, he would continue to harm himself.

At that time, he might end up killing himself by harming his soul too much.

Furious yet helpless, Gu Mingyuan sighed. She then released Chu Feng's hand.

"Be careful, and approach slowly. If you can't endure it, return immediately."

"Even if Lingxi is unable to be cured right now, she will at most lose her eyesight. There must be another way to treat her."

"You absolutely must not throw away your life for her eyesight," said Gu Mingyuan.

"Senior, please rest assured, I know what to do."

Chu Feng let out a faint smile. Then, he turned around and began to swim toward the location of the Deepsea Pupils.

Seeing Chu Feng's back as he swam away, unease filled Gu Mingyuan's face, and a complicated emotion filled her eyes.

If she didn't witness it with her own eyes, she would not believe that Chu Feng would really decide to brave dangers for Chu Lingxi's sake.

Chu Feng's action was a gamble; a gamble using his own life.

If it was as he had said, and the power of that wave was the same as the oppressiveness of the Mirror Sea, he would be able to live.

However, if the power of the wave was absolute, he would undoubtedly be killed.

Chapter 3704 - Terrifying Forbidden Area

While Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan were inside the Forbidden Sea, trying their best to obtain the Deepsea Pupils...

In another region in the Ancestral Martial Starfield, a different scene was occurring...

There was a forbidden area in the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

This forbidden area was sealed off year-round. Apart from the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, no one was allowed to enter it.

Even the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Supreme Elders were not qualified to enter the forbidden area.

However, At that moment, the forbidden area was open.

This time, five people entered the forbidden area.

Two of them were old men and one was an old lady. They were respectively...

Supreme Elder Linghu Wentai.

Supreme Elder Linghu Yuhua.

And Supreme Elder Linghu Boyuan.

The Linghu Heavenly Clan had a total of eight Supreme Elders.

Among them, five were peak Exalted. Only three had reached the Utmost Exalted realm.

Thus, those three individuals had a special status within the Linghu Heavenly Clan. They were the strongest battle power of the Linghu Heavenly Clan apart from their Lord Clan Chief.

Furthermore, those three Utmost Exalted-level experts were precisely the three Supreme Elders present.

Apart from the three Supreme Elders, there was a middle-aged man.

That middle-aged man had extraordinary airs. Even though he had the look of a middle-aged man, his handsomeness was not at all glossed over.

That said, he had a head of long white hair. His long hair scattered across his back and all the way down to his feet. Combined with his white clothes, he appeared extremely graceful.

Although the three Supreme Elders were present, he was standing there without any fear.

Instead, it was the three Supreme Elders that stood orderly behind him.

The reason for that was because that middle-aged man was the strongest expert of the Linghu Heavenly Clan...

The current Clan Chief of the Linghu Heavenly Clan, Linghu Zhishi.

Apart from the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the three Supreme Elders, there was also a person of the younger generation.

That person of the younger generation was the strongest genius of the Linghu Heavenly Clan, Linghu Hongfei.

"Lord Clan Chief, Hongfei did not intend to offend you."

"Merely, I was clearly about to eliminate that Chu Feng when you suddenly called me back. I had originally thought that something major had happened in the clan."

"However, upon returning, it's turns out to be all because this formation has opened?"

Linghu Hongfei felt extremely displeased.

In the Chu Heavenly Clan that day, he had held absolute confidence in being able to defeat Chu Feng.

However, their Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had suddenly issued an urgent recall order.

The urgent recall order not only demanded his immediate return to the Linghu Heavenly Clan, but it also ordered him to make an appointment to fight Chu Feng again in three months.

Because of that, Linghu Hongfei thought that something major had happened in their clan, and immediately rushed back.

However, upon rushing back, he discovered that it was only the opening of a formation that their Lord Clan Chief wanted him to enter.

"Hongfei, you need to understand that I've prepared this formation for your sake."

"This formation can only be opened for a limited amount of time. Thus, how could you allow yourself to miss out on this golden opportunity?" said the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

“Lord Clan Chief, Hongfei knows that you’ve prepared this all for my sake. Merely, that Chu Feng has brought humiliation upon me. I simply cannot tolerate it,” said Linghu Hongfei.

“As long as you possess sufficient strength, why be so eager to take care of him?”

“Unless you’re afraid that as time passes, you will no longer be Chu Feng’s match,” the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“I fear him? I am merely itching to teach him a lesson,” said Linghu Hongfei.

“Since you don’t fear him, you can very well teach him a lesson in three months’ time. As for now... you should enter the formation,” said the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

At that moment, Linghu Hongfei turned his gaze to that grand formation.

The grand formation was the entrance to a cave. The opened entrance was emitting a crimson radiance.

In fact, one could faintly hear terrifying, anguished wailing from the cave. It was truly horrifying. Furthermore, one could not see what the inside of the cave was like.

Faced with such a formation, even Linghu Hongfei felt somewhat scared.

“Lord Clan Chief, exactly what is inside this grand formation?”

“You only said that it’s beneficial to me, you’ve never mention what sort of benefit it will give me,” said Linghu Hongfei.

The three Supreme Elders also looked at their Lord Clan Chief with curiosity.

Like Linghu Hongfei, they also wanted to know exactly what was inside that tightly regulated forbidden area.

That said, facing Linghu Hongfei’s curious gaze, the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief only let out a faint smile. He said, “Don’t ask too much. You will thank me when you come out.”

Hearing those words, Linghu Hongfei felt rather helpless. It was the first time he had encountered their Lord Clan Chief beating around the bush like that

“Linghu Hongfei!”

Right at that moment, a furious shout was heard. Then, three figures flew over.

The person leading them was Linghu Yueyue. The other two were elders of the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

“Lord Clan Chief, Lord Supreme Elders, we are truly sorry in failing to stop Princess Yueyue.”

Upon landing, those two elders immediately knelt on the ground and began apologizing with fear filled faces.

They knew very well that they were not allowed to enter the forbidden area.

“You two can dismiss yourselves,” the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief waved his hand.

Seeing that, the two elders immediately bowed and rushed out with their fastest speed, like they were fleeing the tiger’s den.

“Yueyue, you need something?” Linghu Hongfei flew toward her and asked.

“Linghu Hongfei, you’ve truly become more capable. Although I’m unable to witness you going to take care of Chu Feng, why must you dig out Chu Lingxi’s eyes?”

“I’ve heard that Chu Lingxi is a young woman. To publicly dig out the eyes of a young woman, are your actions not too excessive?” Linghu Yueyue spoke with great resentment.

“Yueyue, you need to know that that servant girl insulted our Linghu Heavenly Clan. I am already extremely merciful to not kill her,” said Linghu Hongfei.

“Even if that is the case, you shouldn’t dig out her eyes. What you’ve done will make the people of the world ridicule you. They will say that you, Linghu Hongfei, are rude and unreasonable.”

“You weren’t like this before. The you from before would not possibly do this sort of thing,” Linghu Yueyue added.

“Aooouuu~~~”

Right at that moment, an extremely ear-piercing roar sounded from within the formation.

That roar was very terrifying. Hearing that roar, Linghu Yueyue's expression changed greatly. She was terrified by it, and immediately hid behind the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"Hongfei, you don't have to pay attention to Yueyue. Go on in. Don't miss this great opportunity," said the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

Hearing that roar, Linghu Hongfei was also slightly scared. However, he still summoned up his courage and walked into the formation.

"Rumble~~~"

After Linghu Hongfei entered the formation, the entrance of the cave immediately sealed up.

"Father, what is in there?"

Linghu Yueyue asked the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

The Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had a look of excitement.

He said, "It is a place that can once again transform your big brother Hongfei."

"When he exits that place, he will become the strongest genius in the history of the Ancestral Martial Starfield."

"Not to mention that Chu Feng, even Chu Xuanyuan and Chu Hanxian will become people of the past."

The Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was filled with confidence when he said those words.

Hearing those words, the three Supreme Elders and Linghu Yueyue, although still having no idea as to what was inside the formation, realized that it was no small matter.

Chapter 3705 - Strange Spirit Formation Gate

"Father, you should lecture big brother Hongfei."

“He has changed. He is no longer like before,” said Linghu Yueyue.

“Yueyue, this is your actual big brother Hongfei. If anything, it can only be said that you did not know him well in the past,” said the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Father, what do you mean?”

Hearing those words, Linghu Yueyue’s expression changed. Unease appeared in her eyes.

“Yueyue, in the past, our Linghu Heavenly Clan needed to lay low and endure silently. However, we no longer need to do so.”

“Thus, Hongfei no longer needs to pretend to be an educated and well-behaved youngster.”

“He’s now capable of being a person that brings fear upon everyone in the world,” the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said to Linghu Yueyue.

Hearing those words, the unease in Linghu Yueyue’s eyes grew even more intense. She seemed to have a lot of things that she wanted to say. However, in the end, she didn’t say anything.

She sensed ambition from Linghu Hongfei. However, she sensed even stronger ambition from her father.

She didn’t know if this was a good thing or a bad thing for their Linghu Heavenly Clan.

However, she was not fond of such a Linghu Hongfei, not fond of such a father.

That said, she knew very well that it was impossible for her to change anything.

“Lord Clan Chief.”

Suddenly, an old man rapidly flew over and landed before the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

This old man was not an ordinary old man. Instead, he was a Supreme Elder of the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

Even though he also did not possess the qualifications to enter that place, the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was simply in a great mood. Thus, instead of punishing him for coming there, he instead smiled and asked with a very amiable tone, "What's wrong?"

"Lord Clan Chief, please have a look."

That elder walked over and opened a case. After the case was opened, a firefly-like bead of light flew out.

Upon seeing that bead of light, the expression of the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief immediately became stern.

That bead seemed to contain something inside it. Merely, one needed a special method to decipher its contents.

Furthermore, the special method could only be used once. Otherwise, the bead would shatter.

That said, the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief possessed the method to decipher the contents of the bead.

After the bead was unsealed, it scattered and turned into a ray of light that entered the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's forehead.

In the next moment, the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's face brimmed with joy.

"Send an order to the Tantai Heavenly Clan, Jiaoli Heavenly Clan, Heaven-reaching Beast Clan and Nightmare Spirit Clan," said the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"Lord Clan Chief, are we going to carry out the final battle against the Starfield Master Realm?"

The four Supreme Elders asked in unison.

The Tantai Heavenly Clan and the Jiaoli Heavenly Clan had already entered an alliance with them. However, unless it was during crucial moments, the two clans would not involve themselves in the war.

Since the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had decided to issue an order to them, it meant that they had a huge operation in mind.

Faced with that question, the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief let out a faint laugh. "Battle?"

"It would be more exact to say that we will be thoroughly eliminating the Wuming Clan from the Ancestral Martial Starfield."

When he said those words, a look of absolute confidence appeared on his face.

.....

Meanwhile. Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan were still in the Mirror Sea.

Gu Mingyuan was still standing at the same location as she looked down at Chu Feng, below who was diving deeper into the water. Shame and pain filled her gaze.

Chu Feng had really managed to accomplish what he said he could. He was slowly going deeper and deeper, forcibly withstanding successive powerful waves coming from below.

Even though the speed at which he was diving was very slow, he was making steady progress.

That said, Chu Feng had paid a considerable price in order to accomplish such a feat.

Forcibly taking on the waves with his body left his body in tatters.

It was not only his physical body that was completely mutilated; even his soul received enormous trauma.

Once Chu Feng's body was mutilated by the impact of a wave, he immediately recovered. It was like he was completely fine, undying and indestructible. No matter how the waves pounded against him, he remained alive, and continued to dive.

However, Gu Mingyuan knew Chu Feng was not really undying and indestructible. Instead, he had some sort of special ability. When he was not attacked by a power much greater than his own, that ability would grant him an undying and indestructible body.

In fact, that was indeed the sort of ability that Chu Feng possessed.

It was the Five Elements Secret Skills.

The Five Elements Secret Skills were obtained by Chu Feng in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.

They were originally very powerful. Merely, as Chu Feng's cultivation increased, the Five Elements Secret Skills began to lose their effect.

However, the Five Elements Secret Skills still had one effect.

That is, should Chu Feng fight someone of the same cultivation or the same battle power, he would be practically unkillable.

At that moment, the reason why Chu Feng was able to withstand the attacks from the waves was due to none other than the Five Elements Secret Skills.

It could be said that the effect of the Five Elements Secret Skills was an ability that could save his life, or even allow him to mount surprise attacks.

However, after Chu Feng arrived in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, the opponents he encountered that possessed the same cultivation or battle power as him were practically all no match for him.

As for those people capable of posing a threat to him, their strength was much greater than his own.

Thus, even though the Five Elements Secret Skills granted Chu Feng an undying and indestructible body, their ability could not be used due to the unfavorable conditions.

However, the Five Elements Secret Skills finally came to good use again.

The power and impact of the waves were the same for every individual.

In other words, they brought the same sort of pain to Chu Feng as they did to Gu Mingyuan.

The power of the wave was only slightly stronger than the individual, making the individual unable to contend against it. However, it was not strong to a degree where it could kill the individual.

With the situation being like that, Chu Feng's Five Elements Secret Skills were able to be of use.

Using the power of the Five Elements Secret Skills, Chu Feng obtained an undying body, and continued to slowly submerge himself.

Even though it took a rather long time, Chu Feng still succeeded.

After some time had passed, he reached the seabed. He was even able to see the Deepsea Pupils with his naked eyes.

The Deepsea Pupils came in a pair. They were eye-sized and completely azure, like seawater.

However, if one were to look closely, one would see that they seemed to contain an ocean, a boundless ocean.

Beautiful. They were truly beautiful. Seeing the Deepsea Pupils, Chu Feng felt slightly comforted.

Chu Lingxi's eyes were very beautiful to begin with. They were practically irreplaceable.

However, after seeing the Deepsea Pupils, Chu Feng felt that perhaps the Deepsea Pupils might be able to replace her eyes.

The Deepsea Pupils were not only extremely beautiful, but they also contained enormous power.

If they were used as Chu Lingxi's eyes, perhaps they would be able to provide great assistance to her on her martial cultivation path.

Although Chu Feng was able to see the Deepsea Pupils, the Deepsea Pupils were still quite a distance away from him.

It was simply impossible for him to retrieve them from his current location. Thus, after a brief moment of observing them, Chu Feng turned his gaze to a place nearby.

There was a cave entrance-like spirit formation gate. The waves that battered Chu Feng nonstop were released by that spirit formation gate.

Chu Feng arrived before that spirit formation gate and set up a spirit formation. Using that spirit formation, he forcibly blocked up that spirit formation gate.

Although he couldn't seal the spirit formation gate completely, he made it so that it couldn't send out any more waves.

However, because of that, Chu Feng was unable to move.

He had to continuously use his spirit power to suppress the spirit formation gate. If he left the vicinity, the spirit formation gate would send out waves again.

Feeling that he had succeeded, Chu Feng shouted, "Senior, it's up to you!"

Hearing Chu Feng's words, Gu Mingyuan immediately rushed forth and arrived before the Deepsea Pupils.

"Buzz~~~"

However, before she could retrieve them, an enormous suction enveloped her.

Another spirit formation gate appeared at a location near the Deepsea Pupils.

However, that spirit formation gate was completely different from the spirit formation gate Chu Feng had sealed up.

The spirit formation gate Chu Feng had sealed up released waves outward to push others away.

However, the spirit formation gate that had appeared near the Deepsea Pupils was different. That spirit formation gate released suction power that would suck one into it.

The suction was extremely powerful. Not even Gu Mingyuan was able to resist it. Even though she tried everything to escape the suction, she was still slowly being sucked into the spirit formation gate.

Gu Mingyuan tried all sorts of methods to break free. She tried to create spirit formation clones, used Immortal Techniques, world spirit techniques and even secret skills to block that spirit formation gate.

However, all of them were completely useless. All of her abilities were sucked into that spirit formation gate.

Most terrifying of all, that spirit formation gate was not only emitting a massive suction power, but it was also emitting an extremely terrifying aura.

It was the aura of death. Sensing that aura, both Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan knew that they could not allow themselves to fall into that spirit formation gate. Otherwise, they might end up losing their lives to it.

Chapter 3706 - Determination To Confront Death

“Damn it!”

Seeing that the situation had turned bad, Chu Feng also began to think of a way to help Gu Mingyuan.

Unfortunately, even though he was a Saint-cloak World Spiritist, he was still helpless against the situation.

Seeing Gu Mingyuan about to be sucked into that spirit formation gate, Chu Feng was burning with anxiety.

However, he was unable to move. He had to use all of his strength to seal off the spirit formation gate before him. If he didn't, it would send out waves again.

The waves would push from all directions, and Gu Mingyuan was now also within range.

If things weren't lucky, the wave might directly push Gu Mingyuan into that spirit formation gate emitting the aura of death.

Should that be the case, not only would Chu Feng bring forth harm upon Gu Mingyuan, but even he himself would be drawn into the spirit formation gate of death.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at this moment of imminent peril, a figure suddenly entered the sea from above. That person directly arrived before the spirit formation gate emitting the suction power and stopped it.

Upon seeing that person, Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan both cried out ‘oh no’ in their hearts.

The two of them both recognize that person. It was Chu Lingxi's father, Chu Xuanzhengfa.

That spirit formation gate was very dangerous. For Chu Xuanzhengfa to appear before it, he would undoubtedly be courting death.

"Why did you come down here? Wasn't it said that you could not come in here with your cultivation?"

Seeing Chu Xuanzhengfa, Gu Mingyuan revealed a look of nervousness and worry.

This was the first time Chu Feng had seen such an expression on Gu Mingyuan's face.

Gu Mingyuan had been reacting to Chu Xuanzhengfa with anger and disgust the entire time.

If he didn't see it himself, Chu Feng would not have believed that Gu Mingyuan would worry for Chu Xuanzhengfa.

"I am Lingxi's father. How could I watch passively from above while the two of you risked your lives?" said Chu Xuanzhengfa.

"But you..."

Gu Mingyuan wanted to say something. However, before she could finish, Chu Xuanzhengfa interrupted her, "Say no more. Mingyuan, seize this moment and retrieve the Deepsea Pupils. I... will not be able to last for long."

Chu Xuanzhengfa was not joking around. At that moment, close to half of his body had been sucked into the spirit formation gate.

His veins bulged, and there was an expression of pain on his face.

Even though he had managed to block the spirit formation gate with his body, he did not appear to be able to last for long.

Seeing that, Gu Mingyuan did not dare to hesitate in the slightest. She immediately rushed towards the Deepsea Pupils again.

This time, she smoothly arrived before the Deepsea Pupils and managed to come into contact with them.

“Buzz~~~”

In an instant, blue light started shining brightly. In an instant, the blue light engulfed the entire sea.

At that moment, the sea became extremely beautiful. The violently surging undercurrents all stopped.

Unfortunately, the suction power of that spirit formation gate was still present. Furthermore, the spirit formation gate Chu Feng was tasked with sealing was also present.

Most importantly, even though Gu Mingyuan had managed to get ahold of the Deepsea Pupils, it was no easy task for her to retrieve them.

The two Deepsea Pupils seemed to be fixed in place. Even a martial cultivation expert like Gu Mingyuan was unable to move them.

“Eeeeahhh~~~”

Suddenly, Gu Mingyuan let out a loud shout, and released an enormous amount of power.

As the power she released was too powerful, it began to wreak havoc. Even the soil on the seabed started to burst apart.

That entire region of sea started to tremble violently. It seemed like the sea was boiling over.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard. The sea started to quake violently. It seemed like the world was about to collapse.

However, that terror did not occur. Instead, the Deepsea Pupils entered Gu Mingyuan’s hands.

At that moment, Gu Mingyuan turned her gaze to Chu Xuanzhengfa.

Chu Xuanzhengfa had been completely sucked into the spirit formation gate. Only his hands were still tightly grabbing onto the spirit formation gate.

Neither Chu Feng or Gu Mingyuan were still able to see him. However, they were able to hear his voice.

“Mingyuan, take care of Lingxi,” Chu Xuanzhengfa’s voice sounded from the spirit formation gate.

Chu Feng was able to see that even though Gu Mingyuan had a look of hesitation, she knew her mission.

She clenched her teeth and then started rising, rushing toward the surface of the sea.

Only her voice was still resonating in the sea...

“Hold on a bit longer. I will come back to save you two immediately.”

After Gu Mingyuan reached a safe area, Chu Feng’s body shifted, and he began to rush toward Chu Xuanzhengfa.

He couldn’t possibly watch and do nothing as Chu Xuanzhengfa died. He was determined to pull him out from that spirit formation gate.

“Wuuah~~~” *noVe(lb)-In*

However, right after Chu Feng left, the spirit formation gate that he was sealing immediately released a powerful wave.

The wave pushed Chu Feng straight toward the spirit formation gate emitting the attractive force.

Chu Feng had guessed correctly. Sure enough, the spirit formation gate that emitted waves ended up pushing him toward the other spirit formation gate.

“Chu Feng, don’t come over!!!”

Chu Xuanzhengfa’s voice sounded again. After his voice was heard, his hands let go of the spirit formation gate.

Chu Xuanzhengfa was unable to withstand the powerful suction force, and had completely fallen into that spirit formation gate.

Hearing Chu Xuanzhengfa, Chu Feng felt extremely complicated.

Behind him was an enormously powerful wave pushing him forward. Even if he wanted to back out, he would not have the chance to do so.

That said, Chu Feng had no intention to back out. Since he had made the decision to save Chu Xuanzhengfa, he was naturally prepared for the possibility of death.

Thus, without cowering, Chu Feng rushed straight into the spirit formation gate that was emitting that enormous suction.

.....

Meanwhile, Gu Mingyuan arrived above the Mirror Sea.

“Seniors, please take care of Lingxi for me.”

Gu Mingyuan handed the Deepsea Pupils to Grandmaster Liangqiu. Then, she took a glance at the still unconscious Chu Lingxi.

Love filled Gu Mingyuan’s eyes. At the same time, she felt very relaxed.

After obtaining the Deepsea Pupils, she was acting like she had completed her mission.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, she turned around and intended to dive back into the sea.

This time around, her eyes were filled with determination. It was the determination to face death.

However, before Gu Mingyuan could dive back into the sea, she was stopped by a hand. It was old man Zhu.

“This girl has already lost her father. Are you planning to have her lose her mother too?” he asked.

However, Gu Mingyuan did not hesitate. Her body shifted, and a big splash soared into the sky. She had dived back into the Mirror Sea.

Grandmaster Liangqiu realized that the situation was bad. Not knowing the truth, he turned to ask his friend, “Brother Zhu, you’re able to see the situation inside?”

“Could it be... Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa have met a bitter encounter?”

Chapter 3707 - Fusion

“I have never seen anyone returning alive after entering the Mirror Sea’s Gate of Death,” said that old man.

“Gate of Death?”

Grandmaster Liangqiu’s expression changed greatly upon hearing that name.

He’d known that old man for many years. Thus, he had learned some secrets unknown to anyone else from the old man.

The reason why the Mirror Sea was dangerous was not limited to only the undercurrents that attacked one’s willpower and soul.

The Mirror Sea also possessed many spirit formations.

Some spirit formations possessed the power of isolation, and some possessed enormous destructiveness.

Reportedly, the most dangerous formation among them was a spirit formation gate that emitted an enormous suction force.

Old man Zhu had once called that spirit formation gate the Gate of Death.

The reason for that was because the people that fell into that spirit formation gate would never return.

“Could it be that Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa were sucked into that Gate of Death?” asked Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“That girl’s father was sucked into it. As for that boy, he voluntarily entered it. Likely, he’s trying to save her father.”

“He’s actually truly one of intense loyalty. Unfortunately, he doesn’t know how terrifying the Gate of Death is,” said old man Zhu.

“Because of that, Gu Mingyuan is entering the Mirror Sea again to save them?” Grandmaster Liangqiu came to a sudden realization.

“Naturally. Never would I have imagined for Gu Mingyuan to be such a loyal individual too.”

“It is truly great to be young. You don’t have to fear anything,” the old man said with a faint smile.

“Why didn’t you stop her when you knew what she was intending to do?” Grandmaster Liangqiu had a slight look of blame on his face.

“Did this old man not try to dissuade her against it earlier?” old man Zhu asked.

“What use is dissuasion? You should’ve stopped her. Why didn’t you stop her when you’re clearly capable of doing so? That’s a life!” Grandmaster Liangqiu questioned in a somewhat angry manner.

“Rest assured, with that Battering Gate present, she’s simply unable to approach the Gate of Death.”

“Earlier when I tried to dissuade her, I was merely trying to test her out to see if she was as brave as that boy; if she really dared to attempt to enter the Gate of Death to save them.”

The ‘Battering Gate’ the old man spoke of was the gate that emitted waves nonstop.

What the old man said was completely correct. Without Chu Feng sealing off that Battering Gate, the Battering Gate was once again active.

It was capable of pushing Chu Feng to the seafloor and the Gate of Death.

Likewise, it was capable of pushing Gu Mingyuan back up, making it impossible for her to reach the Gate of Death.

No matter how much she wanted to save Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa, she was unable to do anything.

Most importantly, although the Battering Gate was active the entire time, the Gate of Death had closed.

“Damn it! Damn it!”

Seeing that the Gate of Death had closed and that she was unable to approach it, Gu Mingyuan started to shout with grief and indignation.

Her shouts resonated loudly; even Grandmaster Liangqiu, who was above the Mirror Sea, was able to hear her clearly.

That said, he had no time to concern with Gu Mingyuan. He knew very well that Chu Lingxi did not have much time.

Thus, he must quickly assimilate the Deepsea Pupils with Chu Lingxi's soul.

However, after trying it for some time, he started to frown.

"Brother Zhu, this seems to be much more complicated than I've imagined. Forgive me, but I will have to request your assistance."

Grandmaster Liangqiu had placed the Deepsea Pupils into Chu Lingxi's eye sockets.

He was using his abilities to try to fuse them with her. Unfortunately, he discovered that he was unable to fuse them.

Helpless, he turned to old man Zhu for assistance.

"Liangqiu, although you've become a Dragon Mark Saint-cloak World Spiritist, you're not up to the level of a Dragon Mark Saint-cloak World Spiritist at all."

Seeing that scene, old man Zhu let out a mocking laugh.

"Please don't make cutting remarks towards me for now. We must save her first."

"For the sake of obtaining these Deepsea Pupils, we've already paid such an enormous price. If this girl cannot be cured..."

"This old man would not be able to live up to Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa's sacrifice."

Compared to the calm and indifference from old man Zhu, Grandmaster Liangqiu became so anxious that he was sweating cold sweat.

Furthermore, he had a look of shame and guilt on his face.

He was the one who had proposed finding the Deepsea Pupils. Thus, he felt that if Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa truly ended up encountering some sort of mishap, he would be the one who had caused it.

Even if no one blamed him for it, his own conscience would still make him feel extremely guilty.

“Whether they live or die has nothing to do with me.”

“Forget it. I’ll give you face and help you this once.”

Old man Zhu laughed. Then, he arrived before Chu Lingxi and placed his palm on her eyes.

When his palm moved away from her eyes, her eyes were closed.

Even though nothing special appeared to have happened to Chu Lingxi, Grandmaster Liangqiu had a stunned expression.

He was able to tell that she had fused with the Deepsea Pupils. Even though their fusion was still not complete, it would only take a short while to complete.

Something that he felt to be very difficult to accomplish was easily accomplished by old man Zhu.

“Old fellow, exactly how powerful are you?” Grandmaster Liangqiu looked to old man Zhu with a complicated expression.

“I’m afraid that my strength will surpass your imagination,” old man Zhu was not at all modest towards Grandmaster Liangqiu’s praise.

“Since you’re so powerful, why don’t you go save Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa?”

Grandmaster Liangqiu’s tone lowered a lot when he said those words. He seemed to be pleading.

He truly did not wish for them to die.

“Liangqiu, that’s being excessive. No matter what, we’ve known each other for many years. You want me to take on such risks just because you don’t want them to die?”

“If I am to enter that Gate of Death and become unable to return, what then?”

“Besides, that Gate of Death has already closed. It’s not so simple to save them,” said old man Zhu.

“Sigh~~~”

Grandmaster Liangqiu had a look of regret on his face.

He felt what old man Zhu said to be very reasonable.

Even though he very much wanted Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa to be saved, he should not ask old man Zhu to brave such risks.

“Liangqiu, you seem to be very fond of that boy? Is he your disciple?” asked old man Zhu.

“That’s what I had hoped for. Unfortunately, Chu Feng is unwilling to become my disciple,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“What? He actually refused you, the strongest world spiritist in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield?” exclaimed old man Zhu.

“Stop with your cutting remarks. You’re the strongest world spiritist,” Grandmaster Liangqiu said.

“I’m not from the Ancestral Martial Starfield. I cannot be counted. Thus, you’re the strongest,” said old man Zhu.

Grandmaster Liangqiu had a look of deep concern and worry. He was in no mood to bicker with old man Zhu. Thus, he merely rolled his eyes at him and said no more.

However, old man Zhu was unwilling to let him off the hook, “Liangqiu, stop with all the sighing. That kid is unable to differentiate good from bad, why be so concerned with his life and death?”

Chapter 3708 - A Chance To Live

“Brother Zhu, you might have experienced greater things. That’s why you feel that Chu Feng’s life and death doesn’t matter.”

“However, that child’s talent is the strongest that this old man has ever witnessed. At least, his talent is the strongest in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“I feel that as long as he continues to mature, he will not only be able to shine brightly in the Ancestral Martial Starfield, but he might even be able to allow the Ancestral Martial Starfield to shine in the entire Holy Light Galaxy.”

“You should know how low and petty our Ancestral Martial Starfield’s status is in the Holy Light Galaxy.”

“For many grand occasions of the Holy Light Galaxy, the people of our Ancestral Martial Starfield are not even qualified to participate.”

“If we are to encounter others outside, we will not even dare say that we’re from the Ancestral Martial Starfield, for we will be looked down upon should we say so.”

“Most sorrowful of all, many people in the Ancestral Martial Starfield do not recognize that.”

“This is especially true for those people of the younger generation. Just because they’re somewhat talented, they believe themselves to be extraordinarily amazing. However, they have no idea that the wider world has people that are more talented than them.”

“While they are indeed dragons among fish in the Ancestral Martial Starfield, if they are to be placed in the entire Holy Light Galaxy...”

Grandmaster Liangqiu stopped upon saying those words. He let out a sigh before continuing, “Chu Hanxian, Chu Xuanyuan, and Chu Feng. The three of them are all capable of bringing light upon our Ancestral Martial Starfield. They were even able to make the Holy Light Galaxy take note of and respect the people of our Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“Unfortunately, both Chu Hanxian and Chu Xuanyuan are no longer with us. Chu Feng is our final hope.”

“I truly hope that one day a youngster can exit the Ancestral Martial Starfield and make it so that the people of the Holy Light Galaxy will no longer show contempt when mentioning us in the future. As for this change, it will all be because of that youngster...” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“A single person to change the opinion of everyone? You truly place high hopes on that boy.”

Hearing Grandmaster Liangqiu’s hopes, old man Zhu only laughed mockingly.

“Chu Feng is capable of it. I firmly believe that he is capable. He is capable of making the people from the Holy Light Galaxy have a whole new level of respect for our Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“It is just like how the Ancestral Martial Starfield has a whole new level of respect for the Chu Heavenly Clan now.”

“Unfortunately, it is truly a pity.”

As he said those words, Grandmaster Liangqiu’s eyes were not only filled with regret, but they were also filled with grief.

“Never would I have imagined that you, old codger, would concern yourself with the greater good so much.”

“I might as well tell you this. Although the Gate of Death is dangerous, it does not mean absolute death.”

“If that boy is truly as extraordinary as you stated, he might be able to return alive,” said old man Zhu.

“There’s a chance to return alive?” Hearing those words, Grandmaster Liangqiu’s expression changed.

“That’s right. It’s just that the chance is very small,” said old man Zhu.

“In that case, do you know if there’s anyone that ever managed to exit the Gate of Death alive?” Grandmaster Liangqiu hurriedly asked.

“There is. He’s standing before you,” old man Zhu pointed to himself.

“You entered it and returned alive?” asked Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“If I didn’t return alive, how could I be standing here?” said old man Zhu.

“In that case, if one wanted to return from the Gate of Death, does one’s cultivation matter?” asked Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“Cultivation doesn’t matter much. Rather, it’s still one’s perception and willpower that matters,” said old man Zhu.

“If that’s the case, it would truly be great!”

At that moment, Grandmaster Liangqiu’s worry not only decreased greatly, but he also had a look of expectation in his eyes.

“Old codger, how come your face changed so quickly? Are you not worried about him already?” asked old man Zhu.

“Didn’t you say that there’s a chance that he’ll live?” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“There is indeed a chance to live. However, that chance is not something that everyone can grasp,” said old man Zhu.

“You managed to exit the Gate of Death alive. This means that Chu Feng will definitely be capable of it too,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“What do you mean by that? How come I’m feeling that you’re utterly looking down on me?” said old man Zhu.

“Haha. No, I’m not looking down on you. Rather, this old man knows how powerful that boy is,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“You’re that confident in him?” asked old man Zhu.

“While I am not confident in others, I am confident in him,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“Very well, since you said it like this, I will break my rules this time around.”

“As long as that boy is able to last for four hours inside the Gate of Death, I will help him,” said old man Zhu.

“Very well,” Grandmaster Liangqiu immediately agreed to it. However, he soon realized that something was amiss. He hurriedly asked, “In that case, how do you know whether or not he’ll be alive after four hours?”

“Don’t underestimate this old man. Practically everything in the Mirror Sea is within my grasp.”

"This old man has even entered the Mirror Sea's Mirror Core," said old man Zhu.

Thus, you're able to see what sort of situation Chu Feng is in right now?" asked Grandmaster Liangqiu.

"Of course," said old man Zhu.

"In that case, how's their current situation?" asked Grandmaster Liangqiu.

"The mysteriousness of heaven must not be revealed," said old man Zhu.

"You old bastard," Grandmaster Liangqiu laughed.

After their conversation, he grew less worried about Chu Feng.

He had learned from old man Zhu's words that Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa were still alive.

Furthermore, even though old man Zhu didn't act to save them, there was still a possibility that Chu Feng would be able to survive.

Furthermore, old man Zhu said that if Chu Feng could last for four hours, he would act to help them.

Grandmaster Liangqiu already felt that Chu Feng would likely be able to survive with a very slim possibility. As for lasting four mere hours, it would be an extremely easy task.

Thus, when Grandmaster Liangqiu looked to the Mirror Sea again, there was no longer worry in his eyes. Instead, he had a look of expectation.

He was hoping that Chu Feng would be able to accomplish something that would make old man Zhu have a whole new level of respect for him.

He wanted to Chu Feng to prove himself, and prove to old man Zhu that his high hopes in him were correct.

That said, compared to Grandmaster Liangqiu, old man Zhu's expression was rather complicated.

His gaze was moving around repeatedly. It seemed like he was truly capable of seeing Chu Feng's every action.

.....

After being sucked into the Gate of Death, Chu Feng entered a chaotic world. He could only blindly drift with the flow in that place.

It took him a long time to break out of the chaotic world. Upon breaking out from the chaotic world, he entered a sea.

That sea was surging violently with undercurrents. The feeling was exactly the same as the Mirror Sea.

“Could it be that I’ve returned to the Mirror Sea?”

This question was present in Chu Feng’s heart when a figure suddenly appeared in Chu Feng’s gaze. It was Chu Xuanzhengfa.

“Chu Feng, why are you so foolish? Why did you follow me in here?”

Although Chu Xuanzhengfa appeared to be in some difficulty, he was still alive. More than anything, he had a look of anger and grief.

He was angry that Chu Feng had followed him in. He also felt grief because Chu Feng had followed him in.

“Senior, don’t criticize me anymore since I’m already here,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. Then, he began to carefully inspect his surroundings.

“I truly don’t know what to do with you,” Chu Xuanzhengfa sighed with a helpless look. Soon afterward, he asked, “Chu Feng, are you able to tell if this is the Mirror Sea?”

Chapter 3709 - Unable To Withstand

The reason why Chu Xuanzhengfa asked this question was because everything there was identical to the Mirror Sea.

However, there was one thing that was different. That place did not possess a sea surface. Above them was a boundless area of rocks. Deep below them was also a boundless area of rocks.

The rocks were indestructible, and had sealed both the area above and the area below them.

“This should be the Mirror Sea. There’s no mistaking this sensation. However, this should be a special region within the Mirror Sea.”

“It’s just that things are strange. Even though I clearly sensed a very dangerous aura before entering this place, how come that has aura disappeared upon arriving here?”

Chu Feng began to ponder. He felt that that place was very strange, and should not be as simple as it appeared to be.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, a bell toll was heard.

When the bell tolled, the seawater started trembling.

The next moment, Chu Feng was able to sense the undercurrents of the seawater becoming increasingly ice-cold. The piercing pain present in the water also grew much stronger.

Whilst Chu Feng was still able to withstand the pain, Chu Xuanzhengfa’s face was already twisted with pain. He clenched his fists tightly, and his entire body was stretched taut.

Evidently, the power had increased to a level that Chu Xuanzhengfa could not withstand.

That was precisely what had happened.

After entering the Mirror Sea, the invasion from the undercurrent had begun to affect Chu Xuanzhengfa.

Earlier, he had forced himself to endure it. However, after that strange bell rung, the undercurrent within the seawater grew even fiercer.

Chu Xuanzhengfa was no longer able to withstand it. His awareness was starting to become fuzzy.

Chu Xuanzhengfa felt that he was in enormous danger. If this were to continue, he might end up dying!!!

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, a warm current began to enter him from his left arm and engulfed his entire body.

The warm current was opposing the undercurrent's coldness.

In this sort of situation, Chu Xuanzhengfa's consciousness recovered, and his body was no longer in such pain.

"Chu Feng?!"

After opening his eyes, Chu Xuanzhengfa discovered that Chu Feng was holding his left arm.

Without the need to think about it, Chu Xuanzhengfa knew that the warm current was released by Chu Feng. Chu Feng was helping him.

"Senior, don't say anything. Since I've come here, I'm going to bring you out alive," Chu Feng said to Chu Xuanzhengfa.

"But..."

Chu Xuanzhengfa wanted to say something. However, before he could finish his words, Chu Feng said, "Senior, there's no but. Look... aren't I fine?"

Chu Xuanzhengfa carefully examined Chu Feng, and discovered that he was indeed fine.

Although he felt like he was on the verge of death enduring that power, Chu Feng had decided to endure that power himself whilst also helping him. Chu Feng's action was akin to enduring twice the amount of power.

Yet, Chu Feng looked like he was completely fine.

Chu Feng's willpower and tolerance was simply countless times stronger than his own.

Suddenly, Chu Xuanzhengfa let out a sigh. "I'm actually quite pathetic."

"Senior, what's wrong?" Chu Feng hurriedly asked.

"When I was young, I was completely suppressed by your father's talent. It was truly difficult to endure."

“Now that I’m old, I’m being suppressed by his son. However, this time around, it’s not difficult to endure. Instead, I feel very comfortable. After all, you’re saving my life,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said with a smile.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng also smiled. He had never expected Chu Xuanzhengfa to also be able to joke around.

Furthermore, he was joking during such a crucial moment of life and death.

“Senior, this place is quite strange. We cannot resign ourselves to fate. Let us inspect the surroundings and see if we can find an exit.”

Chu Xuanzhengfa expressed his agreement to Chu Feng’s words. Then, the two of them began to search for an exit.

“Clank~~~”

Not long afterward, the strange bell tolled again.

Chu Feng was unable to determine exactly where that sound originated from because it came from all directions simultaneously.

One could hear it from afar and one could hear it nearby. In fact, it was sounding right next to Chu Feng’s ears.

It was as if the sound originated from the seawater itself. When the bell sounded, all of the seawater emitted the same sound.

Most terrifying of all, after the bell tolled, the seawater’s undercurrent strengthened again.

With this, Chu Feng became certain that the undercurrent would strengthen with every toll, and would begin to attack their souls with greater power.

Furthermore, after an incense stick’s worth of time passed, that bell would toll again. With every toll, the undercurrent would also become stronger.

In the beginning, Chu Feng was able to endure the undercurrent and continue to attempt to find an exit.

However, to his despair, after he searched for some time, he was unable to find an exit. Even his Heaven’s Eyes were unable to detect any clues. It was

as if there was no exit to begin with, that they would be trapped there for the rest of their lives.

To Chu Feng's greater despair, as time passed, he began to find it difficult to endure the undercurrent.

He was still moving around earlier. However, it soon became very difficult for him to move around. He was simply unable to search for an exit anymore.

"Chu Feng, let go of me. I won't last, don't waste your strength on me."

"Let go of me. It's better that I die than both of us die."

Chu Xuanzhengfa spoke with great difficulty. Even though Chu Feng had been helping him the entire time, the power of the undercurrent had increased so much that Chu Xuanzhengfa was unable to endure it even with his help.

Soon, Chu Xuanzhengfa lost consciousness, and was unable to even speak.

However, he was still alive. Chu Feng couldn't possibly give up on him.

Not only was Chu Feng continuing to help Chu Xuanzhengfa, but he even increased his protection of him.

However, because of that, it weakened his own tolerance.

Gradually, even Chu Feng's consciousness began to grow fuzzy.

He was no longer able to hear the bell anymore. He was unable to determine the passage of time. All he could do was feel the unbearable undercurrent's power attacking him..

Like blades, the power of the undercurrent passed through his body and cut at his soul. An inch at a time, they engulfed him.

If this were to continue, no matter how powerful his willpower might be, he would still crumble to the undercurrent's power.

.....

Above the Mirror Sea were four figures.

One of them was Chu Lingxi. Although she had fused with the Deepsea Pupils, her fusion was not complete. Thus, she was still sleeping.

As for the other three, they were Grandmaster Liangqiu, old man Zhu, and Gu Mingyuan.

Grandmaster Liangqiu had actually called Gu Mingyuan back through voice transmission.

To be able to call her back, Grandmaster Liangqiu had naturally told her that Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa might still be able to survive.

Thus, Gu Mingyuan also knew that if Chu Feng didn't manage to save both himself and Chu Xuanzhengfa, they could only wait for Grandmaster Liangqiu's friend to save them.

Suddenly, Grandmaster Liangqiu said, "Four hours should've passed by now, right?"

Even though Grandmaster Liangqiu was confident in Chu Feng, he remained somewhat worried.

He was afraid that an accident might happen to...

If old man Zhu was willing to act and save Chu Feng, it would naturally be for the best.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3710 - Battle God's Halberd - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3710 - Battle God's Halberd

Chapter 3710 - Battle God's Halberd

"Liangqiu, you're losing your head. Four hours still haven't passed yet, why so anxious?" old man Zhu asked.

"Brother Zhu, this matter concerns two lives. You don't have to be this harsh, no?" asked Grandmaster Liangqiu.

"I said four hours, so it's going to be four hours." Old man Zhu's attitude was extremely firm.

“Then we’ll continue to wait. Chu Feng has managed to withstand it for so long, a short moment longer wouldn’t make much difference,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

Although he couldn’t see the conditions within the Gate of Death, he was focused on old man Zhu’s expression the entire time.

Because of that, Grandmaster Liangqiu knew that Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa were still alive.

“That boy is indeed very capable. However, don’t forget that he’s carrying a burden.”

“For the sake of protecting that burden, that boy has decided to simultaneously endure twice the amount of power.”

“Currently, he is on the verge of being unable to endure. If I do not go down, he will definitely not be able to survive,” said old man Zhu.

“Ah?” Hearing those words, Grandmaster Liangqiu’s expression changed greatly.

“Senior, I beg of you, please save them.” Gu Mingyuan’s voice was heard.

She was too worried about Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa. Thus, as she spoke, she was moving to kneel before old man Zhu.

“There’s no need for that.”

Before Gu Mingyuan could kneel, old man Zhu stopped her.

“Girl, do not be this overly courteous every time. This old man cannot accept such courtesy.” laughed old man Zhu.

After he finished saying those words, he looked to Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“Liangqiu, what you said is correct. That boy is indeed a talent. I will give you face and help him this one time.”

“However, since the Gate of Death has already closed, I will not be able to enter it.”

“I can only enter the deepest place in the Mirror Sea, the Mirror Core. Through the power of the Mirror Core, I will be able to ease the power of the Gate of Death.”

Upon hearing those words, Grandmaster Liangqiu’s expression changed greatly. “Mirror Core? Must you enter that place?”

Grandmaster Liangqiu knew very well that there were multiple dangerous places in the Mirror Sea. The Gate of Death could be said to be one of them.

However, the most dangerous place among them would be the Mirror Core. The Mirror Core was a place that even he couldn’t reach.

“There’s nothing that I can do about that. After all, I’ve agreed that I’ll help that kid.”

“Although I will be able to decrease the power of the Gate of Death after entering the Mirror Core, I will have to pay a price for it.”

“The price is that I will be trapped in the Mirror Core. Of course, I will try my best to escape from it.”

“Thus, Liangqiu, if I am able to return alive within seventy-nine days, that would be for the best.”

“However, if I do not return alive within seventy-nine days, have that boy search for me.”

“If it’s that boy, he might actually be able to save me.”

“Remember, seventy-nine days shall be the time limit. Do not attempt to search for me before seventy-nine days have passed.”

“After seventy-nine days,” he coughed, “if you have a conscience, tell that boy to come save me.”

After he finished saying those words, water splashed into the sky. Old man Zhu had entered the Mirror Sea, and made a straight line downward for the depths of the Mirror Sea.

At that moment, Grandmaster Liangqiu had a very ashamed and guilt-ridden look on his face.

It would be one thing if Old Man Zhu were to enter other places. However, if it was the Mirror Core, he might actually end up dying.

Although he did not hope for Chu Feng to die, he also did not wish for his old friend to die because of him.

Because of that, he firmly remembered the number seventy-nine.

.....

Chu Feng did not know what had happened outside.

He had lost consciousness from the torment brought on by the power of the undercurrent. He no longer knew the passage of time.

After an unknown period of time had passed, Chu Feng's consciousness began to recover. He was able to sense that the power tormenting him had disappeared.

Furthermore, it had completely disappeared.

Chu Feng opened his eyes and discovered that he was still in the Mirror Sea. Indestructible rocks still covered both the area above and the area below him.

Chu Xuanzhengfa was beside him. His hand was tightly gripping Chu Xuanzhengfa's left arm. Chu Feng was still imbuing power into Chu Xuanzhengfa's body nonstop. He seemed to have not stopped protecting Chu Xuanzhengfa even when he was unconscious.

That said, although everything had returned to normal now, the Mirror Sea was acting very abnormally.

Not only had the undercurrent that was torturing them disappeared, but the surging waves had also disappeared.

The current Mirror Sea was as tranquil as its surface. It was so tranquil that it felt strange.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, an aura appeared in the Mirror Sea.

That aura felt very divine. Sensing that divine aura, Chu Feng's heartbeat accelerated.

Even though the undercurrent that had brought harm to Chu Feng had disappeared from the Mirror Sea, his Heaven's Eyes were still ineffective there.

Due to that, Chu Feng was unable to search for the source of that aura. If he wanted to find the source, he would have to slowly move onward.

After proceeding for some distance, Chu Feng was surprised to discover that a large piece of rock from the rocks that blocked the path below had disappeared.

Below was still seawater, pitch-black and bottomless seawater.

However, Chu Feng clearly remembered that he had passed by this region while searching for an exit earlier.

At that time, the rocks there were still completely intact. There was no bottomless seawater at all.

Chu Feng had a faint feeling that things were very abnormal, that something was definitely fishy.

However, that aura was simply too divine. It seemed to be summoning him. Chu Feng was unable to resist that power at all.

"Senior, I don't know if this journey onward will be good or bad. I cannot bring you with me."

Chu Feng placed Chu Xuanzhengfa on the rock and left a brief note telling him to not move around and wait for him there.

The reason why Chu Feng did that was because that place was simply too big, and his various observation abilities were all ineffective.

Chu Feng was afraid that Chu Xuanzhengfa would wander off to seek him after waking up.

After leaving the note, Chu Feng did not directly enter that bottomless region of seawater.

He did not know whether or not danger awaited below. Thus, to prevent Chu Xuanzhengfa from following him, Chu Feng set up a concealment formation.

Not only was Chu Feng's spirit formation capable of concealing the bottomless region of seawater, but it was also able to seal off that divine aura.

After making his preparations, Chu Feng entered that region of seawater.

The further down he went, the stronger that divine aura became.

At the beginning, it was pitch-black, but gradually, brightness appeared below.

The light grew stronger and stronger. Later on, the bottom grew brightly lit.

Chu Feng was able to see the dazzling silver light was being emitted by a weapon.

The weapon was silver all around. It was thirteen meters long, and had the shape of a halberd.

It looked like an ordinary halberd. However, the aura it emitted was simply incomparable.

Chu Feng was unable to tell what quality of a weapon the halberd was. Being placed there, it did not resemble a weapon at all.

From his current distance, Chu Feng was not only able to sense the sacred aura, but he was also able to sense that the weapon emitted an invincible air of superiority.

It was truly the aura of a ruler. That weapon was not only a king among weapons, but it was also the king of that entire place.

"Could it be, that's the legendary Battle God's Halberd?"

Seeing the weapon below and feeling the aura emitted by it, the first thing that came to Chu Feng's mind was the treasure of the Mirror Sea, the Battle God's Halberd.

Chapter 3711 - Ten Thousand Utmost Exalted

The reason why Chu Feng had this thought was not only because of the powerful aura emitted by the halberd.

More importantly, there stood many figures around the halberd. Those were not humans. Instead, they seemed more like monstrous beasts.

They all had extremely malevolent features. If one had to describe them, they looked more like evil spirits.

These evil spirits were all enormous, measuring over a hundred meters tall. There were over ten thousand of such evil spirits.

The over ten thousand evil spirits were standing there in a uniform order. They seemed like guardians protecting the halberd.

If that were all, Chu Feng would not be so alarmed. What brought him overwhelming alarm was that those evil spirits all had their eyes closed. They seemed to be dormant. However, their auras were not concealed.

Chu Feng was able to sense that all of those evil spirits were emitting auras.

The over ten thousand evil spirits all had the same cultivation. They were all Utmost Exalted!!!

Even though they were all only rank one Utmost Exalted, their cultivations were truly exceptional in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

After all, the number of Utmost Exalted-level experts in the Ancestral Martial Starfield could be counted.

Even for the Ten Great Heavenly Clans, only the Linghu Heavenly Clan, Tantai Heavenly Clan and Jiaoli Heavenly Clan possessed Utmost Exalted-level experts.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had heard that, apart from the Linghu Heavenly Clan, only the clan chiefs of the Tantai Heavenly Clan and the Jiaoli Heavenly Clan were Utmost Exalted.

From this, one could tell what sort of status Utmost Exalted-level experts possessed in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

That was a level of cultivation that the great majority of people could not reach in their entire lifetimes.

However, should one reach that cultivation, one would become an existence that no one in the Ancestral Martial Starfield would dare to provoke.

After all, that was the Utmost Exalted realm.

That cultivation was unsurpassed in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

However, now, such existences of unsurpassed cultivation... actually stood over ten thousand strong below Chu Feng.

Seeing such a scene, Chu Feng felt fear, and utter shock.

“If I had known that the legendary Battle God’s Halberd was hidden in this spirit formation gate, I would’ve had senior Gu Mingyuan come here too.”

At the same time as he felt astonished, Chu Feng felt slightly regretful.

Although there were over ten thousand Utmost Exalted-level experts, the strength that a martial cultivator possessed was not something that numbers could make up for.

Although Gu Mingyuan was only a rank one Utmost Exalted herself, she was very powerful. Her strength could be seen by how easily she had defeated the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that if Gu Mingyuan were present, she might be able to defeat those evil spirits and obtain that legendary Battle God’s Halberd.

“Paa~~~”

Suddenly, a hand landed on Chu Feng’s shoulder.

This greatly alarmed Chu Feng. He hurriedly moved several thousand meters forward before turning around to see.

Upon turning around, Chu Feng discovered that it was not an evil spirit that stood behind him. Instead, it was a person.

This person was wearing shabby clothes. His outfit resembled that of a beggar. He was not tall. His build was very thin. He had a head of white hair tied in a messy and sloppy topknot.

On his waist was a smoke pipe and ten wine gourds.

That fellow was not only a heavy smoker, but he was also an utter drunkard.

That said, there was a sword on his back. It was a copper sword. That copper sword did not emit any aura. Chu Feng was unable to determine what sort of weapon it was.

In addition to the copper sword, there was also a compass on his back.

As a world spiritist, Chu Feng was able to tell from a single glance that it was a world spirit compass.

The world spirit compass that that person carried on his back was of extremely good quality. It was an extremely rare treasure.

Although that individual had a very sloppy and beggarly look, the world spirit compass was glimmering with light and untainted by even a speck of dust. Evidently, it was taken care of meticulously.

It could be seen that that individual cared greatly about his world spirit compass.

Unfortunately, Chu Feng was unable to see the face of the individual. The reason for that was because he was wearing a mask.

“Shhh~~~”

At the same time as Chu Feng was sizing up that individual, he too was sizing up Chu Feng.

He first made a motion for Chu Feng to keep quiet. Then, he started swimming upward, and indicated for Chu Feng to follow him.

Chu Feng was able to tell that regardless of who that person might be, he was much safer than the evil spirits below.

Besides, Chu Feng also wanted to know who that individual was, and why he would appear there. It might even be possible for him to know how to leave that place.

Thus, Chu Feng did not hesitate, and immediately followed that individual.

They only stopped after they had distanced themselves from the evil spirits below.

“Never would I have imagined that this old man has finally managed to wait for another cultivator after waiting for all these years.”

“Brat, to be able to withstand the attack from that undercurrent, you’re quite remarkable.”

That person finally spoke. His voice was somewhat hoarse. It was likely caused by smoking too much. At the same time, his voice was somewhat aged.

Chu Feng was able to tell that that person was likely an old man.

“Senior, may I know your distinguished name?” Chu Feng asked respectfully with a clasped fist.

“There’s no need for you to know this old man’s name.”

“Brat, help this old man with something, and I will give you something good.”

As that old man spoke, he took out a bead from his Cosmos Sack.

That bead was the size of a palm. It was originally transparent. However, it was soon filled with green flames.

The flames were surging like ferocious beasts, that seemed to be struggling to break out of the bead.

Upon seeing the flames, Chu Feng’s expression immediately changed. He asked, “Senior, that’s Divine Power in there?”

“Good eyesight. This is a sort of Divine Power. It’s called the Ghostflame Divine Power.”

“Boy, I see that you have the title plate of the Chu Heavenly Clan on your waist. You should possess a Heavenly Bloodline, right?”

“As long as you help this old man obtain that halberd, this old man will teach you the fusion method to make this Divine Power yours.”

“At that time, you will possess both a Heavenly Bloodline and Divine Power, two different sorts of power.” The old man said to Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt utterly shocked.

Even his voice began to shake.

The reason for that was because he suddenly recalled something his father had mentioned to him in the past.

There was a world spiritist in the Ancestral Martial Starfield capable of helping him turn the power of the Four Symbols Secret Skills into Divine Power.

n)(o/.v/-E))L)(&(.1//n

At that time, Chu Feng would be able to possess both a Heavenly Bloodline and the Four Symbols Divine Power, two sorts of power!!!

“Senior, could it be that you’re the renowned world spiritist, Ox-nosed Old Daoist?”

“Mn?”

That individual was slightly startled upon hearing those words. Then, he decided to take off his mask.

At that moment, Chu Feng was able to clearly see the face of the person beneath.

He had an aged face. His eyes were very small. Those eyes were the sort of eyes that would make others feel uneasy. They were eyes that belonged to unscrupulous businessmen. They were truly wily eyes.

That said, he had a very unique nose. His nose was the same as that of an ox. It was extremely ugly.

At that moment, the old man was staring at Chu Feng with his tiny eyes. At the same time, his lips rose onto a pleased smile.

“Never would I have imagined for my name to be so renowned that someone is actually able to recognize me when I’m wearing a mask.”

“That’s right. Boy, you are correct.”

“The renowned world spiritist of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, the world spiritist known to be the best, the person known as Ox-nosed Old Daoist, is none other than I.”

Chapter 3712 - Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s Business Transaction

“Senior, this junior has tried so hard to find you.”

“Never would I have imagined that I’d end up meeting you here.”

After verifying that that person was indeed the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, Chu Feng became even more excited.

After all, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was the person capable of turning the Vermilion Bird, Black Tortoise, White Tiger and Azure Dragon, the four Sacred Beasts, back into Divine Power.

The Vermilion Bird Resurrection Technique, Black Tortoise Armor Technique, White Tiger Slaughtering Technique and Azure Dragon Dashing Technique were extremely powerful secret skills obtained by Chu Feng in his youth.

Even though the Four Great Secret Skills were no longer effective after his cultivation increased, they had provided enormous help to him back then.

Thus, to Chu Feng, the four of them were most definitely not simply secret skills.

To Chu Feng, the four secret skills were seniors that he possessed deep feelings for.

Chu Feng greatly hoped that they would be able to regain their overwhelming power and fight alongside him.

“Boy, by the way you’re reacting, you’ve been searching for me the entire time?”

Seeing Chu Feng acting so excited, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist felt rather surprised.

“Senior, I have indeed been searching for you the entire time. Never would I have expected to find you here,” said Chu Feng.

“This old man has been here the entire time. It has been many years now. If you were searching me outside, you would naturally not be able to find me. That said, why are you searching for me?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

“This junior wishes to fuse with the Divine Power within me,” said Chu Feng.

“You have a Divine Power in you?”

“Extend your hand, this old man will have a look,” As the Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke, he grabbed Chu Feng’s wrist.

“Buzz~~~”

Soon, Chu Feng sensed a power pouring into his soul from his wrist.

Chu Feng did not resist the power. Instead, he allowed the power to enter his soul.

He knew that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was examining the power within him.

“Boy, that Divine Power within your body is quite remarkable.”

After examining him, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist revealed a shocked look in his eyes.

“Senior, are you able to help me?” asked Chu Feng.

“The more powerful a Divine Power is, the more difficult it is to fuse with it.”

“As for that Divine Power you possess, it is simply the strongest Divine Power this old man has ever seen. Fusing with it will be very difficult.”

“How about you fuse with this Divine Power of mine? It’s comparatively easier to fuse with,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said as he raised the bead he held in his hand.

“Senior, a person can only fuse with a single Divine Power, right?” asked Chu Feng.

“Of course not. This old man helped a Divine Body fuse with another Divine Power before, allowing him to possess two Divine Powers.”

“However, you already possess the power of a Heavenly Bloodline. Thus, if you want to fuse with a Divine Power, you can only fuse with a single Divine Power,” After saying those words, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist patted Chu Feng’s shoulder. He smiled and said, “Boy, don’t be too greedy. To be able to possess both Divine Power and a Heavenly Bloodline is something that many people do not dare to imagine.”

“If that’s the case, this junior still wishes to assimilate with the Divine Power within me,” said Chu Feng.

“That’s fine. However, I’ve been frank with you. That Divine Power within you is rather difficult to deal with. It will be much harder to fuse with it. This old man is unable to guarantee success either,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Senior, the halberd below is no ordinary halberd. Likely, that’s the legendary Battle God’s Halberd, no?” Chu Feng asked all of a sudden.

“Eh...? Why are you asking that?” asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“The Battle God’s Halberd is a thing of legend. Its value is likely superior to fusing a Divine Power, no?” asked Chu Feng.

“Boy, I’ll be frank with you. Indeed, that is the Battle God’s Halberd. It is also extremely valuable.”

“However, not to mention the Ancestral Martial Starfield, even if you are to ask the entire Holy Light Galaxy, you will find that no one apart from this old man is capable of fusing Divine Power into one’s body.”

“In the end, the Battle God’s Halberd is a weapon. No matter how powerful a weapon might be, there will be a time when it’ll be ineffective.”

“However, if you are to obtain Divine Power, it will benefit you for the rest of your life.”

“Thus, if we calculate things like that, you would’ve made an enormous profit.”

“Besides, you need this old man’s help in order to obtain the Battle God’s Halberd. If this old man doesn’t help you, with the bits of strength that you possess, not only will you not be able to obtain the Battle God’s Halberd, but you will be killed before you even manage to approach it. You wouldn’t even know how you died,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist mocked.

“Senior, please don’t be angry. This junior never said that he wouldn’t cooperate with you.” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Then what is your intention? Are you thinking that this old man will be taking advantage of you by asking for your help in obtaining the Battle God’s Halberd, and then helping you fuse with your Divine Power?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

“That is not this junior’s intention either. Actually... this junior merely had a very small request,” said Chu Feng.

“Request?” Hearing that word, Ox-nosed Old Daoist rolled his eyes a couple times. Then, he asked, “Let me hear about it.”

“Since senior is able to help me fuse with a Divine Power, senior should be able to help others fuse with Divine Power too.”

“Senior, you were originally planning to give me the Divine Power you’re holding right now.”

“However, since I already have a Divine Power in me, how about you give that Divine Power to my friend instead?” asked Chu Feng.

“I got it. You want me to help you fuse with your Divine Power and help someone else fuse with this Divine Power, is that right?” asked Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Senior is truly a senior. I cannot conceal anything from you,” Chu Feng replied with a beaming smile.

Chu Feng felt that since the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was willing to help him, he should not waste the opportunity.

He wanted the Ox-nosed Old Daoist to give that Divine Power to Chu Lingxi.

“This old man will ask you a question first. Where did you learn that I am able to help you fuse with Divine Power?” asked Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Senior, it is my father who told me. My father is also from the Chu Heavenly Clan. He is called Chu Xuanyuan,” said Chu Feng.

“Your father is Chu Xuanyuan? Which means... you’re Chu Feng?”

At that moment, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had a major change in expression.

“That’s right, senior. This junior is indeed Chu Feng. I was overly excited earlier and forgot to introduce myself. I hope senior can forgive my lack of manners,” said Chu Feng.

“Alas, so you’re actually family. Your father and I have an extraordinary relationship. I even met you when you were a baby. Never would I have imagined that would have grown so big in an instant.”

“Since we’re family, it’s easier to talk. This old man accepts that request of yours,” At that moment, the attitude of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist became particularly amiable. He was reacting like he had seen a person of the younger generation from his family.

“Senior, in that case, what should this junior do?” asked Chu Feng.

“You wait here. This old man will draw those guardian spirits away.”

“After I lead them away, you are to retrieve the Battle God’s Halberd,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“That simple?” asked Chu Feng.

“It’s that simple. What’s wrong? Are you thinking that you’ve made an enormous profit?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked with a beaming smile.

However, seeing the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s ugly appearance and vulgar smile, Chu Feng kept having a feeling that things were not as simple as he had said they would be.

Chapter 3713 - Chu Feng’s Shadow?

Chu Feng simply had too much of a desire to fuse with the Four Symbols Divine Power.

Even the legendary Battle God’s Halberd did not entice Chu Feng much when compared to the opportunity to fuse with the Four Symbols Divine Power.

Thus, even though Chu Feng knew that things were fishy, he ultimately nodded and agreed to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s condition.

“Boy, since you’ve agreed to it, this old man will draw those guardian spirits away at once. Once they’re drawn away, you are to immediately retrieve the Battle God’s Halberd.”

Sure enough, after the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said those words, he immediately began to work. He dived straight down and emitted great power, creating enormous ripples in the water.

“Rooooar~~~”

Soon, roars began to sound from below.

The dormant guardian spirits were all awakened by the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s approach.

“Boom, boom, boom~~~”

Following that, rumbles began to explode nonstop. The guardian spirits had reached the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Amazing.”

Even though they were very far away, Chu Feng was able to gain a rough understanding of the battle situation.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist had used his ability to create over ten thousand clones. Like an army of Ox-nosed Old Daoists, his clones collided with the guardian spirits.

Those guardian spirits were all Utmost Exalted.

Thus, for the Ox-nosed Old Daoist to be able to fight those guardian spirits head-on, it naturally meant that he also possessed the cultivation of an Utmost Exalted.

Rank one Utmost Exalted was a cultivation that stood at the top of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

At least, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was stronger than Liangqiu Chengfeng, Wuming Xingyun, Grandmaster Long Xuan and Queen Mother Fox Immortal.

Furthermore, Chu Feng felt that even though they were both rank one Utmost Exalted, Ox-nosed Old Daoist was even stronger than Grandmaster Liangqiu.

The battle below grew increasingly fierce. Not only was the Ox-nosed Old Daoist fighting the guardian spirits, he was even insulting them.

Those guardian spirits seemed to be able to understand him, and grew more furious and frantic in their attacks.

This sort of situation lasted for a while. Then, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist led his clones and began to swim far away, and those guardian spirits actually began to uniformly follow him.

“Insults are actually effective against those guardian spirits?”

Chu Feng felt that if the Ox-nosed Old Daoist didn't enrage those guardian spirits, the guardian spirits would likely not chase after him. After all, their main mission should be to guard the Battle God's Halberd.

Thus, Chu Feng was unable to help but admire the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's tricks.

That said, upon thinking about it, Chu Feng was able to understand.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist himself had mentioned that he had stayed here for many years.

Why was he staying here? Naturally, it was for the Battle God's Halberd.

After all these years, for the sake of obtaining the Battle God's Halberd, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist must've attempted all sorts of methods. Thus, it was reasonable for him to have discovered some tricks.

That said, Chu Feng also became increasingly certain that what the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said to him was not the truth.

That Battle God's Halberd was most definitely not so easily obtainable.

Since the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was capable of releasing over ten thousand clones, he would be totally capable of leaving a clone behind to retrieve the Battle God's Halberd after he led the guardian spirits away.

It was impossible for the Ox-nosed Old Daoist to have not thought about such a simple method.

There was only one possibility as to why he didn't do that.

The Battle God's Halberd was simply not that easily obtainable.

Even though Chu Feng had confirmed that it was not easy to obtain the Battle God's Halberd, he still dived down and extended his hand to retrieve it.

Even though he knew it would not be that easy, he must still give it a try.

“Boom~~~”

Sure enough, before Chu Feng could even touch the Battle God’s Halberd, an enormous aura rushed out from it.

That aura was simply too powerful. Chu Feng was simply unable to withstand it at all. The aura directly blew Chu Feng away.

The powerful aura shot Chu Feng several meters away. Only then did Chu Feng barely stabilize himself.

When Chu Feng stabilized himself, he heard a voice, “Someone as weak as you dares to attempt to obtain the Battle God’s Halberd?”

Chu Feng raised his head, and discovered that a figure had appeared before the Battle God’s Halberd.

That figure seemed like a human, yet was not human.

That individual was pitch-black from head to toe. Chu Feng was unable to determine the person’s appearance. He seemed, like a shadow. It was truly strange.

Strangest of all, his voice was exactly the same as Chu Feng’s voice.

“Who are you?” Chu Feng asked sternly.

“Who I am is not important. What’s important is that you need to defeat me if you want to obtain the Battle God’s Halberd,” said that shadow.

“Clank~~~”

After he finished saying those words, a sword appeared in his hand.

Seeing that sword, Chu Feng’s heart tensed up. Although that sword was also the shape of a shadow, its shape and aura were identical to Chu Feng’s Blue Jade Mandarin Duck Sword.

“Woosh~~~”

Before Chu Feng could think much, that shadow rushed to attack him.

At the instant when that shadow attacked him, Chu Feng was able to sense his cultivation.

His cultivation was the same as Chu Feng's. He was also a rank three Exalted.

Even though his opponent's cultivation was identical to his own, and everything was so very strange, Chu Feng did not even take out his weapon to confront the incoming attack.

Instead, he waited for the shadow to approach him before activating both his Lightning Mark and Lightning Armor simultaneously.

In an instant, Chu Feng's cultivation increased from rank three Exalted to rank five Exalted.

Thus, Chu Feng possessed cultivation that could completely suppress his opponent.

However, at practically the same instant when Chu Feng increased his cultivation, that shadowy individual's cultivation also increased. Like Chu Feng, his cultivation increased to rank five Exalted.

Furthermore, by the time Chu Feng increased his cultivation, the shadowy figure had arrived before him.

At that time, Chu Feng did not have the time to take out his Blue Jade Mandarin Duck Sword. He could only rely on his own strength to face his incoming opponent.

However, his opponent was simply too fast. Even though Chu Feng had already moved to dodge the attack ahead of time, a splash of blood still formed. Chu Feng's left arm had been struck by the shadow's sword.

That was not only a minor flesh wound. Instead, the cut hacked off half of Chu Feng's bone and nearly sliced off his arm.

After that shadowy figure successfully landed his attack on Chu Feng, he did not continue. Instead, he stood there and said to Chu Feng, "You'd best not be careless facing me."

His voice was filled with mockery.

Seeing that, Chu Feng narrowed his brows.

Chu Feng discovered that his opponent was not only emitting black lightning, but there was also a faint 'Divine' character on his forehead.

Even though everything was black in color, that individual's appearance and the aura he emitted was exactly the same as Chu Feng's Lightning Mark and Lightning Armor.

It was precisely through those two methods that his cultivation instantly increased from rank three Exalted to rank five Exalted.

"You're my shadow?" Chu Feng asked sternly.

The reason why he asked that was because his opponent possessed identical abilities to his own. Even his weapon was identical to his Blue Jade Mandarin Duck Sword.

It was all simply too strange. Thus, Chu Feng determined that the person before him was not human at all. Instead, he should be some sort of illusory ability.

Chu Feng felt that the opponent he was facing at that moment was none other than himself.

Chapter 3714 - Relying On Oneself In Desperate Straits

"Your shadow?"

"You're simply thinking too highly of yourself."

That shadow disagreed with Chu Feng's claim, and his attitude turned very vile.

"Woosh~~~"

As he spoke, the shadowy figure once again rushed to attack Chu Feng.

This time around, Chu Feng was already holding the Blue Jade Mandarin Duck Sword.

Thus, Chu Feng did not cower. Instead, he brandished the Blue Jade Mandarin Duck Sword he held in his hand and moved to confront the incoming shadowy figure.

The more he fought, the more certain Chu Feng was that this opponent was his shadow.

The reason for that was because his opponent had only used abilities that he himself possessed, and nothing else.

Furthermore, even his opponent's manner of attacks and the way he fought were identical to his own.

If he wasn't his shadow, what could he possibly be?

"Shadow of mine, does this mean that I will be able to obtain the Battle God's Halberd should I defeat you?" Chu Feng asked while fighting.

"Let me emphasize this again. I am not your shadow. My status is much more noble than yours."

"Furthermore, it is impossible for you to defeat me."

"Even your life is in my grasp," said that shadowy figure.

"Although I am incapable of defeating you, you are also incapable of defeating me. Since you're my shadow, how about we talk things over and you let me win?" Chu Feng asked.

"Hahaha..."

Chu Feng's words were met with loud laughter.

"You're trying to play tricks with me? Foolishness."

"A fool like you should die here."

After he finished saying those words, that shadowy figure's attacks grew fiercer and fiercer. This time around, he was no longer swapping mere pointers with Chu Feng. Instead, he was attacking him with the intention to kill.

"Damn it."

With the situation being like that, Chu Feng no longer dared to be careless.

His opponent's attacks were very fierce. If Chu Feng was careless in the slightest, he would end up being defeated by his opponent.

It would be one thing if he were defeated by others. However, if he was defeated by his own shadow, it would truly be dreadful.

"Chu Feng, you must get things done quickly. The longer you take, the more danger you'll be in."

Right at that moment, a voice entered Chu Feng's ears. It was that Ox-nosed Old Daoist's voice.

"Senior?"

Chu Feng looked all around upon hearing the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's voice in an attempt to find him.

However, upon searching, Chu Feng discovered that there was no trace of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist to be found at all.

"Don't bother searching. I am not in your world." n(-0V**eLb1n**

"You are trapped in an illusion created by the Battle God's Halberd."

"You only have an incense stick's worth of time. If you're unable to defeat your shadow, the Battle God's Halberd will unleash its true power. At that time, you will truly be unable to contend against it anymore."

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist's voice sounded in Chu Feng's ears again.

His tone was extremely serious. This made Chu Feng realize that he was not joking around.

"Thus, the person before me is not my shadow? Instead, it's the Battle God's Halberd?" asked Chu Feng.

"You can say that."

"After entering that illusory world, the Battle God's Halberd is capable of duplicating all of your abilities, including all the treasures and weapons you possess. In short, it is capable of everything that you're capable of."

“However, it will have only duplicated the abilities and powers that you possessed when you entered.”

“Thus, if you want to defeat it, you will have to defeat the you from the past. You should know what to do, no?”

Once the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said those words, his clear voice became fuzzy.

“Chu Feng, remember this. You only have an incense stick’s worth of time. Furthermore, you only have one chance. You must defeat it. Otherwise, you will be in fatal danger.”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist said those words with great effort.

After he finished saying those words, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s voice disappeared completely.

It seemed that not even the Ox-nosed Old Daoist could communicate with the current Chu Feng.

“Defeat the me from the past?”

Chu Feng knew how to defeat himself from the past.

If he wanted to defeat himself from the past, he must immediately gain an ability even stronger than what he possessed in the past.

However, his opponent was attacking him nonstop. Chu Feng simply did not dare to be careless. Thus, how could he distract himself by attempting to increase his strength?

Besides, Chu Feng did not possess any methods to strengthen himself.

“Got it! A secret skill!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng recalled the secret skill that the Blood-devouring Demon Exalted had given him.

“Senior, could you lend this junior your power?”

Chu Feng attempted to communicate with that secret skill. However, that secret skill completely ignored him. Regardless of how Chu Feng tried to communicate with it, it did not answer him.

It did not answer Chu Feng even when he cursed it out.

This made Chu Feng feel very helpless.

“Damn it. Sure enough, at a time like this, I can only rely on myself.”

After being refused by the secret skill, Chu Feng did not feel discouraged. Instead, a determined look appeared in his eyes.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng began to move backwards. He did not stop until he had put a vast distance between himself and his shadow.

After stabilizing himself, Chu Feng tightly held the Blue Jade Mandarin Duck Sword with both hands and raised it up. Then, he slashed down abruptly. He hacked his sword toward the Battle God’s Halberd.

Chu Feng’s movement was extremely smooth and extremely fierce. The Battle God’s Halberd didn’t know what sort of ability he was unleashing against it. Thus, not only did it not dare to rush to attack Chu Feng, but it instead moved backwards.

“Woosh~~~”

However, when Chu Feng’s slash came down, no special offensive ability was shot forth. He did not even use his martial power. It was as if Chu Feng’s slash was merely a movement, and not an attack at all.

However, after slashing, Chu Feng stood there in a distracted manner momentarily. Then, he raised his hand and slashed his sword down at the Battle God’s Halberd in the same movement as he did before.

Once again.

Twice again.

Three times.

Five times.

Ten times.

.....

In merely a short moment, Chu Feng had repeated the same slash over twenty times.

Without any exception, Chu Feng's movement did not possess any destructive power in the slightest.

"You're toying with me?" the Battle God's Halberd asked coldly. From his voice, one could tell that Chu Feng's movement had infuriated him.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored the Battle God's Halberd, and continued with the same movement.

Chu Feng was not only extremely serious as he made the movement, but he would even stop and ponder momentarily every now and then before attempting the same movement again...

Chu Feng's actions made the Battle God's Halberd even more furious.

"You dare toy with me like this? You're simply courting death!!!"

Suddenly, the Battle God's Halberd let out a furious shout.

"Rumble~~~"

Following that, thunderous roars sounded nonstop.

Countless bolts of black lightning appeared in the sea.

The black lightning galloped through the sea like enormous dragons.

That was Chu Feng's strongest offensive ability, Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique!!!

How could Chu Feng not know how mighty the Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique was?

However, he did not attempt to evade it. Instead, he continued to make the same slashing movement facing the Battle God's Halberd.

“Rumble~~~”

Soon, the black lightning that filled the sea above began to bombard Chu Feng's location.

The Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique was extremely powerful to begin with. Adding on the fact that Chu Feng was not evading and did not show any signs of trying to block it, he was soon bombarded to shreds by the black lightning.

However, after the attack from the Blood Lightning Technique stopped, the power of five elements appeared. The five elements soon gathered and reformed Chu Feng's body.

It was the power of the Five Elements Secret Skills!!!

Chapter 3715 - First Slash, Heavenly Lightning Appearance

Even though the Battle God's Halberd had duplicated Chu Feng's cultivation, all of his abilities and even his weapons, it had an identical battle power to him.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng's Five Elements Secret Skill was capable of unleashing its power, granting him an undying and indestructible body.

Thus, even an ability as powerful as the Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique was unable to kill Chu Feng.

This was the powerful effect of the Five Elements Secret Skill.

Although Chu Feng might not be unparalleled among those of the same cultivation and battle power, no one could kill him.

The reason for that was purely due to the fact that he had the Five Elements Secret Skills.

His opponent would only be able to kill him should he possess the battle power of a cultivation higher than his.

Otherwise, the Five Elements Secret Skills would give Chu Feng an undying and indestructible body.

“Did you decide to deliberately insult me because you possess that ability that can protect your life?”

“If that’s the case, you are gravely mistaken.”

At that moment, the Battle God’s Halberd stopped its attacks on Chu Feng. He sat down cross-legged and began to observe him.

Chu Feng knew why the Battle God’s Halberd was so confident.

After all, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had already informed him that he only had an incense stick’s worth of time.

If Chu Feng could not defeat the Battle God’s Halberd within an incense stick’s worth of time, the Battle God’s Halberd would no longer remain as Chu Feng’s shadow. Instead, it would regain its own power.

At that time, Chu Feng would not be able to contend against it.

The battle would be firmly in the Battle God’s Halberd’s grasp.

“If I hadn’t experienced it myself just now, I would truly have had no idea how powerful my Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique is. So it’s actually that powerful. Being struck by that lightning is somewhat painful.”

Even though Chu Feng knew that an incense stick’s worth of time was about to arrive, he was not at all flustered. Instead, a faint smile rose from the corners of his mouth.

Seeing the smile on Chu Feng’s face, the Battle God’s Halberd let out a cold laugh.

His cold laughter was filled with mockery.

Chu Feng knew why the Battle God’s Halberd was sneering at him. He was ridiculing his ignorance.

After all, an incense stick’s worth of time was soon to arrive. Thus, the Battle God’s Halberd felt that Chu Feng would soon die.

It was precisely because Chu Feng understood all of this that he did not panic. Instead, he said to the Battle God's Halberd, "Battle God's Halberd, have you ever heard of this phrase?"

"You know that I'm the Battle God's Halberd?" The Battle God's Halberd was slightly surprised. However, he soon realized something. He asked, "It must be that ox-nosed old man who told you that, right?"

Not only did the Battle God's Halberd know of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, but it also managed to guess that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist might've told Chu Feng about it.

"Since he has already told you, you should know that once an incense stick's worth of time passes, it will be the time of your death," the Battle God's Halberd said.

"I know. Once an incense stick's worth of time passes, you will regain your own power."

"At that time, I will likely be unable to contend against you," said Chu Feng.

"Because of that, you've given up?" asked the Battle God's Halberd.

"No, I actually want to thank you," said Chu Feng.

"Thank me?"

The Battle God's Halberd's expression changed slightly upon hearing those words. A confused look appeared in its eyes.

He did not understand why Chu Feng would say that.

"I naturally need to thank you. If it wasn't for you, I would not have been forced into a corner. If I wasn't forced into a corner, I wouldn't have managed to grasp this ability so quickly."

As Chu Feng spoke, he once again held the Blue Jade Mandarin Duck Sword with both hands and raised it up high.

There was still a faint smile on Chu Feng's face. However, he had an extremely determined look in his eyes. In fact, lightning was flickering in his eyes.

“Zzzzz~”

Soon, the lightning filled his entire body, and even covered the Blue Jade Mandarin Duck Sword he held in his hand.

“What sort of move is that?”

The Battle God’s Halberd let out a shocked voice upon seeing Chu Feng covered in lightning.

“You’ve copied all of my abilities, how could you not know what this is?” asked Chu Feng.

“Bastard, you’ve kept a hidden trump card?” asked the Battle God’s Halberd.

“No, that’s not it. I’ve just grasped this ability.”

“Speaking of it, I must thank you. If you didn’t force me into desperate straits, I might not have been able to comprehend this ability so quickly.”

“This is a move that I’ve looked forward to for a very long time. Now... I will test its might on you.”

“Let’s see exactly how powerful this move is.”

“Zzzzz~”

After he finished saying those words, the sword in Chu Feng’s hand slashed down. A ray of lightning took the shape of a crescent and swept towards the Battle God’s Halberd.

“This aura?!”

Seeing the lightning slash that was sent forth, the Battle God’s Halberd panicked. He immediately shifted his body aside and wind grew under his feet. He had unleashed a movement ability, and was moving to dodge the incoming attack.

As the distance between Chu Feng and the Battle God’s Halberd was rather far, even though the speed of the lightning slash was very fast, the Battle God’s Halberd escaped from the range of the attack with his quick reaction.

“Zzzzz~”

However, when the lightning slash was about to reach the Battle God's Halberd, a transformation occurred.

From the original crescent shaped slash that only had an attack radius of over a dozen meters, it turned into lightning that filled the entire sea above.

Like a massive wave, the lightning filled everything above, and covered an area of several million meters. The Battle God's Halberd was unable to avoid it.

“Rumble~~~”

Lightning surged. No seawater could still be seen by the naked eye. Only lightning was present everywhere.

After the lightning dissipated, the Battle God's Halberd still had the form of a shadowy figure.

Merely, at that moment, he was not only lying on the ground, but his body was also completely tattered. Even his aura was extremely weak. He seemed like a dying man.

Using an extremely weak voice, the Battle God's Halberd asked Chu Feng, “That is no ordinary technique. Exactly what is it that you used just then?”

Having experienced the might of the attack, he grew even more curious about it.

“Putt~~~”

However, after the Battle God's Halberd said those words, Chu Feng half-knelt onto the ground.

Even though the Battle God's Halberd was extremely weak at that moment, Chu Feng was also extremely weak.

That said, although he was extremely weak, Chu Feng had a look of unconcealable excitement on his face.

Chu Feng raised his head and said to the Battle God's Halberd, “By pure chance, I had obtained a technique.”

“This technique is extremely difficult to learn. Even though I’ve studied it meticulously for a long time, I still did not manage to grasp it.”

“As for the attack I used earlier, it is the first attack of that technique.”

“It is called, First Slash, Heavenly Lightning Appearance!!!”

“First Slash, Heavenly Lightning Appearance?!!”

The Battle God’s Halberd’s gaze grew stern. Evidently, he had firmly remembered that name.

“That move is truly extraordinary.”

“However, although that move is very powerful, it seems like you’ve paid considerably to use it,” said the Battle God’s Halberd.

“Indeed, I have to pay a price. However, it is worth the price to defeat you,” said Chu Feng.

“Defeat me?”

“Humph. Brat, don’t be so careless just yet. I am still alive.”

As the Battle God’s Halberd spoke, he stood back up.

Even though the Battle God’s Halberd was already badly wounded and near-death, a strange scene began to appear as he stood back up.

His aura was actually recovering.

Chapter 3716 - Great Changes On The Sea Surface

“Zzzzz~”

However, right after the Battle God’s Halberd stood up, before his body recovered completely, lightning appeared from his body.

The lightning was extremely powerful. It seemed like countless ferocious beasts shining brightly around his body.

When that happened, his tattered body started to crumble apart.

The Battle God's Halberd started to reveal a look of pain.

"This power is still here?"

Seeing the lightning that was still wreaking havoc throughout his tattered body, a look of disbelief appeared in the Battle God's Halberd's eyes.

"Don't underestimate my ability."

"That is the strongest ability that I currently possess," Chu Feng said to the Battle God's Halberd.

"Hahaha."

After hearing Chu Feng's words, the Battle God's Halberd actually burst into laughter.

Even though the Battle God's Halberd was clearly about to be defeated by Chu Feng without any way to turn the situation around at all, he still laughed in such a manner. His behavior could be said to be extremely baffling.

Even Chu Feng felt puzzled, and slightly uneasy.

Chu Feng's unease was naturally because he was afraid. He was afraid that the Battle God's Halberd still had some means to contend against him.

After all, his opponent was the Battle God's Halberd.

However, to Chu Feng's surprise, the Battle God's Halberd suddenly said, "Although your cultivation is very weak, you're able to grasp such a technique. You could be considered to be slightly capable."

"You're barely qualified to obtain my initial acknowledgement." novel

"However, it is only my initial acknowledgement."

"If you want to obtain my complete power, the current you is still unworthy."

After he finished saying those words, the Battle God's Halberd's body completely dissipated.

As the body of the Battle God's Halberd dissipated, the surroundings also began to change.

In fact, even the location where Chu Feng stood began to change.

Originally, after the battle, the distance between Chu Feng and the Battle God's Halberd was very far.

However, Chu Feng now found that he was standing right beside the Battle God's Halberd.

Not only that, but the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had also appeared before Chu Feng.

This made Chu Feng realize that what the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had said earlier was true. Earlier, he was only inside an illusion. The place where he stood at that moment was the real world.

At that moment, Chu Feng closed his eyes and began to examine his body.

After examining his body, Chu Feng finally heaved a sigh of relief.

Even though he had returned to the real world, his health was extremely weak.

Everything inside the illusion had truly occurred.

Thus, he had still grasped the Heavenly Lightning Nine Slashes's First Slash, Heavenly Lightning Appearance.

Even though it was only the first slash, the might of this one attack was capable of killing those a level of cultivation higher than him.

Without a doubt, the Heavenly Lightning Appearance was capable of replacing the Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique as Chu Feng's strongest attack.

Furthermore, this was only the first slash.

The Heavenly Lightning Nine Slashes constituted a total of nine slashes. The might of each slash was much stronger than the one before.

That was the reason why Chu Feng was so excited. Chu Feng felt that if he could completely grasp the Heavenly Lightning Nine Slashes, it could present him with an invincible power.

“Haha. Boy, never would I have imagined that you would actually manage to succeed.”

As the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said those words, he arrived before the Battle God’s Halberd and pulled it out.

“Rooooarr~~~”

Once he pulled out the Battle God’s Halberd, anguished howls began to sound in succession. Chu Feng was able to see over ten thousand bodies of light flying over while wailing in anguish.

Ultimately, all those strange bodies of light entered the Battle God’s Halberd.

Chu Feng knew that those bodies of light were the guardian spirits.

“Haha. Boy, even your father failed when he challenged the Battle God’s Halberd in the past.”

“Yet, you actually succeeded. I guess this means the young shall surpass the old.”

As the Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke, he put away the Battle God’s Halberd. He felt very joyous, and was smiling very brilliantly.

“Senior, my father also challenged the Battle God’s Halberd?” asked Chu Feng.

“That’s right. He challenged it just like you challenged it earlier,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“If my father failed his challenge, how did he manage to survive?” Chu Feng was very curious.

“You only have an incense stick’s worth of time to attempt to defeat it. After an incense stick’s worth of time passes, you will not have the chance to defeat it anymore. As for whether or not you’ll be able to survive, it will depend on the Battle God’s Halberd.”

“Your father is not the only one that challenged it. Your grandfather and even this old man have challenged it before.”

“Of course, the number of people that managed to find the Battle God’s Halberd and challenge it are not limited to only the three of us. However, before you, only the three of us have ever managed to survive it.”

“Thus, although we failed our challenge, we could be considered to have obtained the Battle God’s Halberd’s acknowledgement. Otherwise, it would not have spared us,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng realized that even if one failed, one would not necessarily die.

Whether or not one lived or died would all depend on the Battle God’s Halberd.

“Senior, do you know how to leave this place?” asked Chu Feng.

Since they had successfully obtained the Battle God’s Halberd, they would have to quickly leave.

After all, Chu Feng still didn’t know how Chu Lingxi was doing. He was still very worried about her.

“Since this old man has been here for all these years, I naturally know how to leave this place. Come, follow me.”

After the Ox-nosed Old Daoist finished saying those words, he began to swim toward the east.

“Senior, please wait a moment.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he began to swim upward.

Since he had decided to leave, he would naturally not leave Chu Xuanzhengfa behind.

After Chu Feng returned, he discovered that Chu Xuanzhengfa was already awake. He had been waiting for Chu Feng ever since he read his note after regaining consciousness.

After seeing Chu Xuanzhengfa, Chu Feng did not bother to provide much of an explanation, and only stated that he had discovered a method to leave that place, and told Chu Xuanzhengfa to follow him to meet up with the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

After they returned, the two of them followed the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Even after having obtained the Battle God's Halberd, the sea did not change much.

However, what Chu Feng and the others didn't know was that the surface of the Mirror Sea that was originally extremely tranquil was no longer tranquil.

Massive waves had appeared on the surface of the sea that was originally akin to a mirror. The smallest waves measured over a thousand meters, and the largest waves were over ten thousand meters.

Such giant waves covered the entire surface of the boundless Mirror Sea.

It seemed as if the vast sea had been reduced to hell. It was truly terrifying to see.

Seeing the situation change, even Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu were unable to keep calm.

"Grandmaster Liangqiu, what is happening? Why did this change happen?" asked Gu Mingyuan.

"Although I do not know why, this is the first time this sort of thing has happened to the Mirror Sea. It would appear that some sort of massive change has happened in the Mirror Sea," said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

Massive change; this was naturally a massive change. This was something that Grandmaster Liangqiu didn't need to explain. Gu Mingyuan had guessed it herself.

Merely, she wanted to know why such a change would occur to the Mirror Sea all of a sudden.

After all, such a massive change would truly make one uneasy.

Not knowing why this had happened, Gu Mingyuan grabbed Chu Lingxi, who was on her back, even tighter. The look of worry in her eyes grew even more intense.

"Chu Feng, Chu Xuanzhengfa, the two of you must return safely," Gu Mingyuan muttered softly.

Chapter 3717 - Conflict And Distrust

“Senior.”

At the moment when Gu Mingyuan had a worried look on her face, a voice sounded from afar.

It was Chu Feng’s voice!!!

After the voice was heard, Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu simply did not dare to believe their ears.

That said, they still involuntarily turned in the direction of Chu Feng’s voice.

Once they turned, their expressions both turned brilliant.

There were three figures rapidly flying toward them from afar.

Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa were not the only ones present; there was also another person. That person was someone that both Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu knew. He was the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Led by the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa discovered the exit to leave the sea. Once they exited, they immediately went searching for Gu Mingyuan and the others.

“Chu Feng, the two of you... actually managed to come out?”

“How did you manage to come out?”

Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu went up to greet them. Seeing that both Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa were fine, they were both extremely excited and curious.

As for Chu Feng, his gaze landed on Chu Lingxi.

“The Deepsea Pupils fused successfully?” he asked.

“There’s still some time needed for them to be fused completely, However, her condition has stabilized,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“That’s truly great,” hearing those words, Chu Feng felt very relieved.

They had done so much and braved all those risks so that they could help Chu Lingxi.

Now that he had confirmed that Chu Lingxi could be cured, Chu Feng felt that all the pain and suffering he went through was worth it.

Gu Mingyuan cast a glance at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist as she asked, “Chu Feng, how did you all manage to come out? Furthermore... why would you be together with this Ox-nose?”

There was slight hostility in her gaze. Gu Mingyuan seemed to greatly dislike the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“This senior is the one who brought us out,” Chu Feng pointed to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“He brought you two out???”

Grandmaster Liangqiu narrowed his eyes upon hearing those words. Suspicion filled his eyes. He directly turned to ask the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, “Why are you here?”

“Liangqiu, why are you asking this sort of question? Why can’t I be here?”

“It is I who brought the two of them out from that Gate of Death. Not only are you all not thanking me, but you’re instead questioning me like a criminal?”

Although the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said that, he was not angered by Grandmaster Liangqiu’s attitude. Instead, he had a beaming smile on his face.

“How could someone like you possibly be able to bring Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa out from the Gate of Death?” Gu Mingyuan said. Like Grandmaster Liangqiu, she was not at all confident in the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“It doesn’t matter if you believe me or not. You can go and ask Chu Feng, they can testify for me,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“It is indeed this senior who brought us out,” said Chu Feng.

“Grandmaster Liangqiu, princess of the Ancient Clan, that is indeed the case.”

Even Chu Xuanzhengfa spoke to testify for the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Young friend Chu Feng, young friend Chu Xuanzhengfa, the two of you were deceived by him.”

“How could he possibly be capable of leading you two out from the Gate of Death?”

“The reason why the two of you were able to remain safe is all thanks to brother Zhu,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“But...”

Chu Feng wanted to explain. After all, it was indeed the Ox-nosed Old Daoist that had led them to the exit.

However, before he could finish his words, Grandmaster Liangqiu said, “Chu Feng, you don’t have to try explaining for him. You must’ve been deceived by him. I know him too well.”

After Grandmaster Liangqiu finished saying those words, Gu Mingyuan added, “Chu Feng, you’re not experienced enough, and still don’t know what sort of person this Ox-nose is. It is all thanks to senior Zhu that the two of you were able to escape.”

Seeing the way Grandmaster Liangqiu and Gu Mingyuan were acting, Chu Feng knew that they must possess a very deep misunderstanding with the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Perhaps it would be impossible for him to explain things at that moment. Thus, Chu Feng did not attempt to bother explaining things, and instead asked, “Oh, that’s right, where’s senior Zhu?”

“After senior Zhu learned that the two of you had entered the Gate of Death, he decided to help you two escape from your predicament.”

“Because of that, he proceeded to the Mirror Core,” said Gu Mingyuan.

“Mirror Core? What sort of place is that?” asked Chu Feng.

“A lot of the powers in the Mirror Sea originate from spirit formations. Since there are spirit formations, there are naturally formation cores.”

“The Mirror Core is the formation core of the Mirror Sea.”

“Brother Zhu was unable to enter the Gate of Death and bring the two of you out. Thus, he could only enter the Mirror Core and use its power to weaken the power of the Mirror Sea.”

“He entered the Mirror Core roughly four hours after the two of you entered the Gate of Death.”

“Oh, that’s right, did the two of you feel anything?” asked Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“Four hours, was it?”

“I don’t know exactly how much time has passed. That region was simply too strange. After some time, it would let out a strange bell sound.”

“After the bell tolled, the power of the sea would strengthen.”

“Later on, due to being unable to withstand the power, my consciousness began to grow fuzzy, and I was no longer able to determine time.”

“However, for some unknown reason, that enormous oppressive power suddenly disappeared.”

“However, since senior Zhu decided to help us, it’s very possible that the disappearance of that power was due to his actions,” said Chu Feng.

“That must be the case,” compared to Chu Feng, Grandmaster Liangqiu was extremely certain.

It could be seen that, different from the way he acted towards the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, Grandmaster Liangqiu was filled with confidence in old man Zhu.

“Oh, that’s right. Senior, you said that you stayed in that region for such a long time, do you know what the deal is with that strange bell?”

“Furthermore, how are you able to withstand that enormous power?” Chu Feng asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Chu Feng firmly believe that even Gu Mingyuan would not be able to withstand that terrifying power if she had entered that sea region.

Logically, it would be even more impossible for the Ox-nosed Old Daoist to be able to withstand that terrifying power if he had stayed there for many years.

“you two were trapped above the rocks. The bell of death tolls there. The more you hear that bell, the more power you’ll end up having to withstand. It will continue till your death.”

“As for me, I was below the rocks. There is no bell of death below the rocks.”

“The bell of death above the rocks will not disappear without cause. To be able to make the bell of death above the rocks disappear and also enter the Mirror Sea, that person is quite capable.”

“Chu Feng, exactly who is that so-called senior Zhu?”

“I, Ox-nose, also wish to know a person that extraordinary,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“That person is my friend. However, I believe that he would not want to know someone like you.”

Grandmaster Liangqiu’s words were filled with condescension. It could be seen that he was truly not fond of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“That’s not necessarily so. Who knows, maybe he and I are kindred spirits,” faced with Grandmaster Liangqiu’s cutting remarks, Ox-nosed Old Daoist was not only not affected at all, but he even had a look of expectation.

It could be seen that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist truly had very thick skin.

That said, at this moment, Chu Feng was more curious as to what exactly happened between Grandmaster Liangqiu and the Ox-nosed Old Daoist for there to be such conflict and distrust between them.

Chapter 3718 - Battle God’s Halberd

“It’s impossible for that friend of mine to be a kindred spirit with someone like you. You should give up on that thought,” Grandmaster Liangqiu said with an extremely certain tone.

His tone was also filled with contempt and disgust towards the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“You are truly someone who gauges the heart of a gentleman with your own vile heart. You are not that brother, how could you be so certain that he and I cannot become friends?” The Ox-nosed Old Daoist was unconvinced.

After hearing the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's words, Grandmaster Liangqiu revealed an angry look and shouted coldly, "Who are you calling vile?!"

Seeing that Grandmaster Liangqiu was angered, Chu Feng, worried that a fight would break out, hurriedly asked, "Senior, where is the Mirror Core? Since we've already come out, we should notify senior Zhu."

"You want to enter the Mirror Core? Boy, you can forget about that."

"You're unable to even withstand the Gate of Death. How could you possibly enter the Mirror Core? Not even I am able to enter the Mirror Core," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said after hearing Chu Feng's desire to enter the Mirror Core.

"Grandmaster Liangqiu, could it be that that place is very dangerous?" Chu Feng turned to ask Grandmaster Liangqiu.

"Indeed, it is a very dangerous place. However, Chu Feng, you don't have to be too worried either. Brother Zhu's ability far surpasses that of this old man."

"Brother Zhu said to give him seventy-nine days. He said that he should be able to return on his own within seventy-nine days. Furthermore, he told us to not disturb him within these seventy-nine days," Grandmaster Liangqiu said.

"What if senior Zhu is unable to return on his own within seventy-nine days?" asked Chu Feng.

"If brother Zhu is unable to return on his own..." After saying those words, Grandmaster Liangqiu let out a look of difficulty. However, when he turned to Chu Feng and saw the determined look on his face; a look of not planning to drop the subject without him explaining things properly, he ultimately said, "If he's unable to return in seventy-nine days, he must've encountered some sort of trouble." n/.0-.v).e)(ℓ-/B/(1/n

"He also stated that if he doesn't return within seventy-nine days, you should come and find him."

"He said that if it was you, you might be able to save him," said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

"Save him? If it's the Mirror Core, then it'll simply not be saving him. Instead, it'll be throwing away one's life."

“Chu Feng, you must not go. Even if you went there, you won’t be able to save him. You will only be throwing your life away,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s words were naturally not pleasant to the ears.

However, Grandmaster Liangqiu and Gu Mingyuan only glared at him sharply, and did not refute him.

They actually felt the same way as he did. They both felt that Chu Feng would only be throwing his life away by going to the Mirror Core.

Thinking that old man Zhu was able to enter the Mirror Core to utilize the power of the formation core to weaken the power of the Gate of Death, his ability could very well be described as omnipotent in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

However, even someone like him was unable to absolutely return safely after entering the Mirror Core.

Thus, Chu Feng, with his cultivation, would really be throwing his life away should he decide to enter the Mirror Core.

Thus, even though both Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu felt very ashamed of themselves, they still did not wish for Chu Feng to attempt the risk of entering the Mirror Core if old man Zhu did not return after seventy-nine days.

“Senior, is the Mirror Core far from here?” asked Chu Feng.

“It’s not far. It’s only hidden in the depths of the Mirror Sea. If one wishes to go there, one will be able to reach it in a couple incense sticks’ worth of time,” explained Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“This junior understands,” Chu Feng had made his decision.

Regardless of how dangerous of a place that Mirror Core might be, if that old man Zhu did not return after seventy-nine days, Chu Feng would go and rescue him.

After all, that old man Zhu had only entered that dangerous place for the sake of saving him and Chu Xuanzhengfa.

Thus, Chu Feng naturally could not ignore him, for that would be ungrateful and unjust.

“Oh, that’s right. Grandmaster Liangqiu, could the change that happened to the Mirror Sea be related to senior Zhu?”

“Could it be because of something he did in the Mirror Core?” asked Gu Mingyuan.

The transformation to the Mirror Sea was very strange. Originally, Gu Mingyuan was worried that the change to the Mirror Sea would cause the situation to become even more dangerous for Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa.

Yet now, Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa had managed to come out safely. Thus, she was naturally no longer worried about them.

However, she was still interested in knowing exactly what had happened, as the Mirror Sea had been around for a very long time, and yet this was the first time such a change had occurred.

“You’ve reminded me of this. Perhaps this change is really because of brother Zhu. After all, in terms of understanding of the Mirror Sea, there’s no one that understands the Mirror Sea better than brother Zhu.”

“He was able to even change the power of the Gate of Death from the Mirror Core. It’s not impossible for him to change the sea’s surface,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“You all are mistaken about that. This change to the Mirror Sea is not something that anyone could accomplish. The only possible way for this change to occur is if the most important item in the Mirror Sea has been retrieved by someone,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. He revealed a proud smile on his wretched face as he said those words.

Chu Feng knew that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was showing off.

“What are you implying?” Grandmaster Liangqiu and Gu Mingyuan asked at the same time.

Sure enough, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s words had caught their attention.

Chu Feng noticed that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist became even more pleased with himself.

“How could you two not understand what I’m implying?”

“What else could the most important thing in the Mirror Sea be?”

“That would naturally be the legendary weapon, the Battle God’s Halberd,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“You’re implying that someone has managed to retrieve the Battle God’s Halberd?” asked Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“That’s right,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Impossible. Brother Zhu has observed the Mirror Sea for many years all for the sake of obtaining that Battle God’s Halberd.”

“However, after all these years, he still doesn’t know where the Battle God’s Halberd is located. Thus, how could anyone possibly retrieve it?”

Grandmaster Liangqiu firmly refused to believe the proposal of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“The Battle God’s Halberd is indeed not something that can be retrieved by an ordinary individual.”

“The person who retrieved the Battle God’s Halberd is most definitely not an ordinary individual.”

“Thus, you two can open your eyes wide and look carefully... at this.”

As the Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke, he streaked his palm across his Cosmos Sack.

In the next moment, a silvery light was released from his hand.

“Clamor~~~”

After that silvery light was emitted, the Mirror Sea that was originally surging with giant waves became completely tranquil again.

Furthermore, over ten thousand silhouettes appeared behind the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Those silhouettes all had malevolent appearances. They resembled evil spirits. As for their auras, they were extremely powerful. All of them were rank one Exalted.

Chapter 3719 - Emotional Quarrel

“Those things?!!!”

Seeing such a thing, Grandmaster Liangqiu and Chu Xuanzhengfa were immediately stunned. At the same time, complicated emotions of astonishment and fear mixed together on their faces.

Even Gu Mingyuan had the same look on her face.

After all, those were over ten thousand Utmost Exalted-level existences.

As people of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, they all knew what over ten thousand Utmost Exalted-level existences represented.

Most importantly, not only were the ten thousand plus Utmost Exalted-level existences all behind the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, but they were also half-kneeling in a manner akin to subordinates, where the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was their master.

Most importantly of all, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was holding a silver halberd.

The aura of that halberd filled heaven and earth and swept through everything. After the halberd appeared, everything in the world appeared very small and insignificant.

Even a martial cultivator as conceited as Gu Mingyuan felt completely suppressed.

It was as if a ruler had descended upon the world!!!

“Ox-nose, could it be, you’ve obtained the Battle God’s Halberd?”
Grandmaster Liangqiu asked with a startled voice.

Even though he was unwilling to believe it, the truth was right before his eyes. Thus, he had no choice but to believe it.

Merely, he was very puzzled as to how the Ox-nosed Old Daoist could possibly obtain such a precious weapon.

“Hehe. To be exact, it was obtained by that boy.”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist did not attempt to take credit for Chu Feng’s achievement, and pointed to Chu Feng, who stood beside him.

“Chu Feng?!”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s answer astonished Grandmaster Liangqiu, Gu Mingyuan and Chu Xuanzhengfa even more.

Immediately, their eyes all turned to Chu Feng.

“Actually, I only helped slightly. It was mainly senior Daoist’s contribution.” Chu Feng said in a very modest manner.

Gu Mingyuan suddenly revealed a look of anger. She pointed at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and asked angrily, “Ox-nosed Old Daoist, did you exploit Chu Feng?!”

“Alas, what do you mean by that? How could I exploit him?”

“I merely came into an agreement with him beforehand where the Battle God’s Halberd would belong to me should he successfully retrieve it.”

“Of course... I wouldn’t have him exert himself for free. I will be presenting him with benefits too.” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“What sort of benefit could you possibly give him?!” Gu Mingyuan asked angrily. She was very emotional and very furious. She was acting like the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had done something to take advantage of Chu Feng.

“Senior Daoist has agreed to help me fuse with my Divine Power,” said Chu Feng.

“What?!”

Hearing those words, both Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu revealed an identical expression.

It was an expression of feeling things turning very bad.

“Ox-nosed Old Daoist, you dared to deceive Chu Feng?! I’m going to kill you!”

Not only did Gu Mingyuan become even more furious, but she had also released her own Utmost Exalted-level oppressive might. Judging from her appearance, she was planning to fight the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Rooooarr~”

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~”

At practically the same time, the ten thousand plus Utmost Exalted-level guardian spirits all moved. They took on an offensive posture and surrounded Gu Mingyuan.

It seemed like the ten thousand plus Utmost Exalted-level guardian spirits would immediately unleash full-on attacks at her should she attempt anything.

“Gu Mingyuan, I know that you’re very arrogant, despotic and unreasonable.”

“However, I currently hold the Battle God’s Halberd in my hand.”

“This Battle God’s Halberd is capable of controlling these guardian spirits. If you plan to fight me, you’d best make careful considerations.” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said as he raised the Battle God’s Halberd.

“Humph, you think trash like these could stop me?”

However, faced with over ten thousand Utmost Exalted-level guardian spirits, Gu Mingyuan showed no sign of fear.

“Senior, I voluntarily agreed to cooperate with senior Daoist. He did not force me, and did not deceive me.”

Seeing that the situation was bad, Chu Feng hurriedly stood before Gu Mingyuan to stop her. He was afraid that they would really end up fighting.

“Chu Feng, if this Ox-nosed Old Daoist is truly capable of granting you Divine Power, I will naturally have no complaints.”

“However, you don’t understand him. This Ox-nosed Old Daoist is simply incapable of fusing Divine Power into anyone’s body at all. No one could possibly be capable of that.”

“This Ox-nosed bastard has deceived others using this sort of thing countless times.”

“It is one thing for him to deceive others, yet he’s actually deceiving you too. With this, how could I possibly tolerate him?” said Gu Mingyuan.

“Young friend Chu Feng, what Gu Mingyuan said is correct.”

At that moment, even Grandmaster Liangqiu spoke. Then, he looked to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. With anger, he said, “Ox-nose, no matter what, you are young friend Chu Feng’s senior, how could you deceive him like this?”

“Deceive? This old man has never deceived anyone.”

“Merely, fusing with Divine Power is going against the rule of nature to begin with. It is extremely difficult to accomplish.”

“For those people to fail to accomplish it, it could only mean that they lacked aptitude. However, this old man has indeed helped someone fuse with Divine Power before.” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“You said you’d succeeded. Very well, why don’t you tell us who you helped with fuse Divine Power successfully?” said Gu Mingyuan.

“That person refused to let me say his name. Thus, I am unable to tell you who that person is.” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“You’re unable to successfully fuse Divine Power with anyone, and are unable to provide a single case of success. Are you still refusing to admit that you’re a scam?” asked Gu Mingyuan.

“I myself know my own skills best. Why would I bother to make you all understand what I’m capable of?”

Faced with Gu Mingyuan’s repeated questions, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist revealed a look of indifference. He seemed to be indicating that she could think of him however she wished.

“You damned scam, you’re looking for a beating!”

Gu Mingyuan was so furious that her face had turned completely red. As she spoke, she prepared to attack the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Grandmaster Liangqiu, Senior Gu, I know that the two of you are thinking for my good.”

“However, I feel that senior Daoist will not deceive me. I believe him.”

Seeing that the situation was bad, Chu Feng spoke again.

Even if Chu Feng didn't believe anyone else, he wouldn't possibly refuse to believe his father.

Since it was his father who had mentioned to him that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was capable of fusing Divine Power into one's body, Chu Feng firmly believed that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was capable of such a feat.

Chu Feng even felt that the reason why others did not believe the Ox-nosed Old Daoist must be because they had some sort of misunderstanding about him.

“Chu Feng, you...”

Seeing that Chu Feng was so firm in believing the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and not them, Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu both felt very helpless and even slightly angry.

“Chu Feng, since you're unwilling to listen, you can give it a try yourself.”

“I will supervise this old thing for you so that he will not attempt to run away.”

“Have him teach you how to fuse with Divine Power before my eyes.”

“Once you discover that he has deceived you, tell me about it.”

“At that time, I will help you teach him a lesson.”

Although she was angry, Gu Mingyuan did not give up on Chu Feng, and was still planning to stand up for him.

Seeing Gu Mingyuan like that, Chu Feng felt very moved.

Whether or not she believed the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was her business.

However, Gu Mingyuan was making considerations for Chu Feng's good from the bottom of her heart.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3720 - Chu Lingxi Awaken - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3720 - Chu Lingxi Awaken

Chapter 3720 - Chu Lingxi Awakens

“Interesting. Gu Mingyuan, did you really think that you’d be able to stop me if I wanted to leave?” mocked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Ox-nose, I am not going to argue with you because of Chu Feng,” After Gu Mingyuan finished saying these words to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, she looked to Chu Feng. “Chu Feng, I will warn you again. This Ox-nose is a scammer.”

“Senior, I thank you for your kind intentions. However, I feel what senior Daoist said to be rather reasonable too.”

“Fusing with Divine Power is an act that goes against nature. I have already prepared myself, and know that it is not something easily achievable.”

“If I fail, I can only say that my talent is insufficient. I will not harbor any resentment toward senior Daoist.”

“As for helping him obtain the Battle God’s Halberd, it is something that I was perfectly willing to do. I was truly not deceived.” Chu Feng said to Gu Mingyuan.

“Look, Chu Xuanyuan’s son is much more sensible than you.”

“Gu Mingyuan, it’s no wonder that you’re unable to compare to him. The way I see it, you’re inferior to even Chu Xuanyuan’s son.”

“You’re only able to strut around in the Ancestral Martial Starfield for the rest of your life. If you were to leave the Ancestral Martial Starfield, who would possibly know who you are?”

“Back in your youth, you were equally as famous as Chu Xuanyuan. However... there’s likely more than light-years between the two of you now.”

“Not to mention Chu Xuanyuan, Chu Xuanyuan’s son will soon surpass you too.”

After Chu Feng spoke out for him, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist felt extremely pleased, and actually began to make cutting remarks at Gu Mingyuan.

Different from others, who usually had looks of anger or mockery when they made cutting remarks, Ox-nosed Old Daoist had a beaming smile on his face. He looked like he was joking. At the same time, his appearance made him look like he needed a major beating.

“Senior Daoist, please don’t say anymore,” urged Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was truly left in a rather difficult situation. On one side was Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu. It was needless to explain the relationship the two of them had with him. Although they had not known one another for a very long time, Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu were seniors that he greatly respected, seniors that had treated him extremely well.

On the other side was the Ox-nosed Old Daoist that Chu Feng had sought for a very long time, and finally found after great difficulty.

Chu Feng wanted them to be able to get along peacefully. He did not wish for them to treat each other like enemies.

“Very well. Chu Feng, I will not make things difficult for you. I’ll stop arguing with this Ox-nose.”

“However, I will tell you the same thing. If you ever regret your decision, tell me. I will stand up for you.” Gu Mingyuan said to Chu Feng.

“Thank you, senior.” Chu Feng clasped his fist to express his thanks.

Gu Mingyuan was truly good to Chu Feng.

Even though he had decided to stand opposite her, she was still willing to stand up for him.

“Wuu~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Lingxi, who Gu Mingyuan was carrying behind her, let out a soft moan.

At the same time, a slight look of pain appeared on her face.

Furthermore, the painful expression grew stronger and stronger. Her originally beautiful little face was distorted by the pain. Even her body began to struggle.

It seemed like she was suffering from some sort of unbearable pain.

“Grandmaster, what’s happening to Lingxi?”

Gu Mingyuan was terrified to see Chu Lingxi behaving like that all of a sudden. She immediately turned to ask Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“Buzz~~~”

However, before Grandmaster Liangqiu could say anything, two blue rays of light shot out from Chu Lingxi’s eyes.

The lights shot straight into the sky and pierced through even the sky itself.

After the lights appeared, the torrential rain in the sky became even more intense. The surging waves also become much more ferocious.

It was as if all the power within heaven and earth was being affected by Chu Lingxi’s gaze.

However, one must know that Chu Lingxi’s eyes were still closed...

With the situation like that, in addition to Gu Mingyuan, even Chu Feng and Grandmaster Liangqiu were greatly alarmed.

However, when they approached Chu Lingxi with the intent to examine her, Chu Lingxi suddenly calmed down. Even the blue light emitting from her eyes dissipated.

The weather that had intensified because of her waking had also returned to its previous condition.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Lingxi opened her eyes.

Chu Feng was right before her. Thus, he was able to clearly see how beautiful her current eyes were.

After all, those were the Deepsea Pupils. That said, compared to the Deepsea Pupils Chu Feng had seen earlier when retrieving them, the current Deepsea Pupils were not only spirited, but they were also emitting Chu Lingxi's aura.

In short, her current eyes were much brighter and more spirited than her previous eyes.

This was normal.

No matter how beautiful Chu Lingxi's eyes might've been, they were only ordinary human eyes.

However, her eyes had been replaced with the Deepsea Pupils!

The Deepsea Pupils were a pair of Natural Oddities that had formed through absorbing boundless martial power over tens of thousands of years!!!

"Chu Feng?!"

Chu Lingxi's eyes immediately moved upon seeing Chu Feng. She immediately noticed the people beside him.

"Father? Mother?"

"I... where am I?"

Chu Lingxi had woken up. She was visibly confused.

After all, based on her last memory, she was still in the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Yet, she was suddenly at a place with howling winds and torrential rain.

Soon, Chu Lingxi seemed to have recalled something, as she suddenly revealed a stern and alarmed look.

"Didn't I go blind?"

"Mother, I... I was blinded by Linghu Hongfei!!!"

At that moment, Chu Lingxi had a look of fear all over her face as she tightly grabbed onto Gu Mingyuan.

"Lingxi, don't be afraid, your eyes are already cured."

Gu Mingyuan hurriedly put Chu Lingxi down from her back and hugged her tightly. She began to gently stroke Chu Lingxi's hair as she comforted her.

"No, that's impossible. My eyes couldn't be cured. I felt that he had not only blinded my eyes, but he had even blinded my soul. I couldn't be cured."

"Everything that I'm seeing right now is false, right? I'm already blind. I'm already blind!!!"

Chu Lingxi began to cry. She was feeling truly sad, truly wronged.

Because of that, she was crying her heart out!!!

Her reaction was understandable. After all, no one would want to become blind for the rest of their life. This was even more so for Chu Lingxi, as she was a martial cultivator with great future prospects.

"Foolish child, that's all in the past. Aren't you able to see now? You're already cured."

"If you don't believe me, you can ask Grandmaster Liangqiu. Grandmaster, please tell her if she's cured or not," Gu Mingyuan looked to Grandmaster Liangqiu.

"Lingxi, your eyes are indeed cured," said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

"Lingxi, aren't you able to see us?"

"What you're seeing is not a lie. We are real. If you don't believe me, you can try seeing us again."

Chu Feng and Chu Xuanzhengfa also began to persuade Chu Lingxi.

Being comforted by the crowd, Chu Lingxi gradually calmed down.

Chapter 3721 - Begin Immediately

Upon calming down, Chu Lingxi not only confirmed that her eyes were capable of seeing, but she also discovered something else.

"I'm really not blind?"

"My eyes..."

“Wait! My cultivation, it changed?!!!” said Chu Lingxi.

“Your cultivation?”

No one had taken note of Chu Lingxi’s cultivation because they were too worried about her.

It was only after Chu Lingxi said those words that the crowd began to take note of her cultivation.

It was only then that they discovered that Chu Lingxi’s cultivation was no longer that of a rank three Exalted. Instead, she had become a rank four Exalted.

Chu Lingxi’s cultivation had actually increased.

But, Chu Lingxi was a Heavenly Bloodline possessor. Shouldn’t she create an abnormal sign when her cultivation increased?

How come there wasn’t an abnormal sign this time around? How come her cultivation increased just like that?

It’s the Deepsea Pupils!!!

This was the first thing that came to the crowd’s minds.

Chu Lingxi’s cultivation wouldn’t have increased for no reason. If one must find a reason, it would definitely be the Deepsea Pupils.

“It’s my eyes. My eyes seem to be very special.”

“I am able to sense that it’s my eyes that caused this change.”

As Chu Lingxi spoke, she released her spirit power and formed a mirror.

Seeing herself in the mirror, Chu Lingxi stood stunned. She remained stunned for a very long time before saying excitedly, “Heavens, my eyes, they’re beautiful. My eyes...”

“Mother, what is going on with my eyes?”

“Furthermore, where are we?” Chu Lingxi asked excitedly.

Chu Feng and the others briefly explained what had happened to her.

Of course, they only told her that they were here to retrieve the Deepsea Pupils, and did not mention the various dangers they had encountered in the process.

“This is the legendary Mirror Sea?”

Even though no one had mentioned how dangerous that place was, Chu Lingxi revealed a look of guilt after realizing that they were at the Mirror Sea.

“I am truly sorry. It’s all because of my stubbornness and insisting on challenging Linghu Hongfei.”

“Otherwise, everyone wouldn’t have to take on such a risk to help me treat my eyes.” Chu Lingxi felt very remorseful.

“Lingxi, there’s nothing wrong with you challenging Linghu Hongfei. The one that’s wrong is Linghu Hongfei.”

“Regarding that matter, your mother will uphold justice for you. I will definitely make the Linghu Heavenly Clan provide an explanation.” Gu Mingyuan pledged to Chu Lingxi with certainty.

“I want to personally avenge myself.”

“I merely... do not want everyone to take on such risks because of me. After all, I am the one who caused this disaster, thus I should be the one to shoulder the consequences.” said Chu Lingxi.

Chu Lingxi was very intelligent. Thus, even though they were all avoiding the subject of how difficult the journey to the Mirror Sea and obtaining the Deepsea Pupils was, Chu Lingxi was able to guess it to some extent.

She knew that the process of obtaining the Deepsea Pupils was most definitely filled with difficulties. She felt that this was especially so for Chu Feng, as he still looked extremely weak from using the first slash of the Heavenly Lightning Nine Slashes.

Because of that, Chu Lingxi felt very ashamed.

Even though she had clearly challenged Linghu Hongfei to stand up for Chu Feng, she never expected that she would ultimately need to trouble him to help her.

This was completely different from what she had expected.

“Lingxi, that’s enough. Let us not talk about the things from the past. Since you’ve fought Linghu Hongfei, do you know how powerful he currently is?” asked Chu Feng.

“When I fought him, he had the same cultivation of rank three Exalted like me.”

“However, I kept having a feeling that he had not used his full strength against me. He must be hiding something.”

“But now, I am a rank four Exalted, and my eyes have increased my battle power a lot. If I am to fight him again, the outcome of the battle will not be certain.”

As she said those words, Chu Lingxi had a look of confidence on her face.

It would appear that the Deepsea Pupils had truly assisted her greatly.

“If that is all, I’m afraid that it would still not be enough. I have a gift that I’m going to give you,” said Chu Feng.

“Gift?”

The crowd’s gazes all changed upon hearing those words.

However, to the crowd’s surprise, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Cough, cough...”

Faced with the crowd’s confused gazes, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist coughed in a very pleased manner before saying, “Young lady, you are truly fortunate in making such a good friend.”

“Whilst this old man doesn’t know how Chu Feng obtained the Deepsea Pupils for you, he paid quite considerably in order to give you this gift.”

“That said, the price that he paid could be said to be worth it. This is the gift.”

As the Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke, he flipped his palm and took out a bead containing Divine Power.

Upon seeing the bead, black lines immediately rolled down Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu’s heads.

They already knew what the gift was. It would definitely be assisting Chu Lingxi in fusing with a Divine Power.

Firmly determined that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was a swindler, Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu would definitely not think that gift to be something good.

“Wow. This aura, could it be... Divine Power?”

Compared to Gu Mingyuan and Grandmaster Liangqiu, Chu Lingxi’s eyes started shining. She became deeply interested in the bead before her.

“It is indeed Divine Power. Young lady, this old man knows that flowing within your body are two kinds of bloodline power. One is your father’s Heavenly Bloodline, and the other is your mother’s Ancient Clan’s bloodline.”

“However, as long as you are willing to bear hardships and put forth effort, you will have the chance to obtain a third type of power -- Divine Power.” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Senior, is that really the case?” Chu Lingxi was immediately overjoyed upon hearing those words.

“Of course. However... you must properly thank Chu Feng for this. This old man will not randomly help others with this sort of thing. If it wasn’t for Chu Feng seeking my help, even if your father and mother wanted my help, I would not have helped you.” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Chu Feng, you are simply too good to me.”

Overwhelmed with excitement, Chu Lingxi actually leapt into Chu Feng’s bosom and hugged him tightly.

Although she hugged him tightly, she only hugged him momentarily before turning around to look to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. “Senior, when do we begin then?”

“That will be up to you. When do you want to begin?” asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“If possible, I wish to begin immediately.” said Chu Feng.

“Very well, we’ll begin immediately then. The two of you can go rest first, this old man will make some preparations. Once my preparations are done, I will immediately call for you.”

After saying those words, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist waved his sleeve.

A vast amount of spirit power was released from his sleeve, filling the sky.

After the spirit power swept through the sky, it formed an enormous palace.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist stepped into that palace. He seemed to really be off to make some sort of preparations.

Chapter 3722 - Linxi’s Parents

“Lingxi, you shouldn’t put too much hope in something like fusing with Divine Power,” Gu Mingyuan said to Chu Lingxi.

Seeing how joyous and excited Chu Lingxi was, she did not attempt to expose the Ox-nosed Old Daoist as a scam.

However, she was still afraid that Chu Lingxi would be disappointed from failing to fuse with the Divine Power. Thus, she decided to warn her to not put too much hope into it.

“Mother, I know it will be very difficult. However... I will definitely do my best,” said Chu Lingxi.

“Well then, Chu Feng, Chu Lingxi, the two of you can come in now.”

Soon, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s voice was heard.

Hearing his voice, Chu Feng and Chu Lingxi did not hesitate, and both flew into the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s palace.

After entering the palace, Chu Feng and Chu Lingxi discovered that, although the palace was very big, there were only two bath tub like items and nothing else inside.

Furthermore, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was nowhere to be seen.

That said, deep in the palace hall was a door. Likely, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was on the other side of the door.

“Wait a moment, this old man still needs to make some more preparations.”

Sure enough, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s voice was heard from behind the door.

“Chu Feng, did I cause trouble for you again?” Chu Lingxi asked Chu Feng.

“What do you mean by that?” asked Chu Feng.

“It’s about me challenging Linghu Hongfei,” said Chu Lingxi.

“Foolish girl, you were standing up for me, I am more than grateful for what you’ve done; how could it be causing trouble for me?” said Chu Feng.

“But, if I didn’t insist on standing up for you, you all wouldn’t have had to brave such dangers,” said Chu Lingxi.

“Perhaps this is fate. Did you know, I’ve been searching for this senior Daoist the entire time. However, I had been unable to find him. Never did I expect to encounter him in the Mirror Sea.”

“If I didn’t come to the Mirror Sea, I might not have been able to find him in my whole life.”

“Say, is this not fate?” asked Chu Feng.

“If you say it like that, you’ll have to thank me then.” Chu Lingxi spoke with a beaming smile.

“Indeed, I will really have to thank you.” Chu Feng also smiled.

However, Chu Feng soon looked to the outside of the palace.

At that moment, Grandmaster Liangqiu had also unleashed his spirit power to create a palace.

Chu Feng saw that Grandmaster Liangqiu, Chu Xuanzhengfa and Gu Mingyuan had all entered that palace.

Grandmaster Liangqiu went to his own room to rest.

Chu Xuanzhengfa was attempting to talk with Gu Mingyuan. Likely, he must be trying to understand something.

However, he was met with indifference by Gu Mingyuan.

She remained extremely cold toward Chu Xuanzhengfa.

However, when Chu Xuanzhengfa stopped that spirit formation gate with his own body, Chu Feng had clearly discovered an extremely worried look in Gu Mingyuan's eyes.

That sort of worry could not be faked. Instead, she was truly worried for Chu Xuanzhengfa.

The changes in Gu Mingyuan's behavior toward Chu Xuanzhengfa made Chu Feng very curious as to exactly what had happened between them.

Overwhelmed with curiosity, Chu Feng turned to ask Chu Lingxi, "Lingxi, do you know exactly what happened between your mother and father?"

"Even though they're clearly your biological parents, why is their relationship so complicated?"

Of course, Chu Feng's question was asked through voice transmission. He felt that this was a private matter, and shouldn't be asked directly.

"It's actually nothing serious. It's an issue with my mother."

Chu Lingxi did not attempt to conceal anything from the curious Chu Feng, and began to tell him about her parents.

Although Chu Xuanzhengfa was widely renowned in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, he was simply unworthy of even being mentioned should he be placed in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

On the other hand, who was Gu Mingyuan? She was an existence that was equally as renowned as Chu Xuanyuan in her youth.

It could be said that there was no one in the Ancestral Martial Starfield that didn't know her.

Furthermore, Gu Mingyuan was also very powerful, as it was her who had supported the rise of the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan.

From this, it could be seen that regardless of whether or not it might be status or strength, there was a massive disparity between Chu Xuanzhengfa and Gu Mingyuan.

However, sometimes fate was something that one could not stop.

By pure coincidence, Chu Xuanzhengfa had discovered a remnant.

It was inside that remnant that Chu Xuanzhengfa encountered Gu Mingyuan.

Gu Mingyuan had wanted to obtain the treasure inside that remnant. However, the treasures inside remnants were generally never easy to obtain.

One must either breach the formation protecting the remnant or satisfy the requirement of the remnant.

The master of that remnant had given a somewhat strange request.

Only married couples were allowed to retrieve the treasure.

It would naturally be impossible for Gu Mingyuan to have feelings for Chu Xuanzhengfa for the sake of a treasure. After all, she looked down on him from the bottom of her heart.

Unfortunately, the protective formation was already active. If the two of them did not satisfy the requirement, they would be trapped inside it.

Upon being trapped, they remained trapped for three entire years.

After three years passed, the two of them successfully escaped from the formation. However, when they left, they exited with an infant. That infant was Chu Lingxi.

“In other words, ultimately, for the sake of escaping, your mother came to terms?” asked Chu Feng.

“That’s right. It could be said that my mother was forced with no alternative. Even my birth could be said to be an accident.”

“Do you now know why my mother detests my father so much?”

“That said, my father had truly fallen for my mother.” Chu Lingxi spoke in a very helpless manner.

“So that’s the case.”

At this moment, a thought came into Chu Feng’s mind.

She felt that someone like Gu Mingyuan most definitely thought very highly of her reputation and integrity.

It would be impossible for her to be with someone she didn’t like for the sake of a treasure. It would be even more impossible for her to give birth to a child with someone she didn’t like for the sake of escaping from a formation.

Since they were trapped for three years, things must’ve happened during those three years.

Gu Mingyuan had feelings for Chu Xuanzhengfa. Furthermore, her feelings were rather deep.

If she didn’t have feelings for him, then, based on Gu Mingyuan’s personality, she would’ve very likely killed Chu Xuanzhengfa back then.

She would not have allowed the people of the world to know that she had married Chu Xuanzhengfa, and even had a child with him.

That said, Gu Mingyuan was most likely restraining herself the entire time, restraining her feelings for Chu Xuanzhengfa.

Why was she restraining herself? Likely, it was due to her pride.

There was simply too vast of a disparity between her and Chu Xuanzhengfa. Although she had feelings for him deep in her heart, she still felt that Chu Xuanzhengfa was unable to match her.

It was precisely due to her contradictory mentality that Gu Mingyuan ended up treating Chu Xuanzhengfa the way she currently did.

Chapter 3723 - Ox-nosed Old Daoist Showing Off

“My father is truly pitiful.” *noVe(l)b*-In

Chu Lingxi was still looking at the location of her mother.

When Chu Feng looked over, he discovered that Gu Mingyuan had already left. Only Chu Xuanzhengfa was still standing there.

However, this time around, Chu Xuanzhengfa did not reveal any look of sadness toward Gu Mingyuan’s coldness. Instead, a faint smile had appeared on his face.

“How is he pitiful?” asked Chu Feng.

“My mother is completely heartless, yet my father is completely infatuated with her. Is he not pitiful?”

“Look at him, he’s even smiling so foolishly. He is truly pitiful.” Chu Lingxi said with a sigh.

“What you’ve seen might not necessarily be the truth. Girl, it would appear that you still don’t understand your mother enough.” said Chu Feng.

Chu Feng knew why Chu Xuanzhengfa was smiling even though he was once again treated so coldly by Gu Mingyuan.

Back then, Chu Feng had witnessed Gu Mingyuan’s worry for him.

Naturally, Chu Xuanzhengfa had also witnessed it.

As such, Chu Xuanzhengfa had also discovered what Chu Feng had.

It was precisely because Chu Xuanzhengfa knew that Gu Mingyuan had him in her heart that he was smiling so happily.

“Indeed, I do not know my mother well. The number of times I’ve interacted with her are not many.”

“However, no matter what, I should know her better than you, no?”

Chu Lingxi looked at Chu Feng in an unaccepting manner.

Chu Feng smiled and didn't bother explaining.

Seeing that Chu Feng was ignoring her, Chu Lingxi turned her gaze to the location where Chu Xuanzhengfa stood again and sighed. "If only they could be together normally."

"Rest assured, that day will come sooner or later."

"After all, there's you here. It's impossible for them to not have a relationship with you." Chu Feng said to Chu Lingxi.

"Mn, I will do my best to make them get together." said Chu Lingxi.

"You two little kids shouldn't involve yourself in the matters of adults."

As Chu Feng and Chu Lingxi were conversing, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's voice was suddenly heard.

Turning to the voice, they discovered that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had walked out with two wine gourds in hands.

"Woosh~~~"

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist tossed the wine gourds into the air.

Then, the two wine gourds landed above the two tubs.

"Clamor~~~"

Then, two streams of black liquid began to spill out of the gourds into either tub.

"Senior, what the heck is that?"

After the black liquid appeared, Chu Lingxi covered her mouth and nose and began to frown deeply.

A stench could be smelled after the black liquid appeared. As for that stench, it was being emitted by the black liquid.

That stench was very intense. One would feel disgusted upon simply smelling it.

One must know that martial cultivators had a very strong resistance, far superior to ordinary people.

However, the black liquid was so stinky that even Chu Feng and Chu Lingxi were unable to tolerate it. From this, one could imagine exactly how stinky the black liquid was.

“The heck is it?”

“Little girl, what are you talking about? This is not ‘what the heck’, this is something very good.” The Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke with a faint smile. Then, he added, “The bloodline power that you two possess was inherited from your parents.”

“However, the people that possess Divine Power are people that are chosen by the heavens.”

“The constitution of their bodies is innately different from you two. Thus... if you two wish to obtain the power of Divine Bodies, the first thing you must do is to alter the constitution of your body.”

Only by altering your body will your body be able to fuse with Divine Power.”

“Thus, the first step would be to temper one’s body.”

“The two of you are to each enter a tub and soak in there. Remember, you must allow the holy water in the tub to infuse into your body. Only then will you be able to successfully temper your body.”

“The two of you have trained in martial cultivation for many years. This should not be a difficult task for you.” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Holy Water? Senior, that’s clearly stinky water.” Chu Lingxi said with contempt.

“Little girl, you are truly slow-witted. How could you judge whether or not the water is holy by its outward appearance?”

“If you do not wish to obtain Divine Power, you can very well not bother tempering your body. If it wasn’t for me promising Chu Feng to help you, this

old man wouldn't have bothered to help you." The Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke in a slightly displeased manner.

"Lingxi, senior Daoist will not deceive us." Chu Feng said to Chu Lingxi.

"Okay then."

"Senior, wasn't serious about what I said, please don't get angry. I'll enter the tub right away."

As Chu Lingxi spoke, she leapt forth and entered a tub.

Seeing that, Chu Feng leapt into the other tub.

Upon entering the tub, Chu Feng was able to sense the black liquid entering his body of its own accord. If Chu Feng were to guide it, the black liquid would be able to enter his body even more smoothly. The black liquid began to move throughout Chu Feng's body and temper it.

This tempering process was not something that could be completed in a short period of time.

Thus, Chu Feng turned to ask the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, "Senior, how long will this tempering process take?"

"Normally, it would take a hundred years for you two to complete the tempering." said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"What? A hundred years? Senior, you must be joking, right?" Chu Lingxi was immediately alarmed upon hearing those words.

"This old man is not lying. It's a hundred years." said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"If it's a hundred years, I will be able to increase my cultivation by many levels training on my own. How could I waste time in a place like this?" Chu Lingxi started to panic.

It was not only Chu Lingxi, Chu Feng was also slightly panicked.

A hundred years was indeed too long.

Furthermore, this was only the first step to fusing with Divine Power.

If this was the first step, it meant that there were other steps after this.

If all the steps were added, how extremely long would it possibly be?

Not even Chu Feng was willing to spend so much time just to obtain Divine Power.

Thus, Chu Feng asked. "Senior, you said that it would take at least a hundred years? Is there any other way to cut down on the time?"

"Boy, you've asked the right question. Normally, it will indeed take a hundred years. However, this holy water of mine is no ordinary holy water. It is something that I meticulously created. Using this holy water to temper one's body, you'll only need ten years."

"Whilst the two of you are tempering your bodies, this old man will use a spirit formation to assist in speeding up the process. Thus, if it's for the two of you, you'll only need one year."

"Of course, if you two are sufficiently talented and are able to properly draw the holy water into your body, you will be able to cut down on the time. It might even be possible for you two to finish the tempering process in three months." said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Hearing those words, Chu Lingxi heaved a sigh of relief. "Senior, and you said you're not joking around. You nearly scared me to death earlier."

"This old man said that it would normally take a hundred years. However, I just so happen to be very amazing. With my help, the process shouldn't take that long." the Ox-nosed Old Daoist proclaimed proudly.

Chapter 3724 - Chu Lingxi Giving Up

"Senior, can we stop in the middle of the tempering process?" The reason why Chu Feng asked this was because his battle against Linghu Hongfei was in less than three months' time.

Thus, Chu Feng did not have that much time to spend there. He could not continue with the tempering process nonstop.

"It's best to not stop midway. If you do that, it'll end up affecting you."

"Of course, if you insist on stopping midway, that's not impossible either."

“With this old man here, even if there’s some issues, I will be able to fix them for you two,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said as he patted his chest.

“I’ll have to trouble senior then.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng closed his eyes and began to focus wholly on tempering his body.

Chu Lingxi also did the same.

After the two of them began to temper their bodies, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist also sat down cross-legged. Spirit power began to emit from his body. His spirit power enveloped Chu Feng and Chu Lingxi.

Chu Feng was able to sense that the black liquid indeed changed once the Ox-nosed Old Daoist released his spirit power to envelop them. The speed at which it began assimilating with Chu Feng increased rapidly. Furthermore, the process of assimilation was very smooth.

Chu Feng’s body was rapidly being transformed.

Even though this was not an increase in cultivation, and Chu Feng was unable to sense any benefits from the assimilation of the black liquid, he was able to clearly sense his body changing.

And that was still not the most important aspect. Most importantly, Chu Feng discovered that the spirit power emitted by the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was no ordinary spirit power.

This sort of spirit power would end up exhausting and leaving behind detrimental effects to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

It could be said that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was causing harm to himself to increase Chu Feng and Chu Lingxi’s tempering speed.

Although this sort of exhaustion was not extremely serious, he would end up paying quite considerably should he maintain it for an extended period of time.

“Senior, is this really fine?” asked Chu Feng.

“Focus on assimilating the power of the holy water, do not be distracted.” urged the Ox-noed Old Daoist.

“But...”

“There’s no but. Do not waste this old man’s power.” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. His tone was even slightly angry.

Likely, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist knew what Chu Feng was planning to say.

With that being the case, Chu Feng said no more, and began to wholly focus on comprehending and assimilating with the power of the black liquid.

.....

Normally, tempering one’s body in such a manner would take at least three months.

However, Chu Feng only used thirty days to complete the tempering process.

After he finished the first step, Chu Feng began the second step.

The second step was much more difficult than the first step.

It could even be said that the second step was very painful.

The reason for that was because for the second step... Chu Feng needed to forcibly create a separate space in his soul.

He must repeatedly tear open his own soul and accurately establish an isolated space. Not even the slightest mistake could be allowed.

It was akin to a sculptor seeking to carve a perfect piece of art.

However, the work of art was unable to sense pain. Chu Feng, on the other hand, was capable of sensing pain.

Chu Feng was both the sculptor and the piece of art.

He must make himself perfect. However, in the process of doing so, he would bring forth great pain upon himself.

Furthermore, this could only be accomplished by Chu Feng. No one would be able to help him.

As such, whenever Chu Feng tore open his soul, he would feel great pain. The entire process was very difficult to accomplish.

However, for the sake of obtaining greater strength, for the sake of giving new life to the Four Symbols Sacred Beasts, Chu Feng stubbornly clenched his teeth and persisted through the pain.

After forty-five days had passed from the day they began, Chu Lingxi also completed the first step.

As the second step was conducted in another palace hall, Chu Feng and Chu Lingxi had been separated for fifteen days.

Chu Feng did not know that Chu Lingxi had successfully completed the first step.

He was still completely focused on establishing a space in his soul.

Screams, anguished wailing and all sorts of miserable sounds were echoing through the palace hall nonstop.

It sounded like a place of torture.

It seemed like criminals were being tortured in the palace hall.

Indeed, someone was being tortured. However, the person that was being tortured was not a criminal. Instead, Chu Feng was torturing himself.

Chu Feng's willpower was very strong. Whenever he began tearing open a space in his soul, he would continue until he could not withstand the pain anymore.

The current Chu Feng was completely drenched in ice-cold sweat. There was so much sweat that it seemed like he'd been rained upon by a torrential rain.

Chu Feng was deathly pale. The rims of his eyes were completely black, and his lips were purple. Even his body was involuntarily shivering.

“Huu~~~”

After stopping, Chu Feng heaved a long sigh of relief.

The process was simply unbearable. Even someone with such strong willpower like Chu Feng had reached his limit.

Upon reaching his limit, he had to quickly recuperate. Only when his body had returned to its optimal condition would he continue.

“Chu Feng, why are you doing all this?”

Suddenly, a voice sounded from the palace hall.

Chu Feng looked to the voice, and discovered that Chu Lingxi was actually standing in the palace hall.

At that moment, Chu Lingxi was standing in the palace hall nearby and looking at Chu Feng. There was an expression of utter pain on her face.

“Lingxi, you’ve also completed the tempering process?” Seeing Chu Lingxi, Chu Feng revealed a look of joy.

“That’s right. However, I’m planning to give up.” said Chu Lingxi.

“Give up? Why? Ordinary people needed a hundred years to complete the tempering process. Even the fastest would take three months. Yet you, it only took you forty-five days, no?”

“Lingxi, you’ve already proved your talent. As long as you persist, you will definitely succeed.” Chu Feng immediately spoke to dissuade Chu Lingxi from giving up.

“Chu Feng, do you really believe him?”

“My mother and Grandmaster Liangqiu have already told me that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist is a scam.”

“After personally experiencing it myself, I also feel that his method is unreliable.”

“Chu Feng, you should also give up. My mother and Grandmaster Liangqiu wouldn’t possibly lie to you.”

“While that tempering process is still fine, what was it that you experienced just then? You actually really believe in his words, and are damaging your own soul?”

“Have you never suspected him? Do you not think that he’s deceiving you?”

Chu Lingxi’s eyes were already moist when she asked those words. She was truly feeling pained for Chu Feng.

“Lingxi, the person who wanted me to find Senior Daoist is actually my father.” said Chu Feng.

“Senior Chu Xuanyuan?” Chu Lingxi’s expression changed upon hearing those words.

“That’s right. My father said that Senior Daoist was capable of helping me fuse with my Divine Power. My father wouldn’t possibly lie to me ” said Chu Feng.

“But, my mother wouldn’t possible lie to you either. Grandmaster Liangqiu wouldn’t possibly lie to you either.”

“Forget about it. Since you’re so determined to continue, there’s nothing that I can do. After all, you will definitely believe Senior Chu Xuanyuan’s words without any doubt. I also do not wish to call him into question.”

“That being said, regardless of whether or not the Ox-nosed Old Daoist really has the ability to assimilate Divine Power into one’s body or not, I do not wish to continue.”

“I’ve decided to give up. It is impossible for me to torture myself the way you’re torturing yourself. Thus, you don’t have to try to persuade me.” Chu Lingxi said to Chu Feng.

Chapter 3725 - Cancellation Of The Battle Appointment?

“Okay then.” Seeing that Chu Lingxi had made her decision, Chu Feng sighed, but did not attempt to persuade her anymore.

After all, everyone had their own opinion. Chu Feng decided to respect Chu Lingxi’s decision.

“Chu Feng, have you managed to grasp the Fire Qilin Talisman that my mother gave you?” asked Chu Lingxi.

“Not yet.” replied Chu Feng.

“Rather than wasting time here, it’s better that you quickly grasp the Fire Qilin Talisman.” Chu Lingxi spoke these words with a feeling of disappointment in addition to the feeling of pain she had for Chu Feng.

“I will make sure to grasp it.” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“That said, it doesn’t really matter. After all... the battle appointment between you and Linghu Hongfei has been canceled.” said Chu Lingxi.

“Canceled?” Chu Feng felt rather surprised to hear that. He hurriedly asked, “Lingxi, what happened?”

“Grandmaster Liangqiu received news. If you’re curious, you can go ask them.” As Chu Lingxi spoke, she began to fly out the palace hall.

Chu Feng hurriedly followed after her and arrived at the palace that Grandmaster Liangqiu, Gu Mingyuan and Chu Xuanzhengfa were staying in.

“Chu Feng, you... why are you in such poor health?”

Grandmaster Liangqiu and Gu Mingyuan were immediately worried upon seeing the current Chu Feng.

They had not been able to see him since he began the process of assimilating with his Divine Power. They did not know how he was doing.

To suddenly see Chu Feng in such poor health, they would naturally feel worried.

“Don’t worry, he did that to himself. That’s the price he has to pay in order to obtain Divine Power.” Chu Lingxi explained. She didn’t look very happy, and she spoke with a slightly complaining tone.

She firmly believe that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was a scam. Thus, she truly did not wish for Chu Feng to continue.

Yet, Chu Feng insisted on continuing. Because of that, she was displeased.

“Chu Feng, maybe it’s better that you forget about it. This old man has known that Ox-nose longer than you. He is truly unreliable,” Grandmaster Liangqiu spoke with a look of pain on his face.

“Chu Feng, Grandmaster Liangqiu wouldn’t lie to you. That Ox-nose is extremely notorious to begin with. Besides you, likely no one in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield would believe him.”

Gu Mingyuan also had a look of pain.

Chu Feng did not answer them. He merely smiled.

However, his smile answered them.

Chu Feng was still planning to persist.

Seeing Chu Feng like that, they no longer attempted to persuade him. Most importantly, they did not want to make things awkward for Chu Feng.

“Grandmaster Liangqiu, I’ve heard that Linghu Hongfei has canceled his appointment to fight me? What’s going on?” asked Chu Feng.

“I also do not know what exactly happened. It is merely news that I received from Chengfeng. It stated that Linghu Hongfei has canceled the battle appointment.”

“Likely, some sort of trouble has occurred in the battle between the Linghu Heavenly Clan and the Starfield Master Realm.”

“After all, their opponent is the Wuming Clan that has ruled over the Ancestral Martial Starfield for many years,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“Is that so?” Chu Feng felt Grandmaster Liangqiu’s words to be very reasonable.

“However, this is a good thing. You will be able to set yourself at ease and train here for a while. After all, you believe that Ox-nose.” Grandmaster Liangqiu said with a faint smile.

“The battle appointment is not something that he can cancel just because he wants to. Even if he cancels the battle, what he has done to Lingxi cannot be written off with a single stroke. Sooner or later, I will find him to settle the debt.” said Chu Feng.

“It’s better that I settle my business myself. I will personally defeat him.” said Chu Lingxi.

“In that case, I will defeat him again after you’ve defeated him.” said Chu Feng. n.)o./V-)e-.1.-b--1.(n

“If I defeat him, I will directly kill him. You won’t have a chance to defeat him,” said Chu Lingxi.

“That’s fine. As long as you can obtain your revenge.” Chu Feng said with a faint smile.

“Chu Feng, I’m planning to leave with Lingxi. We will be returning to our Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan.” said Gu Mingyuan.

Following her, Chu Xuanzhengfa said, “Chu Feng, I am also going to return.”

“That’s fine,” Chu Feng nodded. He did not ask too much about things.

Chu Feng felt that they might not necessarily have urgent matters that they must leave for. Likely, they simply did not wish to continue to stay.

After all, they deeply detested the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

That said, Chu Feng actually did not want them to stay either. Thus, them leaving would suit him.

“Chu Feng, before leaving, I have something that I must tell you. Let us talk in private,” Gu Mingyuan said all of a sudden.

“Okay.” Chu Feng hurriedly answered.

Then, Gu Mingyuan brought Chu Feng to a quiet place.

Only Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan were there.

“Chu Feng, I know that you’re very stubborn. However, I still wish to urge you.”

“If, after seventy-nine days have passed...”

Before Gu Mingyuan could finish, Chu Feng interrupted, “Senior, if you want to tell me to give up on saving Senior Zhu, please don’t.”

“Chu Feng, I merely do not wish for you to throw your life away in vain. If even that Senior Zhu is unable to safely return from the Mirror Core, how could you possibly save him?” said Gu Mingyuan.

“Senior, one must do what one believes to be correct. Otherwise, one’s life would have no purpose, and it would be better to be dead.”

“If I am to give up on Senior Zhu, I, Chu Feng, will never be able to be at ease for the rest of my life.”

“Thus, senior, please don’t attempt to persuade me. Instead, allow me to persuade you.” said Chu Feng.

“Persuade me?” Gu Mingyuan was slightly startled upon hearing those words. She was confused by what Chu Feng wanted to persuade her of.

“Senior, if I guess correctly, you must have feelings for senior Chu Xuanzhengfa, no?”

“Senior, you don’t have to try to deny it. I saw your feelings for him back then.” said Chu Feng.

“It’s better that you don’t involve yourself in the matters of adults,” said Gu Mingyuan.

“Senior, you clearly like senior Chu Xuanzhengfa. Why do you treat him so coldly?” asked Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, while affection and feelings exist in this world, reality is, nevertheless, unavoidable.”

“Since my youth, I’ve wanted to find a powerful cultivator to protect me.”

“I’ve made a target that my husband must be stronger than me. Otherwise, I would rather not be married.”

“I know that Lingxi has told you about the matter between Chu Xuanzhengfa and I.”

“I will not conceal this matter from you. Back then, Chu Xuanzhengfa and I were the only two people in that ancient formation.”

“I had attempted to forcibly exit that ancient formation multiple times. During all those times, he saved me repeatedly. On several occasions, he nearly lost his life for the sake of saving mine.”

“Truth be told, under that sort of special circumstance, I indeed ended up falling for him back then.”

“I’ve even thought about marrying him just like that.”

“That is also how Lingxi came to be.”

“However, after we left the ancient formation and returned to the Ancestral Martial Starfield, after everything returned to normal, I realized that I was still unable to accept him.”

“In such a cruel martial cultivation world, one will only possess the right to speak should one possess strength.”

“Thus, I am unable to accept a man who’s weaker than myself.” said Gu Mingyuan.

Chapter 3726 - The Injured Old Daoist

“But senior, you clearly like and have feelings for senior Chu Xuanzhengfa,” said Chu Feng.

“So what if I do? It is one thing to like someone and have feelings for them, but it’s another thing to acknowledge and approve of that person.”

“I, Gu Mingyuan, would rather marry someone that I acknowledge than marry someone weaker than me that I like and have feelings for.” said Gu Mingyuan.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng no longer knew how to persuade Gu Mingyuan. He was able to tell that she was extremely determined.

Furthermore, he knew that this was a matter between Gu Mingyuan and Chu Xuanzhengfa, While he could offer simple words of persuasion, he was unqualified to meddle in their business.

Thus, in an apologetic manner, Chu Feng said, “Senior, this junior was rude. I shouldn’t have said these things to senior.”

“It’s alright. I know that you’re only thinking for our and Lingxi’s sake.”

“That said, things like affection and feelings are truly not something that one can force one’s way with.”

“Take your father for example...”

Suddenly, Gu Mingyuan stopped talking. She forced a smile and shook her head.

Seeing that, Chu Feng realized something...

It was no wonder Gu Mingyuan was so nice to him. It seemed like she had special feelings for his father, even though it seemed like they did not have a close relationship at all.

Suddenly, Gu Mingyuan said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, promise me this. If something is to happen to me, you must protect Lingxi.”

“Senior, please rest assured. I will protect Lingxi with my life.” said Chu Feng.

“I am very assured. I’ve already seen you do it.” Gu Mingyuan smiled in a very gratified manner.

.....

Then, Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan chatted a bit more. However, they did not chat for too long, because it seemed like Gu Mingyuan was really in a rush to leave.

When Chu Lingxi, Gu Mingyuan and Chu Xuanzhengfa left, Chu Feng naturally had to see them off.

Even though he could not see them all the way to the teleportation formation, he needed to at least see them off with his eyes.

“Chu Lingxi!!!”

However, at the moment when Chu Lingxi and the others were about to leave, a voice sounded from within the palace that Chu Feng was training in.

That voice belonged to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“I will give you one final chance, are you really going to give up?”

“If you plan to give up, do not think of obtaining this old man’s help again for the rest of your life. Likewise, do not think about obtaining Divine Power for the rest of your life.”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s voice sounded again. He knew that Chu Lingxi was planning to leave. Thus, the tone of his voice was slightly angry.

n@V E)l -In

Hearing the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s voice, Chu Feng felt a slight hint of sadness.

Although the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was someone who laughed and joked around a lot, someone who did not resemble a senior at all. Chu Feng knew very well that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had been helping them in the past month and a half.

Chu Feng knew that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist thought very highly of Chu Lingxi. The reason why he asked her those questions was because he did not want her to leave.

Unfortunately, Chu Lingxi... was determined to leave.

“Senior, thank you for looking after me. Also, thank you for bringing my father and Chu Feng out from the Gate of Death. However, in regards to becoming a Divine Body, I am truly incapable of enjoying it. Senior, farewell.” Chu Lingxi replied loudly.

Hearing those words, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s voice did not sound again.

With that, Chu Lingxi, Gu Mingyuan and Chu Xuanzhengfa left.

Grandmaster Liangqiu, on the other hand, stayed.

After seeing Chu Lingxi and the others off. Chu Feng hurriedly returned to the palace where the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was.

The most external palace hall inside the palace was the location where Chu Feng trained.

As for the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, he had been in the inner hall the entire time.

Normally, unless the Ox-nosed Old Daoist called for him, Chu Feng would not take the initiative to set foot into the inner hall.

However, this time around, Chu Feng directly pushed through the door and entered the inner hall.

After pushing open the inner hall's doors, he discovered the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. However, the instant he saw the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, he was immediately stunned.

“Senior, you...”

At that moment, Chu Feng had a very pained expression in his eyes.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist was currently naked and sitting cross-legged in a tub.

That tub was created with a spirit formation. It was a healing formation.

Chu Feng was able to hear from the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's voice earlier that he was slightly weak.

Because of that, Chu Feng was worried about him, and decided to directly enter the inner hall.

And now, the situation of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was much more severe than he had imagined.

“Why did you come in here?” The Ox-nosed Old Daoist was slightly displeased to see Chu Feng in the inner hall.

“Senior, please don't say anything for now.” Chu Feng ignored his displeasure and directly arrived before him. He released his spirit power to help the Ox-nosed Old Daoist treat his injuries.

Chu Feng was feeling very complicated. A look of guilt and shame filled his face.

Although the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had an ugly appearance and was very old, he was someone who spoke with great confidence, great strength and a lot of laughter.

However, the current Ox-nosed Old Daoist was extremely weak.

Chu Feng knew that the reason why the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was so weak was due to him helping him and Chu Lingxi in the tempering of their bodies.

Chu Feng had realized from the very start that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist would wear out his body by helping them increase the speed of their tempering process.

However, it was only after seeing the Ox-nosed Old Daoist that Chu Feng discovered that the exhaustion to his body was much more severe than he had imagined.

Chu Lingxi had wrongly blamed the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist had most definitely not deceived them. Otherwise, there would be no reason for him to become like that by helping them.

Whilst treating the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, Chu Feng was unable to take his gaze off his body.

Although the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was extremely weak, the wounds that covered his body were even more shocking to the eyes.

Those were old wounds. His wounds covered his entire body. It seemed like the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's body was once shattered to pieces, and then gradually put back together.

Those wounds were no ordinary wounds. Otherwise, it would be impossible for them to not heal, for them to remain so clear and vivid.

Chu Feng suspected that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist must've been seriously injured in the past.

His injuries must have been extremely destructive. Even though the wounds were old, Chu Feng was able to imagine what the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had suffered back then.

In fact, Chu Feng even felt that it was a miracle that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was still alive.

Perhaps... that was what it truly meant to survive by the skin of one's teeth.

Chapter 3727 - Exalted Taboo Martial Skill

“Chu Feng, I’m grateful for your kind intentions.”

“However, you’re unable to help me. You should instead quickly nurse yourself back to health, and continue establishing a space in your soul,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Senior, I’m in no rush. Please nurse your health first. I will continue with establishing a space in my soul after you’re healthy again,” said Chu Feng.

“Are you certain that you’re in no rush?” asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Linghu Hongfei has already canceled his battle appointment against me. With that, I have no need to rush. I will go and find him to avenge Lingxi after I have fused with my Divine Power,” said Chu Feng.

“Boy, you were deceived by them,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Deceived?”

“Senior, what do you mean by that?”

Chu Feng’s gaze immediately changed upon hearing those words.

“This old man has a rough idea of your current situation.”

“Linghu Hongfei has not canceled the appointment against you in three months.”

“That appointment is still valid.”

“Not only that, but the overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield has already changed hands. Currently, the overlord is none other than the Linghu Heavenly Clan,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“The Wuming Clan has been defeated by the Linghu Heavenly Clan?” A shocked expression appeared in Chu Feng’s eyes.

“Mn. Apart from a small amount of experts that managed to flee, the rest of the Wuming Clan have all been killed,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“The Linghu Heavenly Clan actually has such strength?”

Chu Feng felt even more astonished.

Although he knew that the Linghu Heavenly Clan must possess a certain amount of strength, seeing that they dared to wage war against the Wuming Clan, he did not expect the war for the Ancestral Martial Starfield's overlord status to end so quickly.

Evidently, the Linghu Heavenly Clan was much more powerful than he had imagined.

"But, why would they deceive me?"

"Could it be that Lingxi wants to take on Linghu Hongfei by herself?" asked Chu Feng.

"That shouldn't be it. They're afraid that you'll be in danger."

"The reason for that is because they actually received two pieces of information."

"Apart from the information of the Linghu Heavenly Clan obtaining the Starfield Master Realm's overlord status, the other piece of information was related to you and Linghu Hongfei," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"Senior, exactly what is that second piece of information?" asked Chu Feng.

"You should know about Exalted Heavenly Fate, right? I've heard that he was the one who prophesied the predestined battle between you and Linghu Hongfei," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"Thus, the second piece of information is related to Exalted Heavenly Fate?" asked Chu Feng.

"Correct. Exalted Heavenly Fate had made another prophecy."

"This time around, he prophesied the outcome of the battle between you and Linghu Hongfei," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's gaze turned serious. He asked, "What is the outcome?"

"You will die," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"Die?" Chu Feng's heart tensed up upon hearing those words.

“That’s right. Not only will you be defeated in the battle, but you will also be killed.”

“Exalted Heavenly Fate’s prophecies all come to fruition. All these years, never has he made a mistake in his prophecy.”

“It is precisely because of that prophecy that Chu Lingxi, Gu Mingyuan, Chu Xuanzhengfa and even Grandmaster Liangqiu decide to join hands in deceiving you.”

“Did you notice that there was spirit power flowing throughout all of their bodies? That was Grandmaster Liangqiu’s trick.”

“He knows that you’re a Saint-cloak World Spiritist and possesses sharp perception. Fearing that Chu Lingxi and the others’ lies would be detected by you, he deliberately set up a spirit formation on their bodies so that they could deceive you.”

“That said, they are doing all this for your sake.”

“However, I feel that you should know the truth,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Thank you for telling me the truth, senior.”

At that moment, Chu Feng felt truly grateful towards the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Although Chu Lingxi and others had deceived him for his own good, he knew what they would be confronted with.

They would no longer simply be facing the Linghu Heavenly Clan. Instead, they would be facing the strongest power in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

As for Chu Lingxi’s opponent, he was someone that even Exalted Heavenly Fate prophesied that Chu Feng could not defeat.

It was impossible for Chu Feng to allow Chu Lingxi and the Chu Heavenly Clansmen to confront all of that.

Even though he knew that the battle was extremely dangerous, he still had to go.

“Thus, you’ve decided to keep the appointment?” asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Mn.” Chu Feng nodded.

“You’re still planning to go even though you know that you’ll die?” asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Die? How could one be so certain that I’ll die?” asked Chu Feng.

“Exalted Heavenly Fate’s prophecies have never been wrong,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“In that case, it would mean that his prophecy will be wrong for the first time.”

“I, Chu Feng, do not even care about my life. Thus, how could I care about a mere prophecy from that Exalted Heavenly Fate?” A cold smile appeared on Chu Feng’s face.

“Very well. Boy, you have courage.”

“Take out your Fire Qilin Talisman. This old man will help you fuse with it.”

As the Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke, he suddenly stood up, put on his clothes and extended his hand towards Chu Feng.

“Senior, your injuries are still...” Chu Feng wanted to refuse. After all, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was still extremely weak.

“Injuries? You’ve seen the injuries on my body. Compared to those injuries, my current injuries are nothing.”

“Chu Feng, you are not only carrying your own reputation right now. You are also carrying the reputation of your father and your grandfather.”

“Thus, you can refuse to go to keep the appointment. But, if you are to go, you must return from the battle victorious, and show the people of the world your talents and capability.”

“If you’re a man, do not act so long-winded. Hand me that Fire Qilin Talisman,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist urged Chu Feng.

Seeing that he was unable to make the Ox-nosed Old Daoist change his mind, Chu Feng took out the Fire Qilin Talisman.

That said, he did not only take out the Fire Qilin Talisman. He also took out a scroll.

“Senior, you possess remarkable abilities. Why don’t you help me have a look at this and determine what the contents of this scroll are?” said Chu Feng.

That scroll was something that his father had brought back from the Greenfield Upper Realm’s Demon Prison Valley.

As for the Demon Prison Valley, it was once an Eccentric’s Remnant of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Chu Feng had tried opening the scroll before. However, he was simply unable to open it.

That said, Chu Feng felt that the scroll was an extraordinary item.

Originally, Chu Feng was planning to rely on himself to open the scroll. After all, it was something from his father. He wanted to use his own power to open it.

However, the current situation looked extremely bad. Although Chu Feng had said he was not afraid of the Linghu Heavenly Clan, he didn’t know if he would be able to return from this battle alive.

Because of that, Chu Feng wanted to draw support from the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and open the scroll.

“Allow this old man to have a look.”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist took the scroll from Chu Feng. After inspecting it, he shook his head.

“If this old man has guessed correctly, within this scroll should be an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill!!!” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Chapter 3728 - Fusing With The Fire Qilin Talisman

“Exalted Taboo Martial Skill?” The expression in Chu Feng’s eyes changed upon hearing those words.

As a martial cultivator, Chu Feng had trained in many different martial skills. For example, he had trained in Imperial Taboo Martial Skills and Immortal Taboo Martial Skills.

Thus, merely by hearing its name, Chu Feng knew what an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill was.

It was obvious that the scroll contained a martial skill that not even Exalted-level experts could manage.

It was a martial skill that surpassed both Immortal Taboo Martial Skills and Immortal Techniques.

To the current Chu Feng, that was something that would greatly empower him.

Because of that, Chu Feng became extremely excited.

“That should be an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill. In the past, this old man obtained a similar scroll.”

“As for that scroll, what it contained was none other than an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill.”

“That being said, judging from the scroll, it seems like your Exalted Taboo Martial Skill is even more powerful than that one.”

“Thus, this old man is unable to open it either.”

“That being said, Chu Feng, this old man is capable of giving you one that you can learn.”

As the Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke, he took out a white scroll from his Cosmos Sack and handed it to Chu Feng.

That scroll was extremely small -- only the size of a fingernail. It was completely white, and emitting a glimmer. It seemed like it was made of white jade.

Although it was extremely small, it was also extremely exquisite. Merely by looking at it with his naked eye, Chu Feng knew that it contained something extraordinary.

Furthermore, five words were carved onto the scroll - Exalted Taboo: Heavenly Fate Seal!!!

If the scroll that his father left might be an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill, then the scroll that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist gave Chu Feng was truly an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill.

“Senior, this is too precious. This junior...”

Chu Feng found it difficult to accept. However, before he could finish his words, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist pointed with his finger, and the Exalted Taboo: Heavenly Fate Seal turned into a ray of light that shot into Chu Feng’s forehead.

In the next instant, the cultivation method for the Exalted Taboo: Heavenly Fate Seal had completely entered Chu Feng’s brain.

However, that was not what was important. What was important was that another power had appeared in Chu Feng’s body.

It was the power of the Exalted Taboo: Heavenly Fate Seal.

In order to grasp the Exalted Taboo: Heavenly Fate Seal, one must train around that power.

If he didn’t possess that power, even if Chu Feng knew the method to cultivate the Exalted Taboo: Heavenly Fate Seal, he would not be able to gain mastery over it.

In other words, the Exalted Taboo: Heavenly Fate Seal could only be learned by Chu Feng.

“Senior, how... am I supposed to thank you for this?”

Chu Feng had not expected the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, someone who seemed like an unscrupulous businessman, to be willing to help him like that.

Without even needing to think about it, Chu Feng knew that Exalted Taboo Martial Skills were extremely precious.

However, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist actually gave such a precious item to Chu Feng like that.

“It’s merely an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill. Compared to you helping me obtain the Battle God’s Halberd, it is nothing at all. Besides, that is only a rank one Exalted Taboo,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Rank one Exalted Taboo?”

“Senior, Exalted Taboos differ by strength?” Chu Feng asked in a very curious manner.

Chu Feng had trained in Immortal Taboo Martial Skills before. Although Immortal Taboo Martial Skills also differed by strength, they were not categorized into different categories according to their power.

However, Immortal Techniques had clear-cut categorizations.

And, judging from the words spoken by the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, Exalted Taboo Martial Skills also possessed such categorizations.

“Of course. You should know a bit about Immortal Techniques, right?”

“True Immortals are capable of learning rank one to rank three Immortal Techniques.”

“Heavenly Immortals are capable of learning rank four to rank six Immortal Techniques.”

“As for rank seven to rank nine Immortal Techniques, only Martial Immortals are capable of learning them.”

“Upon reaching the Exalted realm, there is no such thing as Exalted Techniques. Thus, the only thing one can learn are Exalted Taboo Martial Skills.”

“Like Immortal Techniques, Exalted Taboo Martial Skills are also divided into nine ranks,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Because of that, rank one to rank three Exalted Taboos can be learned by Exalted, rank four to six Exalted Taboos can be learned by Utmost Exalted, and rank seven to nine Exalted Taboos are only able to be trained by Martial Exalted?” asked Chu Feng.

“That’s precisely it. However, the Ancestral Martial Starfield is simply too destitute of resources. Even rank one Exalted Taboos are extremely scarce

here. Only the major powers possess rank one Exalted Taboos. As for rank two Exalted Taboos, I've never seen anyone use one before."

"Because of that, Exalted Taboos are indeed very precious in the Ancestral Martial Starfield."

"That said, they are only precious in the Ancestral Martial Starfield."

"For the powerful starfields of the Holy Light Galaxy, Exalted Taboo Martial Skills are not at all precious."

"That being said, Exalted Taboos are very difficult to learn. Although it is theorized that rank one to rank three Exalted Taboos can be learned by Exalted-level cultivators, it is actually extremely amazing if an Exalted-level cultivator is able to learn a rank one Exalted Taboo."

"As for being able to learn a rank two Exalted Taboo, they number in the very few."

"As for rank three Exalted Taboos, I've never seen anyone able to learn that at the Exalted realm. In fact, it is quite difficult for even Utmost Exalted-level cultivators to learn them."

"Furthermore, Exalted Taboo Martial Skills are different from other martial techniques."

"Not only is one capable of determining how powerful they are by its aura, but one can also determine the rank of the Exalted Taboo from its color," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"Senior, how does one determine the Exalted Taboos' ranks?" asked Chu Feng.

"It's very simple. Exalted Taboos are different from other martial techniques in that they are not that showy.

"Exalted Taboo martial Skills are very clear-cut. Whilst the appearance of the various Exalted Taboos can take various forms, their colors are fixed."

"From weak to strong, they are respectively white, gray, silver, cyan, blue, purple, red, black and gold, these nine colors," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng learned that the ranks of Exalted Taboo Martial Skills could be determined by their color.

A rank one Exalted Taboo would be white.

Rank two was gray.

Rank three was silver.

Rank four was cyan.

Rank five was blue.

Rank six was purple.

Rank seven was red.

Rank eight was black.

And rank nine was gold.

At that moment, Chu Feng was unable to keep himself from looking at the scroll left by his father.

That scroll was silver.

“Senior, could it be that the Exalted Taboo Martial Skill contained inside this scroll is a rank three Exalted Taboo?” asked Chu Feng.

“That’s not for certain,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist smiled. Then, he said, to Chu Feng, “It would do now that you’ve gained a rough understanding of Exalted Taboos. As for this Exalted Taboo this old man has given you, you can take your time learning it.”

“Right now... this old man will help you fuse with this Fire Qilin Talisman.”

“Snap~~~”

After saying those words, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist broke the jade pendant in his hand.

Then, he soared into the sky.

“Rooooarr~”

Suddenly, a furious roar was heard.

A huge monster appeared in the palace hall, flying above.

It was a qilin composed of red gaseous flames!!!

That fire qilin was extremely ferocious. It was showing overwhelming hostility towards Chu Feng.

However, the fire qilin was fixed in midair. It was the Ox-nosed Old Daoist; he had restricted its movements.

“Chu Feng, if this old man is to help you, you will be able to quickly obtain the power of this Fire Qilin Talisman.”

“However, this process will be a little painful. You must prepare yourself,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said to Chu Feng.

“Senior, please go ahead.”

Chu Feng pulled open his clothes and revealed his naked chest.

Although Chu Feng had never attempted to fuse with the Fire Qilin Talisman before, he knew the method to do so.

The method was to release the Fire Qilin from the Fire Qilin Talisman and then assimilate it into one’s chest.

“Here I go!!!”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist crossed his hands and pointed toward Chu Feng’s chest. Then, he shouted, “Merge!!!”

In the next moment, the Fire Qilin turned into a fiery ray of light that shot straight towards Chu Feng’s chest!!!

Chapter 3729 - Mirror Core

With the help of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, Chu Feng managed to successfully fuse with the Fire Qilin Talisman.

Through the power of the Fire Qilin Talisman, Chu Feng was able to increase his cultivation by a level.

Although this was only effective whilst his cultivation was still that of an Exalted, this served as an enormous help to Chu Feng.

After helping Chu Feng fuse with the Fire Qilin Talisman, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist continued to treat his injuries.

As for Chu Feng, he continued to establish a space in his soul so that he could fuse with his Divine Power.

Since Chu Feng began the preparation of fusing with his Divine Power, seventy-eight days had passed.

On that day, Chu Feng had finally succeeded. He had managed to establish a new space in his soul.

“Senior, what is this junior supposed to do for the third step?”

Chu Feng and the Ox-nosed Old Daoist were both standing and facing each other in the palace hall.

After recuperating for the past days, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had completely recovered.

As for Chu Feng, although he was very weak, he had a look of excitement all across his face.

Having finished the second step, he was finally able to start on the third step.

Although he didn't know what the third step would be, he had learned from the Ox-nosed Old Daoist that fusing with a Divine Power had a total of four steps.

That was the reason why Chu Feng was so excited. After all, he was getting closer and closer to fusing with the Four Symbols Divine Power.

“Chu Feng, your body is now very well-prepared.”

“However, you need to know that Divine Power is a power that conflicts with your Heavenly Bloodline.”

“Thus, if you want to fuse with your Divine Power, you must create a new dantian.” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Create a dantian?”

“Senior, is the space established in my soul for containing that new dantian?” asked Chu Feng.

“Precisely.”

“The method to create a new dantian is recorded here. Have a look yourself.”

As the Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke, he tossed a scroll to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng caught the scroll and immediately opened it.

However, after reading it, Chu Feng’s shining eyes immediately dimmed.

If Chu Feng’s dantian was destroyed, he would be able to restore it instantly.

Even if the dantian of his soul was damaged, he would still be able to heal it.

However, if he must construct a new dantian, and one that could fuse perfectly with his soul, it would be a very difficult task.

The difficult part would be creating the dantian.

Chu Feng must use his own soul to create the second dantian.

However, if Chu Feng wanted to create a dantian, he would not only need to focus, but he would also have to spend a long period of time.

According to the scroll, even if Chu Feng didn’t do anything else, even if he didn’t eat or sleep and focused on creating a dantian the entire time, it would still take him at least three hundred years.

To Chu Feng, three hundred years would be simply too long.

Besides, it was simply impossible for him to spend three hundred years creating a dantian and do nothing else.

“Senior, must it really take at least three hundred years?”

“Is there any other method?” Chu Feng asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“It will take at least three hundred years. There’s no shortcut.”

“That said, Chu Feng, the first, second and third steps are all only a matter of time. They are not hard at all for you.”

“Normally, the final step would be the hardest step.”

“When all the preparations are done, you must fuse with your Divine Power.”

“However, fusing with one’s Divine Power is the most difficult part. After all, it is no easy task to make a Divine Power recognize oneself.”

“That is, however, different for you. The Divine Power in your body has already recognized you. Thus, compared to others, the most difficult step is the easiest step for you.”

“Right now, you only needed to spend three hundred years to create a dantian.”

“Upon doing so, you’ll basically be able to fuse with your Divine Power and gain their power,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Chu Feng’s heart sunk upon hearing those words. He did not expect that he would still not be able to fuse with his Divine Power even after putting forth so much effort. Fusing with a Divine Power was much more difficult than he had imagined.

Chu Feng was not afraid of hardships. What he feared the most was spending a lot of time on something.

After all, he was different from other martial cultivators. He simply carried too many burdens on his shoulders. He simply had no time to waste.

Perhaps it was as Chu Lingxi had said. With the amount of time needed to fuse with a Divine Power, if Chu Feng was to spend that time training, who knew what his cultivation would increase to.

To spend all that time only to fuse with a Divine Power was evidently not worth it.

But, Chu Feng had promised the Four Symbols Sacred Beasts that he would turn them back into the Four Symbols Divine Power, and have them fight alongside him.

Thus, it was something that Chu Feng must do. However... it was also impossible for him to spend all his time on it.

Because of that, it became clear that it would be impossible for him to obtain the Four Symbols Divine Power in a short period of time.

“Senior, I have troubled you these past few days.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng bowed respectfully towards the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Even though he could not fuse with his Divine Power, Chu Feng firmly remembered the help the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had given him during this period of time.

Chu Feng was filled with gratefulness toward him.

“Boy, it’s strange for you to say something so emotional all of a sudden.”

“Tell this old man the truth, have you decided to save that old man trapped in the Mirror Core?” asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Judging from the timing of things, it was only half a day away from the seventy-ninth day limit set up by old man Zhu.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist knew that Chu Feng was going to set off to save him.

“Senior, if you were the one in danger right now, this junior would definitely come to your rescue too.”

“As for that senior Zhao, he has only fallen into such a dangerous place for the sake of helping this junior.” said Chu Feng.

“This old man has said everything that needs to be said. I know that I cannot persuade you. Since you insist on throwing away your life, you can go.”

“Just make sure to not blame this old man for not warning you if you really do die.”

“Now scram.”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist waved his hand with his back facing Chu Feng. He was telling Chu Feng to leave.

That said, his voice contained a slight amount of disappointment.

The reason for the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s disappointment was naturally because he had tried to persuade Chu Feng against saving old man Zhu multiple times. However, Chu Feng was unwilling to listen to him.

Seeing the Ox-nosed Old Daoist like that, Chu Feng wanted to say something. After all, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was only acting like that because he did not want him to throw away his life. He was considering Chu Feng’s good.

However, upon thinking a bit, Chu Feng did not know how to explain things.

Thus, Chu Feng merely bowed to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist again before turning around to leave.

After exiting the palace, Chu Feng found Grandmaster Liangqiu. Guided by Grandmaster Liangqiu, Chu Feng went straight for the depths of the Mirror Sea.

The Mirror Core was located at the deepest area of the Mirror Sea.

Not only must one keep diving downward, but one must also pass through the rock strata located on the seabed. One must pass through multiple layers of rock strata in order to reach the Mirror Core.

After a series of twists and turns, Chu Feng was finally able to see the so-called Mirror Core.

The Mirror Core resembled an enormous spirit formation gate floating in the boundless sea.

It was enormous, and covered an area of several tens of thousands of meters. It had an oval shape, and was slowly spinning and scattering light outward.

From a glance, it seemed like an empty space, and also seemed like an isolated world.

Most importantly, it had a certain amount of attractive force. The surrounding seawater was being sucked into the Mirror Core nonstop.

Neither Chu Feng nor Grandmaster Liangqiu dared to rashly approach the Mirror Core.

If they got too close to it, they would definitely be sucked into it.

If they were sucked into it, it would definitely be very difficult for them to escape from it.

In fact, not to mention entering the Mirror Core, merely at that depth, the pressure of the Mirror Sea was already extremely difficult to endure.

Grandmaster Liangqiu, who travelled there with Chu Feng, the rank one Utmost Exalted and Dragon Mark Saint-cloak World Spiritist, someone with far superior strength to Chu Feng in both martial cultivation and world spirit techniques, had a look of pain all over his face.

Even though he was enduring the pain and trying his best to conceal it, Chu Feng was able to tell that Grandmaster Liangqiu was unable to withstand the pressure at that depth.

From this, one could tell how dangerous of a place it was.

However, when compared to the Mirror Core, the danger of that place was simply unworthy of being mentioned.

Chu Feng knew that the Mirror Core, although beautiful, was an extremely dangerous place.

The reason for that was because its dangerous aura was fully emitted. Even from such a distance, Chu Feng was able to sense that dangerous aura.

The Mirror Core's gate seemed like a gate to hell. If one were to enter, one would have a ninety percent chance of death.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3730 - Strange Power - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3730 - Strange Power

Chapter 3730 - Strange Power

“Senior, perhaps... you should return to the surface,” Chu Feng said to Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“I am ashamed. It would appear that young friend Chu Feng has discovered that this old man is having difficulty staying here.” Grandmaster Liangqiu revealed an embarrassed smile.

He was indeed ashamed. Chu Feng’s cultivation was clearly far inferior to his own, yet he was having a much easier time compared to him.

Even though Chu Feng was also gritting his teeth in pain to endure the pressure of that place, the amount of pain he was enduring was much less.

Because of that, Grandmaster Liangqiu knew that even though his cultivation surpassed Chu Feng’s, his willpower was inferior to Chu Feng’s.

“Chu... Chu Feng, actually, even if you do not go down, no one will blame you for it.”

“I believe that not even brother Zhu would want you to throw your life away.” Grandmaster Liangqiu said to Chu Feng.

The more valiant he realized Chu Feng was, the less he wanted him to throw his life away like that.

After all, Grandmaster Liangqiu had high hopes for Chu Feng.

Grandmaster Liangqiu hoped that one day, Chu Feng would be able to demonstrate his extraordinary talent and skills in the Holy Light Galaxy.

Chu Feng would be representing their Ancestral Martial Starfield.

“Senior, please rest assured, I will definitely return alive.”

“After all, I need to quickly return to the Chu Heavenly Clan to fight Linghu Hongfei.” said Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you...”

Hearing those words, Grandmaster Liangqiu’s expression became complicated.

He had originally thought that they had managed to successfully deceive Chu Feng.

However, what Chu Feng had said, had made him realize that he had seen through their lies.

“In the end, we were unable to keep it hidden from you?”

Grandmaster Liangqiu became uneasy. After all, there was that prophecy from Exalted Heavenly Fate.

“Chu Feng, Exalted Heavenly Fate made the prophecy. If you are to fight Linghu Hongfei...”

“Senior, I already know that.”

“You don’t have to try to persuade me against it. It is my life, I will make my own choice.” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Grandmaster Liangqiu knew that Chu Feng was very stubborn. He also understood that Chu Feng had made his decision, and nothing he said would be able to change his mind.

“Senior, please wait for me outside. I will quickly bring senior Zhu back.”

“Woosh~~~”

After saying those words, a wave of water bloomed. Chu Feng had turned into a flash of light, and was shooting straight for the Mirror Core.

It was as Chu Feng had expected, when he approached the Mirror Core, an enormous suction immediately locked him in place.

At this moment, even if Chu Feng wanted to flee, he would not be able to do so.

After passing through the Mirror Core’s gate, Chu Feng arrived at an enormous vortex.

The vortex was sinking downwards nonstop. Although its speed was not very fast, Chu Feng was unable to oppose it. In that place, Chu Feng could only allow the vortex to carry him downward.

The Mirror Core was supposed to be the Mirror Sea's formation core. The destination of the vortex should lead to an enormous spirit formation.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng felt slightly uneasy.

Chu Feng was able to hear strange sounds coming from the bottomless abyss below him.

That seemed like the sound of fighting, the sound of roars, the sound of people, the sound of beasts, and even the sound of wind.

Chu Feng was simply unable to make out what the sound was. In fact, the sound was so faint that Chu Feng was uncertain if it was an illusion, or if it was real.

That being said, there was one thing that was certain. Chu Feng was feeling panicky, uneasy, jittery and even afraid.

Chu Feng was trying very hard to restrain his feelings. However, it seemed like his state of mind was being affected, as he was unable to control it.

As the sense of fear grew stronger and stronger, the complicated sound began to sound in his ears nonstop.

Chu Feng was no longer able to make out what that sound was. He was only feeling that things were very clamorous. When the sound entered his ears, he felt his head becoming chaotic as his emotions were repressed. He felt like he was on the verge of being driven insane. Even his consciousness was turning fuzzy.

"Damn it, what the hell is that sound?"

Chu Feng had realized that that place was much more dangerous than he had imagined.

The danger of that place was not out in the open. Instead, it was entering his body formlessly, catching him completely off-guard.

Chu Feng began to try his hardest to adjust his state of mind. He even went as far as to seal off his ears so that he would not be affected by the sound.

Unfortunately, it was useless. No matter what Chu Feng tried, it was all useless. The sound was still entering through his ears. Chu Feng's condition was growing worse and worse.

With the situation being like that, Chu Feng cried out 'oh no' in his heart.

He felt that his entire body was being affected by some sort of special power. If this were to continue, he had no idea what would happen. He felt that he might even be driven insane and become a madman.

With the situation like that, not to mention saving senior Zhu, he would not even be able to save himself.

"Paa~~~"

However, at the moment when Chu Feng was starting to despair, a hand suddenly grabbed his shoulder.

In the next moment, Chu Feng was able to clearly feel his sinking body starting to move upward.

As Chu Feng's body was not listening to him, he was only able to barely open his eyes through great effort. When he turned around, he was finally able to see things clearly.

It turned out that someone was currently dragging him and bringing him toward the entrance of the Mirror Core.

That was a very small-built figure...

As for that person, he was someone that Chu Feng knew. He was... the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

With the help from the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, Chu Feng quickly escaped from the Mirror Core.

After escaping from the Mirror Core, Chu Feng was extremely weak. The current Chu Feng was unable to even control his own body, and unable to even speak.

It seemed like he was completely paralyzed.

"Buzz~~~"

Suddenly, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist placed his palm on Chu Feng's forehead.

The next instant, Chu Feng was able to sense a warm current entering his body through his forehead.

Soon, Chu Feng's repressed state of mind, and confused state of mind, began to recover.

"Sense carefully. Inside your body is a stream of power. Do not allow this stream of power to escape. Refine it. It will benefit you."

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist's voice was heard.

As Chu Feng's body continued to recover, he began to do as the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had said, and began to carefully examine his body.

To his surprise, there was actually really a stream of power inside him.

That power was very hidden, and extremely strange.

Ordinary power usually took the form of a body of gas.

However, this power was split into countless pieces.

It seemed like countless little bugs that covered Chu Feng's body.

They were extremely well hidden, like parasites. If he didn't search for them carefully, he would not have noticed them.

"Is it these things that were affecting my mind?"

Even though Chu Feng was recovering, he still felt lingering fear.

If it wasn't for the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, Chu Feng might not have noticed those parasites.

At that moment, those bug-like parasites had noticed that something was amiss.

After the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's power entered Chu Feng's body, they were no longer able to disturb Chu Feng's psyche. Thus, at that moment, they were trying to escape from his body.

However, they were blocked by a power, and unable to escape.

As for the power sealing them inside Chu Feng, it was naturally the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's power.

Chapter 3731 - The Furious Liangqiu

“Since you're already here, you shouldn't be leaving.”

Chu Feng felt furious upon thinking that the chaotic state of mind that he was in earlier was caused by those things.

Thus, he began to use his ability to refine those insect-like things; that strange power that had filled his body.

At the beginning, Chu Feng had no idea what sort of power those things possessed.

He merely complied with the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's suggestion and decided to refine them because he had told him to.

However, upon refining the insects, Chu Feng felt completely shocked.

After refining the bugs, not only was Chu Feng's body filled with boundless spirit power, but a great amount of information was also rushing into Chu Feng's brain.

In fact, he was even able to gain some comprehension from them.

He gained... the comprehension to increase his spirit power and link to Snake Mark Saint-cloak Spirit Power.

Unfortunately, the amount of insects were not sufficient. Before Chu Feng could gain more comprehension, the insects were all refined.

Chu Feng felt that if there were more of such strange powers, he might be able to make a breakthrough to Snake Mark Saint-cloak World Spiritist.

Noticing that Chu Feng had already refined the power, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist removed his palm from Chu Feng's forehead.

“Didn't I tell you the Mirror Core is a very dangerous place, that you should not go down there?” The Ox-nosed Old Daoist said to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng noticed that only him and Ox-nosed Old Daoist were outside the Mirror Core, and Grandmaster Liangqiu was nowhere to be seen.

Likely, Grandmaster Liangqiu had returned to the surface because he was unable to withstand the pressure from that place.

That said, Grandmaster Liangqiu's whereabouts were not important. What Chu Feng was concerned about was what the strange parasite-like powers that had entered his body unknowingly were.

"Senior, that power in my body was extremely strange. Exactly what is it?" Chu Feng asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"That is the power of the Mirror Core, a power that can make world spiritists stronger. However, the current you is still unable to withstand that sort of power."

"If I didn't help you, you would've been devoured by that power, either turning into a puppet or dying from self-detonation," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"But, wasn't that Mirror Core only the formation core of the Mirror Sea?"

"Why would there be such a strange power there?" asked Chu Feng.

"Formation core? Don't listen to Liangqiu's nonsense, the Mirror Core is much more complicated than you imagine it to be," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"In that case, exactly what sort of place is the Mirror Core?" asked Chu Feng.

"It's meaningless for me to explain things to you right now. Thus, don't ask about it anymore," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"Senior, that senior Zhu..."

"Could it be that he has already been eroded by that power?"

Having experienced it himself, Chu Feng knew how terrifying the Mirror Core was.

Because of that, Chu Feng became even more worried about old man Zhu.

"Rest assured, he is alive and kicking. It's impossible for him to be dead," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“He didn’t die? Senior, how do you know that?” asked Chu Feng.

“You don’t have to know how I know that, you should instead concern yourself with your own business. Do you now believe that you are unable to save him with your strength?”

“Earlier, if it wasn’t for this old man rescuing you, you would’ve died already,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“I...” Chu Feng felt very pained.

He truly wanted to go and save old man Zhu. However, he knew that he was also truly powerless to do anything.

It was as the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had said, if it wasn’t for him rescuing Chu Feng earlier, he would’ve died there.

However, Chu Feng was only at the outermost region of the Mirror Core. He was still very far from reaching the depths.

When he could not even contend against the power at the outermost region, how exactly was he supposed to rescue old man Zhu?

“Don’t blame yourself. Follow me out first.”

“Should you be willing to go out with me, this old man will immediately bring you out,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said all of a sudden.

“But, senior, you...”

Chu Feng noticed that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s condition was not very good either.

This was not merely caused by him coming to Chu Feng’s aid. This revealed that the Mirror Core’s power was also capable of affecting the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist didn’t wish for Chu Feng to take risks. Naturally, Chu Feng also did not wish for the Ox-nosed Old Daoist to risk his life for him.

“Enough with the buts. You’ll understand once we go out.”

After he finished saying those words, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist grabbed Chu Feng's shoulder and shot straight for the sea's surface.

"Clamor~~~"

Water splashed into the sky. Chu Feng and the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had returned to the surface.

Sure enough, Grandmaster Liangqiu was waiting there.

"Chu Feng, are you alright?"

Seeing Chu Feng, Grandmaster Liangqiu hurriedly rushed forth.

"Alright? Ask him yourself. If it wasn't for me going down there to save him, he would've died," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Grandmaster Liangqiu was naturally able to tell that Chu Feng's health was extremely weak right now.

He was feeling very pained to see Chu Feng like that. Now, after hearing what the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said, he felt even more pained.

If he hadn't informed Chu Feng of that seventy-nine day appointment, he wouldn't have taken such risks. *noVe(lb-In*

"Senior, I am truly sorry. This junior was unable to save senior Zhu," Chu Feng had an ashamed look on his face.

"Enough with the senior Zhu, that person simply wanted to kill you."

"It's my first time encountering someone like that. It's one thing to kill oneself, but he actually wanted to drag others down with him. That person simply does not possess the demeanor of a senior in the slightest," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke with an extremely mocking tone.

"Senior, please don't say it like that. After all, senior Zhu only entered the Mirror Core in order to save me," said Chu Feng.

"Save you? Pah! The person who saved you is this old man. If it wasn't for this old man, you and that Chu Xuanzhengfa would simply not have been able to escape from the Gate of Death. He is nothing more than a swindler." The Ox-

nosed Old Daoist did not exercise any restraint. Instead, his attitude turned even more vile.

“Ox-nose, you simply do not know what brother Zhu has done. Thus, you’d best be more respectful when speaking of him.” At that moment, Grandmaster Liangqiu, who was already in a bad mood, revealed a look of anger on his face.

“Respectful? That so-called brother Zhu of yours is not a good man at all,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said with a mocking look.

“Since when did someone as vile as you become qualified to speak ill of my brother Zhu?!”

Suddenly, Grandmaster Liangqiu let out a shout. Not only did he release his rank one Exalted oppressive might, but he even raised his fist and shot it toward the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Paaa~~~”

However, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist raised his hand and effortlessly blocked Grandmaster Liangqiu’s fist.

“You!!!”

At that moment, Grandmaster Liangqiu was stunned. According to his memory, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s cultivation should be far inferior to his own. It should be impossible for him to block his punch.

“Hahaha~~~”

Suddenly, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist burst into loud laughter.

Grandmaster Liangqiu was completely baffled by his laughter. At the same time, he became even more furious. Angrily, he asked, “What are you laughing about?!”

Chapter 3732 - The Same Person

“Earlier, you said that I’m not qualified to speak about your brother Zhu?”

“I might as well tell you this. In terms of being qualified to speak, I should be the most qualified to speak about that brother Zhu of yours.”

“Brother Liangqiu, am I correct?”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke again. However, when he said those words, Grandmaster Liangqiu and Chu Feng’s expressions both changed.

The reason for that was because the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s voice had changed. That was no longer the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s voice. Instead, it had become identical to old man Zhu’s voice.

Furthermore, upon taking a closer look, both Grandmaster Liangqiu and Chu Feng were completely shocked.

They discovered that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s appearance had changed. His face had turned to that of old man Zhu’s.

It was not only his appearance; even his figure and aura had become completely the same as that of old man Zhu’s.

“Ox-nose, what the hell are you doing?!”

After a short moment of being stunned, Grandmaster Liangqiu became even more furious.

He felt that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was pretending to be his good friend, something that was extremely disrespectful toward his friend.

“Liangqiu, you actually failed to even recognize me? I’ve truly wasted my time being acquainted with you for so many years.”

“If you don’t recognize me... you should recognize this, no?”

As the Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke, he took out a writing brush.

The writing brush appeared to be very ordinary, even shabby. However, Chu Feng was able to tell that it was a world spiritist treasure.

“You... why would you have...”

Compared to Chu Feng, Grandmaster Liangqiu reacted with a shocked expression.

Whilst others might not know that brush, he knew it.

That brush was something that he had given to old man Zhu.

Although that brush seemed to be very ordinary, it was completely unique!

At that moment, Grandmaster Liangqiu took two steps back, and began to size up the person before him.

After examining him for a bit, he came to a conclusion that the person before him was none other than his brother Zhu.

“Brother Zhu, so it was you... You’re actually still alive. You’re the one who brought Chu Feng out from the Mirror Core?”

“But, why did you decide to disguise yourself as that Ox-nose and play such a joke with me?”

“You clearly know that the person I hate the most is that Ox-nose.”

After coming to a realization, Grandmaster Liangqiu thought that old man Zhu had rescued Chu Feng and deliberately disguised himself as the Ox-nosed Old Daoist to trick him.

However, to his surprise, old man Zhu let out a chuckle and said, “I am indeed your brother Zhu. However, I am also that Ox-nose that you detest the most.”

After he finished saying those words, old man Zhu’s appearance changed again. His appearance returned to that of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

He had an extremely gleeful smile on his face. However, that smile appeared rather vulgar. He was smiling mischievously, like a child that had managed to prank someone successfully.

“Senior, could it be that senior Zhu... is also you?” Chu Feng asked.

“Smart. Liangqiu, look at how dim-witted you are. You’re actually slower than a child,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said as he glanced at Grandmaster Liangqiu in a very mocking manner.

“Senior, since you’re senior Zhu, why did you want me to enter the Mirror Core?” Chu Feng asked with great confusion.

“Chu Feng, the seventy-nine-day appointment is actually a test that this old man had for you.”

“And now, you’ve successfully passed that test,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said to Chu Feng.

“You... you’re really brother Zhu???”

Compared to Chu Feng, Grandmaster Liangqiu’s eyes were filled with disbelief.

He was still unable to accept the truth before him.

“Brother Liangqiu, do you still not understand?”

“The person who I really am is Ox-nose. As for that so-called brother Zhu, he was nothing more than a disguise of mine.”

“When I told you that I needed to enter the Mirror Core in order to save Chu Feng, that was a lie.”

“I did not enter the Mirror Core. Instead, I directly entered the Gate of Death and changed my appearance to that of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.”

“As for young friend Chu Feng, he would no longer be able to sense the terrifying power of the Gate of Death after being there for four hours. It’s actually not that I’ve helped him. Instead, the sound of the Death Bell will only resonate for four hours.”

“Should one be able to endure the Death Bell for four hours after entering the Gate of Death, the power of the Gate of Death will no longer affect them.”

“However, the great majority of people will have their souls explode and die within four hours.”

“However, not only did Chu Feng endure four hours of the bell, but he even helped Chu Xuanzhengfa endure for four hours as well.”

“Thus, it was actually all due to Chu Feng that they were able to survive. It’s not because I helped them,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Senior, in that case, when you said that you’ve stayed in the Gate of Death for many years, that was also a lie?” asked Chu Feng.

“That wouldn’t be considered to be a lie. All these years, I’ve been staying in the Mirror Sea. Merely, I was not staying here as the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Instead, I was staying here as the person you thought to be senior Zhu," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist replied with a smile.

"Brother Zhu, are you sure you're not joking with me?" asked Grandmaster Liangqiu.

He still had a very complicated and even awkward expression.

He deeply detested the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. He had even said malicious things about the Ox-nosed Old Daoist to his brother Zhu.

Never had he ever imagined that his brother Zhu was actually the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Most importantly, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and his brother Zhu were simply people of two different worlds.

To suddenly discover that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and his brother Zhu were actually the same person, Grandmaster Liangqiu found himself momentarily incapable of accepting the truth.

"Haha. Brother Liangqiu, don't blame me for deceiving you."

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist patted Grandmaster Liangqiu's shoulder and laughed heartily.

Although he was joking around, he was laughing in a very vile manner.

It seemed like he was taking deep joy in seeing the awkward appearance of Grandmaster Liangqiu.

"This..."

"This old man needs to calm himself."

Grandmaster Liangqiu took a deep breath and closed his eyes.

After a long while, Grandmaster Liangqiu opened his eyes again and looked at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"So... you're really able to help Chu Feng fuse with Divine Power?" Grandmaster Liangqiu asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

He was determined in his opinion that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was incapable of helping Chu Feng fuse with Divine Power.

The reason why he thought this way was because the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had helped many people before. But, without exception, they had all failed.

On top of that, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was a very boastful person, yet he had never accomplished anything that he had boasted about.

That was the reason why the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was so infamous, and why even someone as upright as Grandmaster Liangqiu would feel such contempt for him.

However, upon finding out that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was actually his brother Zhu, his opinion of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist changed enormously.

After all, to his knowledge, his brother Zhu was someone that possessed unfathomable abilities.

If the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was truly his brother Zhu, it would mean that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was someone who possessed unfathomable abilities, and was most definitely not as simple as he appeared to be.

Because of that, Grandmaster Liangqiu felt that perhaps the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was truly capable of helping Chu Feng fuse with Divine Power. n.)σ/-∇-e).//.B-(l/(n

“Of course. The reason why those people in the past failed is because their perseverance was insufficient, and their strength was lacking.”

“Chu Feng is different. He... will soon be able to fuse with his Divine Power, and become a Divine Body.”

“Brother Liangqiu, congratulations... you will become the person to witness Chu Feng becoming a Divine Body,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said to Grandmaster Liangqiu with a beaming smile.

“Brother Zhu, you’ve truly played an enormous prank on this old man.”

“No, I was wrong. I should address you as Ox-nose, no?”

Grandmaster Liangqiu finally smiled.

Chu Feng's expression also changed. A faint amount of excitement and anticipation appeared in his eyes.

"Senior, you said that I'll be able to fuse with my Divine Power soon?" Chu Feng asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Chapter 3733 - Universal Core

"Senior, you said that I'll be able to fuse with my Divine Power soon?" Chu Feng asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"That's right. You will soon be able to fuse with your Divine Power," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"But senior, didn't you say that it would require me to create another dantian to fuse with my Divine Power? As for creating another dantian, it would take three hundred years at the minimum?" asked Chu Feng.

"Of course. If you are to attempt to create a dantian on your own, you'd need at least three hundred years."

"However, it'll be different with this."

As the Ox-nosed Old Daoist spoke, he opened his palm.

"Humm~~~"

The instant his palm opened, heaven and earth immediately started to tremble.

It seemed like an enormously powerful existence had been born.

Upon closer inspection, Chu Feng discovered that a body of light was floating above the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's hand.

Seeing that body of light, Chu Feng's heart started to tremble.

That body of light was merely the size of a fingernail. Yet, it seemed like an isolated world as it appeared before him.

It was a boundless and inestimably powerful world!!!

“Senior, what is that?” Chu Feng asked with a stern voice. He discovered... that the body of light was not a dantian. Yet, it was far superior to a dantian.

Likely, it was a natural oddity that was identical to a dantian.

“This item is called the Universal Core.”

“It is created from a natural oddity. This old man spent quite some effort to subdue and refine it.”

“It is capable of replacing any place in your soul. That of course includes your dantian. Furthermore, after this old man refined it, it is capable of being used by anyone.”

“With it, you no longer need to create your own dantian, as it is capable of harmonizing with your soul perfectly. It would be even more reliable than a dantian that you created on your own.”

“Of course, a treasure like this is truly priceless. Not to mention the Ancestral Martial Starfield, it would be very difficult to find even in the entire Holy Light Galaxy.”

“However, since you’ve passed this old man’s test, you will naturally be rewarded. This... is the reward that I’ve prepared for you,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said to Chu Feng.

“This...” Chu Feng was overjoyed. Yet, at the same time, he found it difficult to accept such a grand gift.

Chu Feng wanted the gift very much. Yet, it was simply too precious.

It was not because the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said it was a priceless treasure. Rather, Chu Feng was able to sense that the ‘Universal Core’ was extremely precious.

In fact, Chu Feng felt that even though they were both natural oddities, the Universal Core was much more precious than Chu Lingxi’s Deepsea Pupils.

Even though the Universal Core would not be able to provide any direct assistance to Chu Feng’s martial cultivation, it would be up to it as to whether or not his Four Symbols Secret Skills would be able to return to being the Four Symbols Divine Power.

Chu Feng felt that this Universal Core would be able to help him bring out the power of the Four Symbols Divine Power even more perfectly.

“The reason why this old man set up the seventy-nine day appointment is because I wanted to see your character.”

“With your character, boy, you are qualified to become this old man’s disciple,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Disciple?” Chu Feng was surprised upon hearing those words. Then, he started frowning.

It was not only Chu Feng who was shocked. Grandmaster Liangqiu’s expression also became complicated.

“Boy, what is with your expression? Is something wrong with my proposal?” asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Senior, this junior once vowed that I would no longer take anyone as my master.”

“This is also the reason why I rejected even Grandmaster Liangqiu,” said Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you possess outstanding talent. This old man also feels that I am unqualified to become your master. After all, the amount of help that I can provide you is truly limited.”

“However, brother Zhu’s ability far surpasses my own. If he is to become your master, he will definitely be able to provide you with enormous assistance.”

“Thus, young friend Chu Feng, you must not miss out on this opportunity,” urged Grandmaster Liangqiu.

Even though he knew that his brother Zhu was merely a disguise of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, he was still used to addressing him as brother Zhu.

Furthermore, even though Grandmaster Liangqiu was clearly rejected by Chu Feng, he showed no trace of displeasure, and was instead trying to urge Chu Feng to become the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s disciple.

The reason for that was because he knew that if Chu Feng were to become the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's disciple, he would definitely be able to receive even more benefits. n.)o./V-)e-.1.-&--1.(n

After all, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was not someone from the Ancestral Martial Starfield. Not even Grandmaster Liangqiu knew how powerful he truly was.

As for Chu Feng, he felt very complicated and pained.

If he agreed to become the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's disciple, he would be able to obtain the Universal Core.

That meant that he would be able to cut down on three hundred years and fuse with his Divine Power right away.

However, to no longer take a master was a vow that he had made for himself.

In the beginning, Chu Feng didn't want to take another master because he knew that he was fond of getting himself into trouble, and did not wish to implicate others.

Later on, Chu Feng refused multiple people, including even Grandmaster Liangqiu.

If Chu Feng were to agree to become the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's disciple for the sake of the Universal Core, it would be very unfair to Grandmaster Liangqiu.

In the end, Chu Feng clenched his teeth. He had made his decision.

Thus, he looked to Grandmaster Liangqiu and bowed respectfully to him. "Grandmaster Liangqiu, when this junior rejected you, I did not consider whether or not you were strong."

"Ever since I left the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, many seniors have wanted me to become their disciple. Without an exception, I've refused all of them."

"Thus, it has nothing to do with strength. Instead, it's this junior's principle."

After saying those words, Chu Feng turned to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and bowed respectfully. “Senior, thank you for all the help you’ve given me. This junior will definitely repay senior’s grace of saving his life. However, this junior has truly made a pledge to no longer take anyone as a master. Thus, even if it’s senior, I still cannot agree to become your disciple.”

Between a shortcut and one’s principle, Chu Feng ultimately chose his principle.

“This...”

Seeing Chu Feng being so stubborn, Grandmaster Liangqiu sighed.

He felt regret for Chu Feng. He felt that it was a major loss for him to refuse the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s kind intentions.

For the sake of a vow, he gave up on such benefits. It was truly too unworthy.

“Hahaha...”

Surprisingly, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist burst into loud laughter after hearing Chu Feng’s rejection.

“Boy, you are truly amusing. Whether or not you agree to become my disciple is your decision.”

“However, whether or not I take you as my disciple is my decision.”

“Since this old man said that you’re my disciple, you are my disciple. No one can refute that.”

“Disciple, this is a gift from this old man. Accept it well!!!”

“Woosh~~~”

After he finished saying those words, he pushed Chu Feng’s body with his palm.

“Eeeahhh~~~”

In the next moment, Chu Feng revealed a look of pain.

However, that pained look only lasted an instant.

When Chu Feng and Grandmaster Liangqiu reacted to what had happened, they discovered that the Universal Core floating above the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's palm had disappeared.

“Senior, you!!!”

Chu Feng's expression became complicated.

He was able to tell that there was no longer only a single dantian in his body. Instead, there were now two dantians.

One dantian contained the nine enormous lightning beasts.

As for the other dantian, it was completely empty.

However, that empty dantian seemed to be even more exceptional than his own dantian.

The reason for that was because that dantian was the Universal Core!!!

“Chu Feng, don't bother with superfluous words.”

“You don't need this old man to explain to you how to fuse with your Divine Power, right?”

“Go ahead and begin. Have Liangqiu witness whether or not I am really able to help others fuse with Divine Power,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said to Chu Feng with a smile on his face.

At that moment, Grandmaster Liangqiu's eyes revealed a look of deep anticipation.

“Very well.”

With the situation being like that, Chu Feng no longer hesitated. He immediately closed his eyes and made hand seals with both hands before sitting down cross-legged.

In terms of fusing with Divine Power, Chu Feng was much more impatient than anyone else.

Chapter 3734 - Four Symbols Divine Beasts

Right after Chu Feng closed his eyes, the surrounding region began to change.

Not even Grandmaster Liangqiu was able to describe what sort of change was happening.

It was only when the golden clouds appeared in the violently raining sky that Grandmaster Liangqiu became particularly excited.

The bright golden clouds spread as far as the eye could see.

Those golden clouds were not what shocked Grandmaster Liangqiu. Instead, it was the images of four enormous beings that could be seen in the golden clouds.

They were four giant creatures.

The ferocious White Tiger.

The steady Black Tortoise.

The graceful Vermilion Bird.

The proud Azure Dragon.

Four enormous figures had covered the entire sky.

The aura emitted by their bodies, the aura of rulers among beasts, was truly shocking.

“Are those a Divine Power?”

“This is the first time I’ve seen such a powerful Divine Power.”

“Brother Zhu, you gave Chu Feng such a Divine Power?”

Seeing the stunning sight in the sky, even the experienced and knowledgeable Grandmaster Liangqiu was completely covered in shock.

“You can call me Ox-nose. After all, Ox-nose is my true body,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Ox...” Grandmaster Liangqiu sighed.

“Allow me to continue to address you as brother Zhu.”

He felt it easier to continue to address the Ox-nosed Old Daoist as brother Zhu.

It wasn't that he was unable to address the Ox-nosed Old Daoist as Ox-nose. Merely, he was filled with hostility towards the Ox-nosed Old Daoist before. He held so much hostility that he was hostile toward even the name 'Ox-nose'.

“Forget about it. Call me whatever you want.”

Seeing Grandmaster Liangqiu like that, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist felt rather helpless.

“This Divine Power is not my doing. It is Chu Feng's own possession,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“His own possession? Could it be... that boy was planning to fuse with a Divine Power long ago, and specifically went out of his way to obtain it? But, such a powerful Divine Power, where did he obtain it?” Grandmaster Liangqiu felt very curious.

“It should be from the Lower Realms,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Lower Realms? That shouldn't be possible, no?”

Grandmaster Liangqiu shook his head repeatedly.

In his opinion, the Lower Realms were desolate places inhabited by a bunch of people that did not possess any talent for martial cultivation.

How could the Lower Realms possibly contain such a powerful Divine Power?

“Liangqiu, this is why you're slow-witted.”

“You must not look down on the Lower Realms. That Universal Core is also something that I obtained from a Lower Realm,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said to Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“Truly?!” Grandmaster Liangqiu felt utter disbelief upon hearing those words.

“Of course. Why would I lie about that?” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“But, the martial power of the Lower Realms is so very thin. How could it possibly condense into such a marvelous natural oddity?” Grandmaster Liangqiu was still skeptical.

“That’s why the martial cultivation world is so wondrous.”

“If everything could be explained through common sense, what delight would be left in this world?” asked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Hearing those words, Grandmaster Liangqiu felt them to be rather reasonable.

“It would appear that this old man still has a lot of things that I need to learn from you.”

“In the future, I shall go on a journey through the Lower Realms.”

After Grandmaster Liangqiu finished saying those words, he turned his gaze back to the four Divine Beasts in the sky.

Those four Divine Beasts were only images. Yet, they appeared very vivid and lifelike. Their majestic sacred auras filled the land beneath them. Even someone like Grandmaster Liangqiu felt reverence for them upon feeling their auras.

At that moment, Chu Feng was inside the dantian space created by that Universal Core.

Inside that dantian, his consciousness found itself in a boundless world.

The sky there was filled with stars. It seemed like the boundless martial cultivation world.

In his other dantian, Chu Feng was able to see the nine enormous lightning beasts.

The nine enormous lightning beasts in his other dantian never paid any attention to him.

However, the Four Symbols Divine Beasts in this dantian were completely different.

“Four seniors, it’s been a long time.”

Seeing the four symbols appearing before him again, Chu Feng felt joy from the bottom of his heart.

Memories began to appear in his mind.

Those were the memories of Chu Feng's youth.

That period of time was incomparably precious to him.

During that period of time, apart from Her Lady Queen, the Four Symbols Divine Beasts had also provided enormous help to him.

Thus, to Chu Feng, the Four Symbols Divine Beasts possessed extraordinary significance.

“Chu Feng, never would I have imagined that you'd actually really manage to return the four of us back to being a Divine Power.”

The Four Symbols Divine Beasts were clearly sacred beings that stood high and above. Yet, when they looked at Chu Feng, they showed no sign of arrogance, and were instead filled with gratitude.

“Four seniors, that is something that this junior had promised you four before. It is only natural that I accomplish it,” said Chu Feng.

“Haha, we know your character very well.”

“Speaking of it, you were still only a boy when we first met you in the Nine Provinces Continent. You were so weak that I did not pay any attention to you at all. At that time, never did I ever imagine that you'd be able to grow to your current level.”

“Seeing you today, it was truly not a mistake that we've chosen you. You have already far surpassed our expectations of you.”

The Four Symbols Divine Beasts were filled with emotions when they looked at the current Chu Feng.

Chu Feng's transformation was simply too enormous.

Back in the Nine Provinces Continent, there were people of the younger generation that could contend against Chu Feng.

However now, the disparity between those people and Chu Feng was simply as vast as the heavens from the earth.

In the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, those people would still be peak existences.

However, Chu Feng had transformed into a giant dragon and soared past the ninth heaven.

“Seniors are flattering me. In the future, this junior will need to rely on four seniors’ assistance,” said Chu Feng.

“Those are precisely the words we’re waiting for.”

“Chu Feng, we’ve remained in your body throughout all these years. Thus, we’ve witnessed your growth. We saw the dangers you’ve encountered, yet were unable to help you. That feeling of powerlessness is truly unpleasant.”

“However now, the situation is different. You are finally able to utilize our power again.”

“Go ahead and use our power to your heart’s content. We’ve waited for this day for a long, long time...”

The Four Symbols Divine Beasts were all extremely excited. It could be seen that they had been yearning for this day for a long time.

Like the Four Symbols Divine Beasts that were extremely excited after regaining their power, Chu Feng was also extremely excited.

After all, to him and to them, this was a matter of extraordinary significance, a matter that could change their fate.

Chapter 3735 - Rank Five Exalted

It was inevitable that Chu Feng would reminisce about the past with the Four Symbols Divine Beasts.

That said, Chu Feng merely reminisced for a short while. After all, he had an urgent matter that he must take care of.

Meanwhile, Grandmaster Liangqiu was still watching the sky attentively. He was still watching the image of the Four Symbols Divine Beasts.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the Four Symbols Divine Beasts in the sky began to change. Soon, the golden light that filled the sky began to enter Chu Feng’s body.

That region finally began to return to normal.

As for Chu Feng, he opened his eyes.

“Chu Feng, your cultivation.”

At the instant Chu Feng opened his eyes, Grandmaster Liangqiu revealed a look of shock.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s cultivation was no longer that of a rank three Exalted. Instead, it was that of a rank five Exalted.

Chu Feng actually managed to make two successive breakthroughs without actually causing any Heavenly Tribulation Lightning.

This meant that Chu Feng’s breakthrough in cultivation was unrelated to his bloodline power.

If it was unrelated to his bloodline power, there could only be one possible explanation. Likely, this was the benefit Chu Feng obtained from fusing with his Divine Power.

“Senior, I’ve succeeded,” Chu Feng said to Grandmaster Liangqiu with a wide smile on his face. Then, he looked to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and bowed respectfully. “Thank you senior.”

Compared to Grandmaster Liangqiu’s excitement and joy, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist reacted rather calm and collected. It was as if he had anticipated it all.

“Don’t bother thanking me. If you really want to repay me, it’s better that you do it with actions,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Senior, if there’s anything that you need this junior’s assistance with, please do not hesitate to tell me,” said Chu Feng.

“There is indeed one thing that I need your help with.”

As the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said those words, he looked to Grandmaster Liangqiu and revealed a vile smile on his face.

“Cough, cough...”

“Old thing, if you want me to leave, just say it.”

Grandmaster Liangqiu understood the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s intention and rolled his eyes at him. Then, he looked to Chu Feng. “Chu Feng, this old man will wait for you at the Ancient Era’s Teleportation Formation.”

After he finished saying those words, Grandmaster Liangqiu leapt forth and flew towards the the Ancient Era’s Teleportation Formation.

After Grandmaster Liangqiu left, only Chu Feng and the Ox-nosed Old Daoist remained.

“Senior, what matter could this junior help you with?” asked Chu Feng.

“I have an old friend in the All-heaven Starfield.”

“While that old friend of mine is a friend, he is also an old enemy. Thus, the two of us have an agreement.”

“We will each take on a disciple and nurture that person. When the time is right, he will send forth his disciple to challenge me. I, on the other hand, will send forth my disciple to challenge him.”

“If my disciple successfully defeats his, it would mean that I’ve won.”

“If his disciple successfully defeats mine, it would mean that he has won.”

“If our disciples fail to defeat each other, it would mean that we’ve tied.”

“However, as I’ve been unable to find a suitable disciple the entire time, we’ve been unable to honor this agreement.”

“Now that I have you as my disciple, you should help me finish this agreement.”

“After you finish settling your dispute with the Linghu Heavenly Clan, go to the All-heaven Starfield.”

“That is the place where that old codger is located. Once you reach that place, just inform him that you’re the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s disciple,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said as he tossed a map to Chu Feng.

“But senior, this junior is not your disciple,” said Chu Feng.

“What’s this? You spoke as if you would help me with anything earlier, yet now you’re refusing to help me with something this minor?”

“Even if you do not wish to become this old man’s disciple, you can pretend to be this old man’s disciple. You can do that, no?”

“This old man has not accepted a single disciple in all these years. It is not that this old man cannot find a disciple, it’s simply that my requirements are too high.”

“However, that old codger felt that it’s because this old man is incompetent. He felt that it’s because this old man is unable to get anyone to become his disciple. I’ve been ridiculed by him for many hundreds of years because of this matter.”

“You should also know how much this old man cares about his reputation. Yet, I’ve been ridiculed for so many years.”

“How could I possibly tolerate this?”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist narrowed his brows and was looking at Chu Feng with glaring wide eyes.

From his look, it seemed like Chu Feng would be extremely disgraceful and unfilial should he refuse to agree to help him.

Helpless, Chu Feng agreed to it, “Very well. Senior, this junior will help you with that.”

“After this junior is finished with taking care of the matter with the Linghu Heavenly Clan, I will immediately proceed for the All-heaven Starfield.”

“That’s more like it.”

Seeing that Chu Feng had agreed to help, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s expression immediately changed. He not only took back his look of anger, but he even smiled gleefully.

“That said, senior, how are you so confident in this junior?”

“What this junior is planning to challenge is the Linghu Heavenly Clan.”

“How are you so certain that this junior will be able to return safe and alive?” asked Chu Feng.

“It’s merely a Linghu Heavenly Clan, what is there to fear?”

“If you’re unable to even handle them, you’ll be unqualified to be this old man’s disciple.”

“Chu Feng, remember this. The disciple of this old man is someone who will stand atop the Holy Light Galaxy, stand atop the vast martial cultivation world.”

“If a small place like the Ancestral Martial Starfield is capable of restraining you, even if you want to become this old man’s disciple in the future, I will not accept you,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Senior, judging from your tone, the Ancestral Martial Starfield is an extremely weak place?” asked Chu Feng.

“That’s precisely so,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“In that case senior, how does the Ancestral Martial Starfield compared to all the starfields of the Holy Light Galaxy?” Chu Feng asked with great curiosity.

Even though Chu Feng had learned about the structure of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, he was still very unfamiliar with the Holy Light Galaxy.

Even though he was in the Holy Light Galaxy, it remained an unknown place to him.

It was unknown, mysterious and dangerous. Yet... it also gave off an enormous sense of enticement.

“How does the Ancestral Martial Starfield compare?”

“In the Holy Light Galaxy, the status of the Ancestral Martial Starfield is akin to the status of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm’s Ancestral Martial Lower Realm,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

The Ancestral Martial Lower Realm could not even compare to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. How could it possibly compare to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm?

Thus, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's words had revealed to Chu Feng how enormous the disparity between the Ancestral Martial Starfield and the top starfields of the Holy Light Galaxy was.

That said, Chu Feng was feeling slightly skeptical. Thus, he asked, "Being all starfields, could the disparity really be that vast?"

"Of course it'll be vast. There are a total of ninety-six starfields in the Holy Light Galaxy."

"Among them, fifty are known as Lower Starfields."

"Thirty are Middle Starfields."

"And six are Upper Starfields."

"From their names, you should know the disparity between the starfields, no?" said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"I am able to have a rough idea," Chu Feng nodded. However, he soon asked, "In that case, what about the remaining ten starfields?"

"The final ten starfields, due to being too weak, are known as the Abandoned Starfields."

"Those ten starfields are unqualified to even participate in the gathering for the grand occasions of the Holy Light Galaxy. As for the Ancestral Martial Starfield, it is the weakest of of the ten Abandoned Starfields," said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Chapter 3736 - An Unprecedented Grand Occasion

"Ah? It's actually that weak?"

Chu Feng felt completely shaken up upon hearing those words.

Actually, Chu Feng was not interested in the Holy Light Galaxy.

The place that he wanted to go to the most was the Seven Realms Galaxy.

Located in that place was the power that his mother belonged to, the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion.

The reason why Chu Feng wanted to go to the Seven Realms Galaxy was because he wanted to save his mother.

However, his father had once told him that the Seven Realms Galaxy was stronger than the Holy Light Galaxy.

If Chu Feng wanted to proceed for the Seven Realms Galaxy, he must at least make a name for himself in the Holy Light Galaxy.

At the very least, his cultivation could not be too weak. Otherwise, even if he managed to reach the Seven Realms Galaxy, he would not be able to accomplish anything.

Over the years, Chu Feng had been trying his hardest to train. Compared to ordinary people, his cultivation had increased rapidly.

However, although he had managed to become a peak level existence among the people of the younger generation, Chu Feng was still extremely weak in terms of being placed among the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

And now, to his surprise, he learned that the Ancestral Martial Starfield was actually such a small and weak starfield in the Holy Light Galaxy.

This made Chu Feng once again realize the massive disparity in strength.

When he was unable to establish a footing for himself in such a weak Ancestral Martial Starfield, how exactly was he supposed to proceed to the Seven Realms Galaxy to take on their ruler?

At that moment, the name 'Seven Realms Galaxy' was like an enormous mountain ruthlessly crushing down on Chu Feng, stifling him.

"Do you now know how honored you are to be able to become this old man's disciple?" the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked with a beaming smile.

"Senior, this junior will accomplish the mission senior gave me. That said, does this junior need to come and find you after I have completed the mission?" asked Chu Feng.

“You don’t need to attempt to find me. You will not be able to find me anyways. You merely need to wait for me to find you,” said the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“In that case, this junior understands.”

“Senior, if there’s nothing else that you need from me, this junior shall take his leave.”

Chu Feng put away the map and clasped his fist respectfully towards the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

He was in a hurry to leave because it was about time for him to return to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

If he didn’t leave, even if Grandmaster Liangqiu were to lead the way, he would not be able to return on time.

“Go ahead.” The Ox-nosed Old Daoist waved his hand.

Seeing that, Chu Feng bowed to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist again. Then, he started flying towards the Ancient Era’s Teleportation Formation.

“Wait.”

“Woosh~~~”

However, right after Chu Feng began flying, before he could even fly far away, a ray of light rapidly flew toward him from behind.

It was the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. He had tossed something toward Chu Feng.

Chu Feng extended his hand to catch the item. Upon catching the item... he discovered that it was a wooden stick.

That said, it was no ordinary wooden stick.

The wooden stick was two feet long and covered in runes and symbols.

Holding the wooden stick in his hand, Chu Feng was able to sense how amazing of an item it was.

That wooden stick actually contained a spirit formation. It was an extremely powerful spirit formation.

How powerful was that spirit formation???

One would have to talk about how worried Chu Feng was.

Chu Feng would not only confront Linghu Hongfei upon his return to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. His greatest problem was actually the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

The Linghu Heavenly Clan was able to defeat the Wuming Clan. From this, it was obvious how powerful they were.

However, after Chu Feng sensed the power of the spirit formation within that wooden stick, the worry in his heart immediately decreased a lot.

This was why the wooden stick was so powerful. It served as a safety guarantee for Chu Feng. With that, he felt much more relieved.

With a smile on his face, Chu Feng said to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, "Senior, it would appear that you do not have confidence in me either."

Chu Feng felt that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist must've specifically prepared such a powerful spirit formation for him.

In the end, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was still worried for him.

"What's with all these superfluous words? If you don't want it, you can very well return it to this old man," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said from afar. He even extended his hand to indicate for Chu Feng to return the wooden stick.

"I want it, I never said that I didn't want it."

"Since you've given it to me, it's mine now," Chu Feng hurriedly put away the wooden stick. Then, he immediately left.

He was afraid that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist would have a change of mind, and decide to retrieve that precious treasure of a wooden stick...

.....

Ancestral Martial Starfield. Great Chilocosm Upper Realm,

This was originally a very ordinary and even somewhat lousy Upper Realm in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Normally, apart from the powers of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, very few powers would travel to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

However, it was different at this moment.

The Tantai Heavenly Clan, Jiaoli Heavenly Clan, Moyi Heavenly Clan, Shangfang Heavenly Clan, Zuoqiu Heavenly Clan, Wuma Heavenly Clan, Puyang Heavenly Clan, Tang Heavenly Clan, Li Heavenly Clan...

Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan, Nightmare Spirit Clan, Heaven Reaching Beast Clan...

All those huge monsters whose names could shake up the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield were all gathered in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Those top powers were not the only ones gathered in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Apart from them, there were also countless other powers that had arrived in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm in succession.

It could be said that all of the powers of the Ancestral Martial Starfield had dispatched people to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Apart from those powers that came from all over, there were also peak experts from all over the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Even Exalted Heavenly Fate, the Saintly Stellar Monk, White Dragon Demon Daoist, Queen Mother Fox Immortal... those experts withdrawn from worldly matters, experts that one could not find even if one sought them, were all present in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Not only had all those people arrived in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, but they were all gathered outside the Chu Heavenly Clan.

It could be said that all the grand characters of the Ancestral Martial Starfield were gathered outside the Chu Heavenly Clan.

There was a vast sea of people and hundreds of millions of silhouettes visible. They were all martial cultivators with powerful backgrounds. n/.0-.v).e)(ℓ- /B/(1/)n

Faced with such an impressive display, the local major powers of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm were simply unable to approach them.

It wasn't that they didn't want to approach those people. It was instead that they were unqualified to approach them, and did not dare to approach them.

The people from the Starfall Holy Temple, the Ghost Sect Hall, the Paradise Valley and other powers could only stand in the distant sky and watch from afar.

No matter how powerful they were in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, they could not contend against those true major powers.

At that moment, an unprecedentedly grand occasion was happening in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Even during Chu Hanxian and Chu Xuanyuan's eras, such a disposition of forces had not appeared in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

The reason why so many major powers were all gathered in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm was naturally because of Chu Feng.

They had all come for the three month appointment between Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei.

The marvelous battle between Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei in the Nine Dragons Upper Realm was still vivid in the crowd's minds.

However, things were vastly different from before.

Back then, the Linghu Heavenly Clan would have to show respect to the people of the Starfield Master Realm.

However, everyone already knew that the Starfield Master Realm had been defeated by the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

The current Linghu Heavenly Clan had replaced the Starfield Master Realm, and had become the fully-deserving overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Thus, Chu Feng's opponent was not merely Linghu Hongfei.

Chu Feng's opponent was the future ruler of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

After all, everyone knew that Linghu Hongfei would, sooner or later, be the person to succeed the throne as the next clan chief of the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

Chapter 3737 - Re-challenge

"Say, do you all think Chu Feng will come?"

"Who knows? If it were me, I would definitely not come. After all, Exalted Heavenly Fate has already made his prophecy."

"But you're not Chu Feng. That kid is renowned for being tough. Perhaps he might really show up."

"And what if he does show up? He'll only be throwing his life away. His courage will only be that of an ignorant fool."

"But, if he doesn't come, he will be deemed a coward and have to live like a dog for the rest of his life. Could someone like Chu Feng really bear such infamy?"

.....

.....

At that moment, the gathered crowd were all discussing the match, either openly or through voice transmission.

Their discussions were all about whether or not Chu Feng would come.

The reason why they were discussing this was because there were already rumors that he was not in the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Adding Exalted Heavenly Fate's prophecy into consideration, many people felt that Chu Feng had fled in fear.

In a short three months' time, rumors had sprung up everywhere...

"Rumble~~~"

Suddenly, rumbles sounded from the distant sky.

People were able to see several enormous warships descending from the sky, escorted by tens of thousands of experts.

The appearance of the warships appeared so very imposing that they swept everything else beneath them.

On those warships were drifting banners. On those banners were the words 'Linghu Heavenly Clan.'

"They've come. The overlord of our Ancestral Martial Starfield has arrived."

Seeing the warships of the Linghu Heavenly Clan, many people immediately started feeling deep veneration for them, and began to cheer.

Their boot-licking appearances resembled a bunch of pekinese dogs.

That said, those dogs were no ordinary dogs. Instead, they were all grand characters from the various major powers of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Yet, those grand individuals were doing something unbecoming of their status.

"Truly lamentable. In the past, they were all wagging their tails at the Starfield Master Realm. Yet, in the blink of an eye, they've already started displaying their devotion to their new master."

"Perhaps this is life. No matter how powerful someone might be, they're still human, and still possess human nature."

Many people sighed in their hearts upon seeing this scene.

That said, although they were disappointed, none of them dared to voice their displeasure openly. There was no other alternative. After all, as the saying went, 'Under eaves, one will have no choice but to lower one's head.'

"The pressure the Chu Heavenly Clan is under is truly enormous."

Seeing the majestic and mighty Linghu Heavenly Clan, many people turned their gazes to the Chu Heavenly Clan.

The Chu Heavenly Clan, the power that many major powers did not place in their eyes, was facing the Linghu Heavenly Clan, the overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield at that moment.

Some people took joy in the calamity of the Chu Heavenly Clan, while others felt sympathy for them.

After all, the disparity in strength between the two of them was simply too vast.

“Look! Who is that?”

After the Linghu Heavenly Clan approached, a figure walked out from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

That person was a young woman.

Facing the Linghu Heavenly Clan, many of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen were already shivering in fear.

In fact, many Chu Heavenly Clansmen had already fled.

Yet, in such a situation, there was actually someone that dared to stand forth to confront the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

Furthermore, that person was a person of the younger generation. Naturally, that person would catch the crowd’s attention.

“It’s her.”

“I recognize her, she’s Chu Lingxi.”

“Chu Lingxi? You mean the daughter of the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan’s Princess, Gu Mingyuan?”

“That’s right, it’s her. She’s also a demon-level genius. She was none other than the person who challenged Linghu Hongfei three months ago.”

“So it was her? But, I heard that her eyes were dug out by Linghu Hongfei three months ago? How come her eyes are completely fine?”

After Chu Lingxi appeared, the crowd immediately started to discuss her spiritedly.

“Linghu Hongfei, come out. We still have a debt to settle.”

Chu Lingxi held an Incomplete Exalted Armament in her hand as she pointed at the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s warships.

She was actually issuing a challenge!!!

“Chu Lingxi, it would appear that you’ve still not learned your lesson.”

A voice sounded. At the same time, a figure walked out from a warship of the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

Upon seeing who it was that had appeared, the surrounding crowd immediately burst into an uproar.

It was impossible for the crowd not to recognize who that person was...

After all, that person was the publicly accepted number one genius of the Linghu Heavenly Clan, Linghu Hongfei.

Linghu Hongfei was also the fully-deserving main character of the upcoming match!!!

“What is this feeling? There seems to be some sort of change to Linghu Hongfei?”

“Indeed, there’s something different about him. He seems like he’s no longer as humble and courteous as before.”

Upon seeing Linghu Hongfei, the great majority of the crowd were extremely excited. However, a small portion of them started frowning.

The Linghu Hongfei from the past was someone who possessed both integrity and talent. Not only was his strength acknowledged by everyone, but his modest and courteous character was also acknowledged by everyone.

However, the Linghu Hongfei before them was like a completely different person.

There was no longer the cultured and refined air from the past. Instead, he appeared extremely conceited, haughty and disregarding of others.

Before the crowd's attentive gazes, Linghu Hongfei walked out of the warship and arrived before Chu Lingxi. A mocking smile appeared on his face.

"You've actually managed to recover your eyes?"

"However, instead of hiding like you should've done, you actually have the nerve to seek me out after recovering your eyes? Do you want me to blind you again?" Linghu Hongfei said to Chu Lingxi.

"It is true that someone will be blinded today. However, that won't be me. Instead, it will be you."

As Chu Lingxi spoke, she brandished her Incomplete Exalted Armament and rushed toward Linghu Hongfei.

The instant she rushed to attack him, everyone present was able to sense her aura.

"That girl is actually a rank four Exalted!!!"

"When she fought Linghu Hongfei previously, she seemed to only be a rank three Exalted."

"How could she increase her cultivation so quickly?"

"Amazing! As expected of Gu Mingyuan's daughter. It is no wonder... that she dared to challenge Linghu Hongfei!!!"

Many people felt astonished by Chu Lingxi's aura.

At the same time, they seemed to have arrived at an understanding of why Chu Lingxi dared to challenge Linghu Hongfei again after suffering from her previous crushing defeat.

It was all because her cultivation had increased!!!

That said, although they were astonished, the crowd did not feel that Linghu Hongfei would be defeated.

The reason for that was because Linghu Hongfei's current aura was also that of a rank four Exalted.

Chu Lingxi was holding an Incomplete Exalted Armament that greatly increased her battle power and offensive attacks. She was launching a tempest of attacks at Linghu Hongfei.

However, facing the tempest of attacks, Linghu Hongfei not only had an easy-going and undisturbed look, but he was not even fighting back. Like taking a stroll in a courtyard, he effortlessly dodged all of Chu Lingxi's attacks.

Most importantly of all, Linghu Hongfei did not even utilize the power of an Incomplete Exalted Armament.

With a smile on his face, he looked to the seemingly crazed and murderous Chu Lingxi.

"Amazing! Linghu Hongfei's battle power seems to have increased a lot yet again!"

"Increased a lot? That's more than a lot, that's simply too much."

"Chu Lingxi is no ordinary person. Her battle power is extremely powerful to begin with."

"Yet, before Linghu Hongfei, she is simply like a toddler. The disparity between them is simply too vast..."

In merely a short exchange, the crowd had turned from exclaiming in admiration toward Chu Lingxi's cultivation to exclaiming in admiration toward Linghu Hongfei's overwhelming power.

Even though the two of them both had the cultivation of rank four Exalted, even though Chu Lingxi was a peak existence even among rank four Exalted, the disparity between her and Linghu Hongfei was simply too obvious.

Chapter 3738 - The Furious Gu Mingyuan

"Bastard! Fight back! Why are you dodging?!"

Seeing that her attacks were unable to cause any harm to Linghu Hongfei, Chu Lingxi became increasingly furious.

She felt that she was being humiliated by him.

She was debating whether she should increase her cultivation to defeat Linghu Hongfei or not.

That said, she was slightly hesitant. After all, Linghu Hongfei also possessed the ability to increase his cultivation.

“Clank~~~”

At the moment when she was still pondering, the Incomplete Exalted Armament in Chu Lingxi’s hand suddenly became unmovable.

Looking towards her Incomplete Exalted Armament, Chu Lingxi’s expression changed enormously.

She was astonished to discover that the Incomplete Exalted Armament in her hand had been fixed in place by Linghu Hongfei using two fingers.

Upon discovering this, an enormously powerful oppressive might was released from Linghu Hongfei’s body. Like a tsunami, it engulfed Chu Lingxi.
n-)0velb1n

That was... the oppressive might of a rank five Exalted!!!

The rank five Exalted-level oppressive might engulfed Chu Lingxi the instant it was released.

“How could this be?”

“How could this guy’s oppressive might be so strange?”

At that moment, Chu Lingxi’s expression changed enormously.

She discovered that she was not only engulfed by Linghu Hongfei’s oppressive might, but she was completely sealed by that oppressive might, much akin to being trapped in a cage.

Not to mention her treasure capable of increasing her cultivation, Chu Lingxi was unable to even use her Lightning Mark and Lightning Armor.

Linghu Hongfei’s oppressive might was extremely strange, as it was capable of completely suppressing Chu Lingxi, making her unable to activate the other powers she possessed.

He was simply denying Chu Lingxi even the ability to turn the situation around.

As for what brought Chu Lingxi the greatest unease, it was how Linghu Hongfei had clearly increased his cultivation to rank five Exalted, but there was no trace of change on Linghu Hongfei's body.

This meant that he had not used any special abilities to increase his cultivation.

Instead, his actual cultivation was that of a rank five Exalted.

"Bastard, you actually concealed your cultivation?!"

Fury was surging in Chu Lingxi's eyes as she looked to the current Linghu Hongfei. She was feeling increasingly unwell.

She had realized that Linghu Hongfei had not been going all-out when she had fought him previously.

Merely, she did not anticipate that he had concealed his cultivation so much.

This made it so that Chu Lingxi had no choice but to recognize the disparity between herself and Linghu Hongfei.

Not only would she be defeated, but she was also destined to be defeated very miserably.

As for Linghu Hongfei, he was also thinking that victory was within his grasp.

He was so confident that he actually did not bother to even look at Chu Lingxi. Instead, he turned his gaze to the Chu Heavenly Clan. "Chu Feng, if you don't come out, this girl's eyes shall be destroyed again."

"What? Linghu Hongfei is planning to dig out Chu Lingxi's eyes again?"

Hearing those words, the Chu Heavenly Clansmen and even the bystanders all felt their hearts grow tense.

It was merely a challenge. His opponent had lost. With that, shouldn't one stop? Why must one be so cruel as to dig out their opponent's eyes?

However, Linghu Hongfei simply did not care about what the bystanders were thinking. He turned to the direction of the Chu Heavenly Clan and shouted

loudly, “Chu Feng, as a man, are you really planning to have a woman shield you twice?!”

“Your opponent is me!!!”

Chu Lingxi shouted furiously. At the same time, her body began to tremble as an overwhelming aura gathered within her.

Chu Lingxi was trying her hardest to activate her Lightning Mark or Lightning Armor to increase her cultivation.

Unfortunately, Linghu Hongfei’s oppressive might was simply too strange. Even though his oppressive might had only engulfed her, she was unable to utilize any of her powers.

All of them were sealed.

She was being completely suppressed.

“Chu Lingxi, it’s useless.”

“You are simply no match for me. No matter how much you struggle, you will not be able to change that fact.”

“Taking into consideration that you’re a woman, I will give you a chance today.”

“Kneel before me and admit your wrong and I, Linghu Hongfei, will spare you,” Linghu Hongfei said to Chu Lingxi.

“Someone is indeed going to kneel and beg for forgiveness today. However, that person is not Chu Lingxi. Instead, it’s you, Linghu Hongfei!”

Right at that moment, a furious shout exploded in the sky.

Following that, a figure walked out of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Seeing that person, the expressions of the crowd all changed. Even the experts from the Linghu Heavenly Clan were alerted upon seeing that person.

The reason for that was because that person was someone that very few people in the Ancestral Martial Starfield would dare to look down on.

She was Chu Lingxi's mother, the princess of the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan, Gu Mingyuan.

"I'd nearly forgotten that Chu Lingxi is no ordinary person of the younger generation. She is also someone who possesses an enormous background."

After Gu Mingyuan appeared, a trace of expectation appeared in the eyes of the bystanders.

After all, Gu Mingyuan was a very influential person.

Reportedly, even the Starfield Master Realm of the past would have to give her face.

Because of this, they wanted to know if the situation would change now that Gu Mingyuan had appeared.

"Woosh~~~"

However, right after Gu Mingyuan appeared, two aged individuals immediately blocked her way.

After those two people appeared, the surrounding air became very complicated.

The reason for that was because those two individuals were both rank one Utmost Exalted.

They were the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Supreme Elders, Linghu Wentai and Linghu Boyuan.

"Gu Mingyuan, this is a sparring match between people of the younger generations, you shouldn't interfere in this, no?" Linghu Boyuan said to Gu Mingyuan.

His attitude was very rude. His tone was filled with threat.

After hearing those words, the crowd realized that the Linghu Heavenly Clan was not planning to give Gu Mingyuan face.

With the situation being like that, the crowd began to sympathize with Gu Mingyuan.

After all, no matter how powerful she might be, she was still only a rank one Utmost Exalted.

Whilst her cultivation was extremely powerful and top-rated in the Ancestral Martial Starfield, there were plenty of people in the Linghu Heavenly Clan that could contend against her.

“Scram!”

To everyone’s surprise, Gu Mingyuan coldly shouted down Linghu Boyuan’s threat.

Gu Mingyuan’s reaction shocked both the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen and the bystanders.

To publicly shout at a Supreme Elder of the Linghu Heavenly Clan would not only be disrespectful towards that Supreme Elder, but it would also be disrespectful towards the entire Linghu Heavenly Clan.

Sure enough, the expression of Linghu Wentai who stood before Gu Mingyuan turned gloomy. He said to Gu Mingyuan, “Gu Mingyuan, watch yourself!”

“In the past, the Wuming Clan was cowardly and easily bullied. They allowed your disrespectful behavior.”

“However, the Ancestral Martial Starfield is now under our Linghu Heavenly Clan’s control. You’d best curb your temper, otherwise...”

“Wuuahh~~~”

However, before Linghu Wentai could finish his words, he let out a scream.

When the crowd reacted to what had happened, they were astonished to discover that Linghu Wentai was sent flying.

But, Linghu Wentai clearly possessed the same rank one Utmost Exalted cultivation as Gu Mingyuan!!!

Chapter 3739 - I’ll Be Your Opponent

“Strange.”

Soon, the crowd realized that something was amiss.

They were astonished to discover that Gu Mingyuan was emitting a dazzling white light from her body.

With that dazzling light, Gu Mingyuan not only appeared particularly divine, but her aura had also changed.

At that moment, Gu Mingyuan's cultivation was no longer that of a rank one Utmost Exalted. Instead, it had increased to rank two Utmost Exalted.

“Heavens, Gu Mingyuan's cultivation actually increased!”

“Is it the power of her bloodline?”

“The Ancient Clan's Bloodline is actually this powerful?”

Suddenly, the surrounding crowd that filled the sky and ground all burst into an uproar.

As martial cultivators from the Ancestral Martial Starfield, they all knew one thing.

Regardless of whether it might be Heavenly Bloodlines, Divine Power or other bloodlines, regardless of how many abilities one might be able to unlock before the Utmost Exalted realm, they would all be sealed once one reached the Utmost Exalted realm.

In other words, no matter how enormous the disparity between martial cultivators was before Utmost Exalted realm, everyone would start on the same starting line again once they reached the Utmost Exalted realm.

Upon reaching the Utmost Exalted realm, all of their various powers and abilities would be sealed. If one wanted to regain the ability to increase one's cultivation, one must unseal those abilities again.

However, unsealing abilities was easier said than done.

Till that point, in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield, there had never been an Utmost Exalted-level cultivator capable of unsealing their sealed powers.

However, the crowd now discovered that someone was actually capable of that feat. As for that person... It was Gu Mingyuan.

“Amazing! She actually unsealed her ability at the Utmost Exalted realm.”

“As expected from someone who used to be one of the two most dazzling geniuses of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“Gu Mingyuan, her reputation is truly well justified, truly well justified!!!”

Many people were stupefied by Gu Mingyuan’s ability.

The reason for that was because Gu Mingyuan could be said to have accomplished something unprecedented in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

She once again fully displayed her talents. Even Linghu Hongfei was eclipsed by her talent.

“Gu Mingyuan, you are truly someone that cannot be looked down upon.”

“You’ve actually managed to train your Ancient Clan’s Bloodline to such a level.”

Right at the moment when the crowd were all exclaiming in admiration at how powerful Gu Mingyuan was, a voice suddenly sounded in the sky.

Turning toward the voice, the crowd noticed that a figure was actually standing on the deck of the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s main warship.

Seeing that person, the crowd present all felt deep veneration.

It was impossible for them to not recognize that person.

That person was Linghu Zhishi.

As for that Linghu Zhishi, he was not only the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, but he was also currently the strongest expert in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Even though Gu Mingyuan possessed the power of her bloodline and had increased her cultivation to rank two Utmost Exalted, everyone knew that Linghu Zhishi’s cultivation was that of a rank two Exalted to begin with.

“Linghu Zhishi, you’ve failed to instruct your younger generation properly. Today, I, Gu Mingyuan, shall teach him a lesson on your behalf,” Gu Mingyuan said to Linghu Zhishi.

“Is that so?” To the crowd’s surprise, Linghu Zhishi merely let out a faint smile.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, Linghu Zhishi’s gaze shifted. In the next moment, a boundless oppressive might enveloped the surroundings.

Although Linghu Zhishi’s oppressive might was also that of a rank two Utmost Exalted, the crowd was able to tell that his oppressive might was clearly stronger than Gu Mingyuan’s.

“Damn it!”

At the same time, the crowd was able to clearly see Gu Mingyuan struggling and shouting angrily in midair.

However, no matter how she struggled, it was to no avail. It seemed like she was being trapped in midair. *no re-ℓb*(In

“It’s useless. Even if you’ve increased your cultivation to rank two Utmost Exalted with your bloodline’s power, it does not mean that you’ve truly gained the power of a rank two Utmost Exalted.”

“Gu Mingyuan, as an elder, you should not meddle in the matters of those of the younger generation.”

“You should be like me and watch this show obediently.”

The faint smile at the corners of Linghu Zhishi’s mouth had turned into one of mocking contempt.

Hearing those words, the crowd realized why Gu Mingyuan was struggling.

It turned out, she had been trapped!!!

Obviously, the person who had trapped Gu Mingyuan was the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, Linghu Zhishi.

Seeing Linghu Zhishi who stood atop the warship, the crowd not only felt astonished, but many people even began to sweat cold sweat out of fear.

In the past, the strongest expert of the Ancestral Martial Starfield was the Wuming Clan’s Clan Chief, Wuming Doutian.

However, the Wuming Clan had been defeated by the Linghu Heavenly Clan. It was also unknown if Wuming Doutian was still alive.

The person who had defeated Wuming Doutian was none other than Linghu Zhishi.

Seeing the proud and cunning Linghu Zhishi, the crowd realized that he was the real strongest expert in the Ancestral Martial Starfield. Even though Gu Mingyuan possessed exceptional talent, she was destined to not be a match for him.

Turning toward Chu Lingxi and Linghu Hongfei, the crowd began to have a different sort of feeling.

Chu Lingxi had challenged Linghu Hongfei and ended up being completely suppressed by him. At that moment, her situation was extremely dangerous.

Gu Mingyuan had challenged the Linghu Heavenly Clan and ended up being suppressed by Linghu Zhishi, and also ended up in an extremely dangerous situation.

Both the mother and daughter were rare geniuses. That was an undeniable truth.

Unfortunately, they had challenged the wrong opponents...

“Chu Lingxi, it seems like your mother is even more rude than you.”

“How about this, I won’t make you kneel to admit your mistake. Instead, if your mother kneels and admits her mistake, I will spare you.” Linghu Hongfei said to Chu Lingxi.

Ridicule. Oh what sort of ridicule this was? Chu Lingxi was unwilling to kneel herself, how could she possibly be willing to urge her mother to kneel?

This was simply an insult towards her integrity.

“Pah~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Lingxi opened her mouth and spat out a mouthful of spit towards Linghu Hongfei.

Chu Lingxi was extremely furious. However, there was nothing she could do. Spitting at Linghu Hongfei was the only method she could take to fight back against Linghu Hongfei.

Unfortunately, Linghu Hongfei effortlessly dodged the incoming spit.

However, after Linghu Hongfei turned around, an incomparably sinister look appeared in his eyes.

“Since you are so incapable of discerning good from bad, I will have you pay the price for your actions.”

“Woosh~~~”

After he finished saying those words, Linghu Hongfei extend two fingers and thrust them towards Chu Lingxi’s eyes.

He was really planning to dig out Chu Lingxi’s eyes!!!

Most despairing of all, Gu Mingyuan and the Chu Heavenly Clansmen were simply unable to do anything to help her. Even Chu Lingxi herself was unable to dodge the attack.

Chu Lingxi’s body had been completely trapped by Linghu Hongfei’s oppressive might. She was unable to move in the slightest. She could only look on helplessly as Linghu Hongfei’s fingers moved towards her eyes.

Many people closed their eyes or turned around upon seeing this scene.

They simply could not steel themselves to look at Chu Lingxi, a young woman, having her eyes forcibly dug out.

Since they were unable to change what would happen, they’d decided to avoid it...

“Paaa~~~”

However, after the crowd turned to avoid what was coming, they discovered that... the scream that they were anticipating did not sound.

Thus, those people turned their gazes back to Chu Lingxi and Linghu Hongfei.

“That is?”

Upon doing so, the crowd's expressions all changed enormously.

This was true for even the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen!!!

In fact, even Linghu Hongfei revealed a slight change in his expression.

The reason for that was because a person had appeared before Linghu Hongfei.

It was that person who had blocked Linghu Hongfei's attack and saved Chu Lingxi.

As for that person, he was someone that practically everyone present knew!!!

"Linghu Hongfei, from this point forward, I, Chu Feng, shall be your opponent," said Chu Feng.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3740 - The Confused Crowd - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3740 - The Confused Crowd

Chapter 3740 - The Confused Crowd

"Chu Feng! It's Chu Feng!!!"

"His cultivation is actually that of a rank five Exalted?!"

After a brief moment of tranquility, the surroundings burst into a complete uproar.

After confirming that it was truly Chu Feng, many people became so excited that their hair stood erect.

After all, Chu Feng was the other main character of this battle appointment

If he didn't appear, the appointment would have become meaningless.

And suddenly, the two main characters were both present. With this, the show would finally begin.

That was precisely the reason why the crowd felt so excited.

Most importantly, Chu Feng had also released his cultivation when he blocked Linghu Hongfei's attack.

Everyone was able to sense that his cultivation was that of a rank five Exalted.

Even though there had been rumors regarding Chu Feng the entire time, even though it was known that his cultivation continued to advance by leaps and bounds, it remained that his cultivation was known to only be that of a rank three Exalted three months before.

At that time, Chu Feng was still in the Chu Heavenly Clan, and had sparred against Chu Lingxi.

The sparring match between them was witnessed by many people.

However, in a mere three months, Chu Feng's cultivation had increased by two levels.

It would only be natural for the crowd to feel astonished by how quickly his cultivation increased.

"Never would I have imagined that Chu Feng would actually come."

"Could it be, he hasn't heard of Exalted Heavenly Fate's prophecy?"

"Or could it be that he's really so fearless that he decided to come fight knowing full well that he will die?"

Although the crowd were feeling very excited upon seeing Chu Feng, they still felt that he would not be Linghu Hongfei's match.

It was not only because they were confident in Linghu Hongfei; it was mainly because of that prophecy.

After all, throughout so many years, Exalted Heavenly Fate's prophecies had never been wrong.

Everything that he had prophesied would come to fruition.

Thus, Exalted Heavenly Fate's prophecies were seen as the will of the heavens by the crowd. No one ever doubted them.

That being said, regardless of what the crowd was thinking, their eyes were still fixed on Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei.

They knew that Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei could begin fighting at any moment. None of them wanted to miss out on witnessing the battle.

“Lingxi, step back first,” Chu Feng said to Chu Lingxi behind him.

“But...”

Worry filled Chu Lingxi’s eyes. After all, she had just personally experienced how powerful Linghu Hongfei was.

Her current cultivation was that of a rank four Exalted. Yet, there was still an enormous difference akin to heaven and earth between her and Linghu Hongfei, so much so that Linghu Hongfei did not even have to attack her, as his oppressive might alone was sufficient to utterly suppress her.

Although Chu Feng’s cultivation was stronger than hers, she was still uncertain as to whether he could win against Linghu Hongfei.

She kept having a feeling that Linghu Hongfei had yet to show his full strength.

Seemingly sensing Chu Lingxi’s worry, Chu Feng smiled and said, “Rest assured.”

Even though Chu Lingxi had no idea exactly what sort of hidden trump card Chu Feng possessed, the worry in her heart eased greatly upon seeing his smile.

There was nothing she could do about it. After all, that man was always capable of easing her mind.

No matter how dangerous the situation might be, a smile from Chu Feng would be able to ease Chu Lingxi’s heart. This was the sense of security he brought her.

“Be careful, that Linghu Hongfei is strange.”

“His oppressive might is capable of binding me. Thus, you must not hold back. You must use all your abilities from the very start. Otherwise... if you’re

restricted by his oppressive might, the situation will become very bad for you," Chu Lingxi said to Chu Feng through voice transmission.

At the same time as she said those words, Chu Lingxi was already walking toward the Chu Heavenly Clan.

"Clan Chief Linghu, is this showdown going to be fair?" At that moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, Linghu Zhishi.

"Of course it needs to be fair," said Linghu Zhishi.

"In that case, Clan Chief Linghu, can you withdraw your oppressive might?"

"With your oppressive might enveloping the surrounding region, I'm afraid that it will affect me," said Chu Feng.

Linghu Zhishi smiled lightly upon hearing Chu Feng's words.

He naturally understood what he was trying to do. He knew that it was not that Chu Feng was afraid of his oppressive might.

Instead, he was trying to use this excuse to set Gu Mingyuan free.

Although Linghu Zhishi's oppressive might did not pose any threat to anyone else, it was different for Gu Mingyuan.

Gu Mingyuan had been suppressed by Linghu Zhishi's oppressive might the entire time. Naturally, she would be feeling very unwell.

One could tell that just by Gu Mingyuan's current appearance.

"Chu Feng, you are mistaken. The reason why I've released my oppressive might is precisely for the sake of fairness."

"If I don't release my oppressive might, I'm afraid that someone will try to kill my clansmen."

Linghu Zhishi looked to Gu Mingyuan as he said those words.

Gu Mingyuan's current appearance was very scary. Even though her freedom and power were both suppressed, her killing intent was not.

She resembled a raging tigress. If she were to escape from her shackles, she would definitely unleash a massacre.

“Senior, please set your mind at ease and go rest. Allow me to take care of the rest,” Chu Feng said to Gu Mingyuan.

After Chu Feng said those words, many people revealed mocking smiles.

This was especially true for the people that knew Gu Mingyuan’s personality. They all felt his words to be ridiculous.

Who was Gu Mingyuan? She was truly a person of explosive temper. When she exploded in rage, she would refuse to give anyone face.

Ignoring the matters of the past, just a short while before, Gu Mingyuan had injured a Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Supreme Elder in her rage.

And at this moment, she had completely erupted with anger. With Gu Mingyuan like that, she had completely lost her sense of reason.

Likely, no one in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield would be able to urge her to stop.

Thus, how could a mere person of the younger generation possibly be able to?

“Very well.”

To everyone’s surprise. Gu Mingyuan actually voiced her agreement.

“Very well? Am I mishearing things? Gu Mingyuan seems to have agreed to Chu Feng’s persuasion?”

The crowd simply did not dare to believe their ears after hearing Gu Mingyuan’s ‘very well.’

Thus, they all turned their gazes to her in the hopes of confirming this matter.

Upon doing so, the crowd were astonished to discover that Gu Mingyuan had not only withdrawn her killing intent, but her fierce appearance had also grown much calmer.

Gu Mingyuan had calmed down. She was reacting like nothing had happened.

“This is simply unbelievable.”

“Exactly what sort of relationship do they possess?”

Seeing that Gu Mingyuan actually really listened to Chu Feng, the crowd’s gazes became complicated as they looked back at him.

They suddenly recalled that it was not only Gu Mingyuan that listened to Chu Feng, but Chu Lingxi had also listened to Chu Feng earlier.

This pair of mother and daughter were both people with explosive tempers. Furthermore, both of them were fearless of death.

Just earlier, the crowd had all witnessed how fearless Gu Mingyuan and Chu Lingxi were.

Yet, such a fearless mother and daughter actually ended up listening to Chu Feng like that. At the same time as the crowd were astonished, they were also feeling very confused.

Feeling confused, the crowd began to ponder. The more they pondered, the more the crowd felt that the relationship between Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan and her daughter Chu Lingxi was extraordinary.

“Gu Mingyuan, you’d best know your place. If you decide to interfere without permission again, I will not be simply restricting you,” Linghu Zhishi said to Gu Mingyuan. He removed his oppressive might after saying those words.

As for Gu Mingyuan, she directly returned to the Chu Heavenly Clan’s camp without saying anything.

“Chu Feng, do you feel the situation to be fair now?” Linghu Hongfei asked Chu Feng. Both his tone and his expression were taunting.

“It’s fair now,” said Chu Feng.

“Can we begin then?” asked Linghu Hongfei.

“What’s there to rush? Judging from the timing of things, there’s still some time before the three month appointment arrives,” said Chu Feng.

“What? Are you trying to stall for time?”

"It's useless. No matter how you try to stall for time, the outcome is already determined," said Linghu Hongfei.

"Stall for time? I'm already here, what use is there in stalling for time?" Chu Feng chuckled. Then, he waved his sleeve, and an item flew into the air.

It was a scroll. After flying out from Chu Feng's sleeve, the scroll immediately opened.

Once the scroll opened, the crowd were able to clearly see the words written on it.

The first line of words that came into their view were 'Life And Death Contract.'

Chapter 3741 - Provoking The Prophecy

"Life and death contract!!!"

"It's actually a life and death contract?! Chu Feng... exactly what is he planning to do?"

"How is he so confident that he will be able to defeat Linghu Hongfei that he's willing to actually bet with his life?"

"No, he must've heard about Exalted Heavenly Fate's prophecy. He knows that he won't be able to escape death should he show up today. That's why... he plans to risk everything."

"Since he's going to die anyways, he might as well give his all. Perhaps he might be able to drag others to share his fate before his death. It would appear that he has come here with a determination of certain death."

"But, if that is the case, it'll truly be as Exalted Heavenly Fate has prophesied. This won't be an ordinary match. Instead, it will be a battle to the death."

"According to Linghu Hongfei's personality, he might be lenient toward Chu Feng should they not sign a life and death contract. However, if they are to sign it, Chu Feng will definitely not survive."

At that moment, the countless people that filled the sky and the ground all had the same sort of expression.

None of them were able to understand Chu Feng's decision.

"You want to sign a life and death contract? What's this? Have you grown tired of living and want me to send you off?" asked Linghu Hongfei.

"If I am to lose, you can kill me. However, you can rest assured. If you are to lose, I won't demand your life," said Chu Feng.

"What? He doesn't want the life of his opponent in a life and death contract? What is this?"

The crowd were all confused by Chu Feng's words.

"Chu Feng, are you trying to shame me?" asked Linghu Hongfei.

"No. I don't want your life, I merely want your eyes."

Chu Feng pointed at Linghu Hongfei's eyes.

Once Chu Feng said those words, the crowd came to a sudden realization.

This was especially true for Chu Lingxi. Her eyes revealed a different sort of expression.

Chu Feng's intentions were extremely clear. He was there to avenge Chu Lingxi.

"So that's the case. Revenge, is it? Unfortunately, although your way of thinking is correct, you lack the strength to back it up," Linghu Hongfei shook his head in a mocking manner.

"Do you know how strong I am?" asked Chu Feng.

Chu Feng not only had a smile on his face as he asked those words, but he was also emitting a sort of aura from all over when he said those words.

It was the aura of confidence, enormous confidence!!!

Seeing Chu Feng looking like that, Linghu Hongfei's expression changed. Soon, great displeasure appeared in his eyes.

"It would appear that you're determined to court death today."

“If I am to sign that life and death contract, your life will be mine.”

“Don’t say that I, Linghu Hongfei, did not give you a chance. If you are to back out now, it’ll still not be too late,” said Linghu Hongfei.

“I’ve already signed my name. It’s your turn,” said Chu Feng.

“Humph.” Linghu Hongfei let out a cold snort. Then, he raised his finger toward the sky.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Using his finger as the writing brush, he signed his name, Linghu Hongfei, onto the life and death contract.

“Woosh~~~”

After Linghu Hongfei signed his name, Chu Feng made another shocking action.

He did not put the life and death contract away. Instead, he tossed it to someone present.

That person was Exalted Heavenly Fate.

Chu Feng’s action confused the crowd.

According to their knowledge, Chu Feng didn’t seem to have any relationship with Exalted Heavenly Fate.

“Senior, I’ll have to trouble you to bear witness to this.” Chu Feng clasped his fist at Exalted Heavenly Fate.

At that moment, the crowd finally realized Chu Feng’s intentions.

He was not only seeking out Exalted Heavenly Fate to bear witness to what would happen.

Although Chu Feng was acting very courteously, many people present felt that he was provoking Exalted Heavenly Fate.

Chu Feng was refusing to accept his fate, and questioning Exalted Heavenly Fate’s prophecy.

His request to 'bear witness' was to tell Exalted Heavenly Fate that he, Chu Feng, did not believe in the prophecy of his death.

Since Exalted Heavenly Fate had prophesied his death, Chu Feng had decided to deliberately sign a life and death contract to show the crowd whether he, Chu Feng, would die or not.

"That Chu Feng is truly an imposing fellow."

"That child is quite someone."

Seeing Chu Feng acting in such a manner, some people began to wonder if he would truly be able to shatter the prophecy.

Chu Feng was simply too imposing.

Faced with Linghu Hongfei, faced with the Linghu Heavenly Clan, faced with the strongest power of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, Chu Feng showed no signs of fear. On top of that, his imposing behavior made it seem like everything before them belonged to him, that he would undoubtedly come out victorious.

"Young friend Chu Feng, do you think that this old man's prophecy is a scam?"

"My prophecy is not a scam. My prophecy is real. I am not deceiving anyone."

"Young friend Chu Feng, you should've never shown up today."

"More than that, you should've never forced young friend Linghu Hongfei to sign this life and death contract."

"This old man prophesied your end many days ago," Exalted Heavenly Fate said to Chu Feng.

Once Exalted Heavenly Fate said those words, the crowd began to passionately discuss amongst themselves. Once again, their opinions began to sway.

Exalted Heavenly Fate had never prophesied wrongly.

Even though Chu Feng possessed great composure and confidence, the outcome was already determined.

Upon thinking of how Chu Feng would end up dying regardless of how much he struggled, the crowd suddenly felt the match to be less interesting.

A story where the outcome was already known would inevitably cause people to lose interest.

“Senior, is there any issue with this life and death contract?”

Chu Feng completely ignored Exalted Heavenly Fate’s words, and instead questioned him about the life and death contract.

Hearing those words, Exalted Heavenly Fate narrowed his brows.

He was someone who enjoyed a special status in the Ancestral Martial Starfield. His status had nothing to do with his strength. It was all because he possessed the ability to foresee the future.

By relying on that ability, everyone in the Ancestral Martial Starfield would have to show him respect.

Their respect was not only towards him. More than him, they were respecting his prophecies.

He was unable to sense any respect from Chu Feng.

However, as a senior, he could not deliberately make things difficult for him just because he was not given respect.

Besides, Chu Feng was acting very courteous and respectful on the surface. Thus, he could not find any fault with his behavior.

As such, Exalted Heavenly Fate said, “There’s no issue.”

“Since there’s no issue, might senior be troubled to bear witness to it?” asked Chu Feng again.

“That’s no issue,” said Exalted Heavenly Fate.

Although he felt displeased by Chu Feng’s lack of respect, he could not openly reveal it. Thus, he put the life and death contract away.

That said, the servants beside Exalted Heavenly Fate were able to see that his hand was trembling. They realized that Exalted Heavenly Fate was actually angry.

Chapter 3742 - Chu Feng Being Suppressed

Actually, Exalted Heavenly Fate was not a narrow-minded individual. In fact, he didn't possess any antipathy for Chu Feng.

Otherwise, when he prophesied the fated battle, he would not have deliberately concealed it.

In fact, his decision to deliberately reveal the outcome of the prophecy was so that Chu Feng would back away.

In the end, Exalted Heavenly Fate was a kindhearted person. He was not someone with evil desires.

However, there was one thing that Exalted Heavenly Fate could not tolerate - his prophecies being called into question.

To Exalted Heavenly Fate, his prophecies were his firm belief, something that he refused to allow anyone to blaspheme.

Chu Feng seemed to know what Exalted Heavenly Fate was thinking. Thus, he did not provoke Exalted Heavenly Fate, and was instead merely attacking his so-called prophecy.

Chu Feng did not believe in the prophecy because he refused to resign himself to fate.

That said, Chu Feng actually also held respect for Exalted Heavenly Fate.

"Chu Feng, you are truly one to refuse to shed a tear until you witness your coffin," Linghu Hongfei said to Chu Feng.

"For things like prophecies, I might believe them if they're said about other people. However, if the prophecy is about me, I will not believe it."

"The reason for that is because I, Chu Feng, am the only person who gets to decide my fate."

"If I had resigned myself to fate, I would not be standing here today."

"Instead, I would remain an unremarkable outer sect disciple in a second-rate sect in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm," Chu Feng said with a faint smile.

Hearing those words, the people present were all startled. They seemed to have thought of something.

Even the Chu Heavenly Clansmen reacted in such a manner. A feeling of self-blame appeared in their hearts.

This was especially true for the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. Deep shame appeared on his face.

Chu Feng came from a Lower Realm. On his journey, he had naturally experienced countless tribulations and dangers.

He did not grow up protected by his clan. Instead, he had relied on himself and killed his way up, one step at a time.

If he had resigned himself to fate, he would not be standing before them.

"Very well spoken. Since that's the case, I will take your life today."

As Linghu Hongfei spoke, he took a step forward and attacked Chu Feng.

The distance between him and Chu Feng was extremely close to begin with. Thus, his attack arrived at Chu Feng in an instant.

He did not use any special technique. Instead, he was purely attacking Chu Feng with his fists and feet.

However, his punches were akin to iron hammers capable of splitting open mountains, and his kicks were akin to iron whips capable of sweeping through space itself.

His entire body was akin to the devastating destructive power of weapons. If struck by any of them, one would either be killed or seriously injured.

That said, Chu Feng was no ordinary individual either.

He did not attempt to dodge Linghu Hongfei's ferocious attacks. Instead, he continued to take steps forward to confront Linghu Hongfei.

"Clank, clank, clank~~~" n.)o./V-)e-.1.-b--1.(n

Even though the two of them were clearly made of flesh and bones, their collision created sounds akin to steel colliding.

Both Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei possessed top rated battle power. Neither their speed nor their strength differed much.

The two of them fought back and forth in a stalemate.

“Amazing! Sure enough, the two of them are the Ancestral Martial Starfield’s top geniuses.”

Seeing the battle between Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei, the crowd were unable to help but think back to the earlier battle between Chu Lingxi and Linghu Hongfei.

At the beginning, the two of them were both rank four Exalted. However, Chu Lingxi’s attacks were easily dodged by Linghu Hongfei.

Even though Linghu Hongfei was not injured by Chu Feng, the two of them were at least exchanging blows.

Although Chu Feng was unable to cause any injuries to Linghu Hongfei, Linghu Hongfei was also unable to cause any harm to Chu Feng.

Their confrontation was different from the confrontation between Chu Lingxi and Linghu Hongfei, where Linghu Hongfei managed to defeat her with only his oppressive might.

“Chu Feng’s battle power seems to have increased again.”

“Or could it be, he actually really held himself back so much when he sparred with me back then?” Chu Lingxi spoke quietly as she looked at the battle between Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei.

“It’s most likely that his battle power has strengthened,” said Gu Mingyuan, who stood beside her.

“Mother, how are you so certain?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“Linghu Hongfei has gone through some sort of unknown transformation. You’ve fought against him before, you should’ve sensed it.”

“And now, such a transformation has also appeared on Chu Feng. Although I don’t know what he has experienced, it remains that he has become much stronger,” said Gu Mingyuan.

“In other words, the gap between myself and that guy has increased again?”

Chu Lingxi looked towards Chu Feng again. Her gaze became complicated.

That said, she would not wish for Chu Feng to become weaker just because he had become stronger than her.

On the contrary, she only wished for him to become more powerful. She wanted him to be stronger than what she saw, stronger than she could imagine.

Only in that way would he be able to defeat the unfathomably powerful Linghu Hongfei.

“That said, it seems like Chu Feng is on the verge of losing.”

As the two of them continued to fight, the crowd discovered that the battle between the two was no longer equal. The scale of victory was tipping towards Linghu Hongfei.

Even though his attacks were either blocked or dodged by Chu Feng, even though Chu Feng was still completely uninjured, he was beginning to show difficulty.

“It would appear that there’s still a disparity between them.”

Seeing that Chu Feng was beginning to gradually retreat, showing signs of defeat and being suppressed by Linghu Hongfei, the crowd began to feel that Exalted Heavenly Fate’s prophecy might come true.

Even though Chu Feng was very powerful, Linghu Hongfei was, unfortunately, even stronger.

“Should I take care of him?”

As Chu Feng was retreating, a voice suddenly entered his ears.

That voice was not a voice transmission. However, only Chu Feng could hear it.

The reason for that was because that voice came from his world spirit space.

“Girl, you’ve awoken?”

Focused on his battle against Linghu Hongfei, Chu Feng was not paying any attention to his world spirit space.

However, he suddenly discovered that that girl Yu Sha had finally completed her training, and had woken up.

Furthermore, that girl had gained a certain harvest. Her cultivation had reached rank four Exalted.

She had made three successive breakthroughs. This sort of harvest could be said to be enormous.

“Never would I have imagined that little natural oddity would provide so much help to you.”

Chu Feng felt extremely joyous. He had never expected that his unexpected harvest would help Yu Sha so much.

After all, that girl was an existence that possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

Furthermore, she was able to summon a black warhorse. With that warhorse, she was able to increase her heaven-defying battle power by another level for a total of four levels of cultivation.

Back then, that girl had relied precisely on her heaven-defying battle power to fight Linghu Hongfei, then a rank two Exalted, to a tie with only the cultivation of a rank one Exalted.

“I see that you’re having some difficulty taking him on. Why don’t you have me take care of him?”

“You can consider it my thanks for helping me obtain that cultivation resource,” said Yu Sha.

“I’m actually being underestimated. Girl... today, I will have you witness how strong I, your master, am.”

“Clank~~~”

As Chu Feng spoke, he flipped his wrist, and an Incomplete Exalted Armament appeared in his hand.

With the Incomplete Exalted Armament in hand, Chu Feng's battle power immediately increased enormously. Previously being suppressed, he immediately turned the situation around.

Chapter 3743 - Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique Revealing Its Might

Seeing the cold light radiating from the sword that had appeared in Chu Feng's hand, and feeling Chu Feng's aura instantly increasing, Linghu Hongfei started to panic slightly.

After dodging Chu Feng's attack, he immediately used a martial skill to retreat far away.

In the blink of an eye, he had created a distance of several tens of thousands of meters between him and Chu Feng.

It was not that Linghu Hongfei was making a fuss over a minor issue.

Instead, Linghu Hongfei knew that even though he was able to suppress Chu Feng in their confrontation, he was only slightly superior to him.

After Chu Feng took out his Incomplete Exalted Armament, Linghu Hongfei's battle power became completely inferior to Chu Feng's.

"It would appear that their disparity is not very large."

At that moment, many martial cultivators present also noticed the disparity being smaller than anticipated.

There were even people that noticed the panic on Linghu Hongfei's face.

Although that panic lasted but an instant, it was still captured by them.

Because of that, they became certain that the disparity between Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei was not large, and that Chu Feng could turn the battle around using only an Incomplete Exalted Armament.

That said, Linghu Hongfei would naturally not allow this sort of thing to happen.

At the same time as he rapidly retreated from Chu Feng, he also took out his own Incomplete Exalted Armament.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Cold light shone everywhere as sword rays slashed out. Linghu Hongfei had rushed to attack Chu Feng again.

“Perfect timing.”

Seeing the incoming Linghu Hongfei, Chu Feng showed no signs of fear. With the Blue Jade Mandarin Duck Sword in hand, he collided with Linghu Hongfei.

With the help of their Incomplete Exalted Armaments, Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei’s battle power once again returned to its earlier state of equilibrium.

With that, the previous scene occurred again.

At the beginning, the two of them were evenly matched. However, gradually, the battle started to tilt towards Linghu Hongfei. Chu Feng was beginning to lose, and Linghu Hongfei had begun to suppress him.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right after Linghu Hongfei began to suppress Chu Feng, Chu Feng’s cultivation increased from rank five Exalted to rank six Exalted.

Lightning gathered into the character ‘Divine’ on Chu Feng’s forehead. This revealed to the crowd how Chu Feng had increased his cultivation.

Perhaps because he had learned his lesson when Chu Feng took out his Incomplete Exalted Armament previously, Linghu Hongfei was not at all caught off-guard by Chu Feng. In fact, he was waiting for him to increase his cultivation.

At practically the same instant as Chu Feng released his Lightning Mark to increase his cultivation, Linghu Hongfei also released his own Lightning Mark.

At practically the same time as Chu Feng, Linghu Hongfei increased his cultivation from rank five Exalted to rank six Exalted.

“Zzzzz~”

However, to the crowd’s surprise, after Chu Feng released his Lightning Mark, his cultivation actually increased again. At that moment, his cultivation had reached rank seven Exalted.

It was due to his Lightning Armor.

The crowd were not surprised to see Chu Feng’s Lightning Armor.

Although the Lightning Armor was a power that was very difficult to unseal, there had been people that had already seen Chu Feng’s Lightning Armor, and word of it had already spread.

Thus, the crowd already knew that Chu Feng possessed the Lightning Armor.

Although they were astonished by his talent after seeing his Lightning Armor, they were not too surprised by it.

Furthermore, they did not believe that Chu Feng would be able to change the situation of the battle simply by releasing his Lightning Armor.

After all, the crowd all knew that Linghu Hongfei also possessed the Lightning Armor.

“Zzzzz~”

Sure enough, after Chu Feng unleashed his Lightning Armor, Linghu Hongfei also unleashed his own Lightning Armor.

“Chu Feng, I possess all the abilities that you possess. How exactly are you supposed to contend against me?”

“Your outcome has been determined from the very start. No matter how much you struggle, it will all be useless,” Linghu Hongfei mocked Chu Feng.

“Is that so?”

However, facing Linghu Hongfei’s mockery, the corners of Chu Feng’s mouth rose into a strange smile.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~”

In the next moment, the sword in Chu Feng's hand grew extremely fast. It was so fast that Linghu Hongfei found it difficult to block. Chu Feng's attacks had become even sharper.

In fact, as their weapons collided, Linghu Hongfei's palms grew slightly numb. Furthermore, Linghu Hongfei was retreating. Linghu Hongfei was actually finding it difficult to receive Chu Feng's attacks.

Originally, the crowd had thought that after both Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei increased their cultivations, Chu Feng would once again be suppressed by Linghu Hongfei.

However, the current situation made them realize that they were mistaken.

The person being suppressed at that moment was no longer Chu Feng. Instead, it was Linghu Hongfei.

"How could this be? Both Linghu Hongfei and Chu Feng clearly possess the same level of cultivation. Why would their battle power be different now? Could it be... Chu Feng had deliberately concealed his battle power earlier?"

The crowd were all feeling confused. Like Linghu Hongfei himself, they had thought that he would be able to continue to suppress Chu Feng. However, the current situation of the battle had proved them wrong.

It was inevitable for them to ponder why such a transformation would suddenly occur.

Chu Feng hiding his battle power from the very start was a good justification.

"No, perhaps it wasn't that Chu Feng had deliberately concealed his cultivation. It might be due to the difference between their Self-punishment Mysterious Techniques."

Someone voiced a different opinion.

"Self-punishment Mysterious Techniques?"

The crowd were confused by that person's claim.

"Although both of them have unlocked their Lightning Marks and Lightning Armor, powers unique to Heavenly Bloodline possessors, you shouldn't forget

that 'Divine' character on Chu Feng's forehead whereas Linghu Hongfei only has the character 'Heaven,' that person said.

"Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique! So it was actually the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique!"

"How did I forget that Self-punishment Mysterious Techniques differ in strength?"

"Although the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique is the top of the line, there are a lot of younger generations in the Ancestral Martial Starfield that are trained in it."

"Yet, to be able to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique and do so successfully, there is only one person of the younger generation in the Ancestral Martial Starfield -- Chu Feng."

Hearing those words, the crowd came to a sudden realization.

Earlier, they had all felt that Linghu Hongfei would definitely come out victorious.

Because of that, they'd all overlooked Chu Feng's advantages. The greatest advantage Chu Feng possessed would be the fact that he was trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

As the most difficult Self-punishment Mysterious Technique, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique surpassed all other Self-punishment Mysterious Techniques.

Furthermore, due to its higher level, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was capable of causing an innate suppression of the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique.

Thus, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique would serve to be the greatest explanation as to why Chu Feng was able to suppress Linghu Hongfei.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

Chu Feng's attacks grew fiercer and fiercer. The sword in his hand was sending forth blade rays like a torrential rain that engulfed Linghu Hongfei.

Compared to when Chu Feng was being suppressed by him, Linghu Hongfei was being suppressed much more evidently, and left in a much more miserable state.

Although Chu Feng's attacks were extremely fierce, his facial appearance was not fierce at all. He even had a faint smile on his face.

"Linghu Hongfei, what's wrong? Why are you retreating constantly?"

"Didn't you state that you would suppress me from the start?"

"Your current appearance is truly a disappointment."

While suppressing Linghu Hongfei, Chu Feng was insulting him.

This greatly angered Linghu Hongfei, who was an egotistical person to begin with. As he possessed many abilities, he was also filled with confidence.

Thus, he was unable to tolerate being insulted by another like so!!!

"Heeeeeahhh!!!"

Suddenly, Linghu Hongfei let out a loud shout. Then he brandished the Incomplete Exalted Armament in his hand.

In an instant, an enormous blaze was sent forth from his Incomplete Exalted Armament. It rushed towards Chu Feng with the intention to kill.

That was an Immortal Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, it was extremely powerful.

Chu Feng was caught off-guard by Linghu Hongfei's sudden attack. Although he managed to block the attack, he was beaten back by it.

Chapter 3744 - Sensing The Disparity

"Chu Feng, I had originally wanted to play with you for a bit longer."

"Never would I have imagined that me deciding to have some fun with you would actually make you overthink this much."

"Did you really think you'd be able to defeat me?"

“Since you have this sort of delusion, I will have to personally extinguish it.”

“Buzz~~~”

After Linghu Hongfei finished saying those words, his cultivation increased again. From rank seven Exalted, he became a rank eight Exalted.

It was the Cyan Nethersoul!!!

Linghu Hongfei had used the Cyan Nethersoul, the powerful treasure within him.

“Is it time for the outcome to be decided?”

After Linghu Hongfei unleashed the power of his Cyan Nethersoul, many people felt that the curtains would drop on the match.

After all, according to their knowledge, Chu Feng seemed to not possess a treasure capable of increasing his cultivation.

As for treasures capable of increasing one’s cultivation, they were extremely difficult to master.

Take Linghu Hongfei’s Cyan Nethersoul for example. It was a treasure that he had fused with as an infant.

Thus, the crowd felt that even if Chu Feng had gained a treasure that could increase his cultivation, he couldn’t possibly fuse with it in such a short period of time.

If Chu Feng hadn’t fused with a treasure capable of increasing his cultivation, how could he possibly contend against Linghu Hongfei?

“Roooarr~~~”

To everyone’s surprise, after Linghu Hongfei unleashed the power of his Cyan Nethersoul, an ear-piercing roar sounded from Chu Feng’s body.

After that roar was heard, boundless flames were released from Chu Feng’s body.

The flames revolved in the air, covering the crowd’s field of view. They were truly beautiful.

However, upon closer inspection, one would notice that they were not flames at all. Instead, they were fiery-red symbols and runes.

The symbols and runes interwove with one another and radiated fiery light all over. They appeared like flames, but were not flames at all. Instead, they were high level runes.

That said, that wasn't what was important. What was important was that after the fiery runes were released, they changed form and took the form of an enormous Qilin on Chu Feng's body.

The ear-piercing roar had come from that enormous Fire Qilin.

At that moment, Chu Feng's cultivation also increased from rank seven Exalted to rank eight Exalted.

"Chu Feng actually also possesses such a cultivation treasure?!"

"Furthermore, judging from the look of things, that's a legendary treasure, the Fire Qilin Talisman!!!"

"Fire Qilin Talisman. That is indeed the Fire Qilin Talisman."

"Wasn't that treasure in Gu Mingyuan's possession the entire time? Someone once offered a high price to purchase it. Yet, Gu Mingyuan refused to sell. She actually gave it to Chu Feng?"

"It would appear that their relationship is truly extraordinary. She actually gave such a precious item away."

The crowd actually managed to recognize the power that Chu Feng had unleashed to be that of the Fire Qilin Talisman.

Their reactions were understandable too. After all, treasures capable of increasing one's cultivation were all extremely famous in the Ancestral Martial Starfield. Practically everyone had heard about them.

As for that Fire Qilin Talisman, it was particularly famous.

Although the crowd had never witnessed the power of the Fire Qilin Talisman before, they'd read its description, and knew its rough shape.

On top of that, they knew that there was an extraordinary relationship between Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan. Thus, the crowd instantly came to the conclusion that the ability Chu Feng had used was the power of the Fire Qilin Talisman.

“His relationship with Gu Mingyuan is not what’s important. What’s important is that the Fire Qilin Talisman is very difficult to handle. Yet, Chu Feng actually managed to subdue that treasure.”

“That’s right. I’ve heard that the Fire Qilin Talisman is extremely fierce, and could be considered to be one of the most difficult treasures to master.”

The crowd began to discuss things spiritedly. Although the Fire Qilin Talisman was something that Chu Feng’s father and Gu Mingyuan had obtained in a remnant, it was actually already famous to begin with.

There were a lot of records of the Fire Qilin Talisman.

That was the reason why the crowd knew about it so well even without having witnessed its might before.

According to the records, the Fire Qilin within the Fire Qilin Talisman was extremely berserk. Because of that, the Fire Qilin Talisman was an extremely difficult treasure to master.

There were even rumors that Gu Mingyuan herself had attempted to fuse with it in the past. Yet, she had failed to do so.

When even a genius of her caliber had failed to fuse with the Fire Qilin Talisman, one could well imagine how difficult it was to fuse with it.

Logically, even if Chu Feng had started to try to fuse with the Fire Qilin Talisman since his childhood, it would still be extremely difficult to succeed.

Furthermore, just several months ago, there were people that had witnessed the Fire Qilin Talisman in Gu Mingyuan’s possession.

Because of this, the crowd knew that Chu Feng must’ve fused with it only recently. In fact, it was very possible that he had successfully accomplished the fusion in only a few months’ time.

This naturally caused the crowd to feel admiration for him.

However, if they were to know that Chu Feng had actually only spent a mere hour to fuse with the Fire Qilin Talisman, they would likely feel even more disbelief.

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

At that moment, explosions sounded in the sky nonstop.

At the moment when the crowd were feeling shocked, Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei had collided again.

This time around, they were no longer exchanging simple blows, no longer simply slashing with their weapons.

The two of them were both using Immortal Techniques and Martial Skills.

With the situation being like that, the sky was soon engulfed by powerful energy ripples.

At one moment, flames filled the sky. The next moment, surging waves appeared. After that came lightning, followed by violent rainstorms.

In fact, enormous ferocious beasts and armies of several tens of thousands would appear in the sky to besiege the other fighter.

Those were all caused by martial skills or Immortal Techniques.

Martial skills and Immortal Techniques possessed countless transformations. This was the joy of cultivation.

Thus, after Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei began to use Immortal Techniques and martial skills, the battle truly became a marvelous sight to behold.

Even in terms of Immortal Techniques and martial skills, Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei possessed superb attainments.

Not to mention the people of the younger generation, even the people of the older generation felt far inferior.

Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei exchanged attacks back and forth. They were using all kinds of attacks. It was truly a marvelous sight.

Seeing their battle, even the people of the older generation that had cultivated for many years were staring in awe.

As for the people of the younger generation, they were completely stupefied, and completely stunned.

People and powers from all over the Ancestral Martial Starfield had come to witness this battle.

Naturally, among them were people of the younger generation that had fought against Chu Feng before.

Chu Huanyu, Chu Haoyan, Xia Yun'er, Song Yunfei, Li Anzhi, Li Tianyou, Tang Zhenghao and others...

They were all top geniuses from their respective powers.

During specific times in the past, they were on par with or even stronger than Chu Feng.

However, at that moment, they were unable to even see his battle clearly. They could only sense the overflowing might, but were unable to see any details of the battle.

Because of that, they all had the same sort of expressions in their eyes. From their expressions, it seemed like they'd realized that the disparity between themselves and Chu Feng had reached a level where they could not catch up.

Chapter 3745 - Yu Sha Joining The Battle

Although the battle between Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei seemed to have reached an equilibrium again after using martial skills and Immortal Techniques, Linghu Hongfei's disadvantage seemed to have lessened as the distance between them increased.

That said, those that were more attentive were able to tell that he was still at a disadvantage. Furthermore, his disadvantage was growing greater and greater.

At the beginning, a small portion of people with strong cultivations were able to see Linghu Hongfei being at a disadvantage, but later on, even the people with cultivations inferior to Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei took note of Linghu Hongfei being at a disadvantage.

Judging from their oppressive might, they all felt that it was very possible for Linghu Hongfei to be suppressed by Chu Feng.

After all, the energy ripples that filled the sky were no longer balanced. Instead, they were leaning towards Chu Feng.

Chu Feng's attacks became stronger and stronger. They actually started suppressing Linghu Hongfei.

No matter what sort of ability Linghu Hongfei used, they were all suppressed by Chu Feng.

If Chu Feng's oppressive might was still that of a boundless sea, then Linghu Hongfei's oppressive might had been reduced to a large river.

The disparity between them was definitely vast.

"Chu Feng, are you thinking that victory is within your grasp now?"

To everyone's surprise, Linghu Hongfei suddenly let out a mocking voice.

Even though he was clearly the one being suppressed, he was speaking as if victory was within his grasp.

The confidence in Linghu Hongfei's voice made the crowd realize that he was most definitely not limited to the abilities that he had shown so far.

Linghu Hongfei must still have hidden trump cards he had yet to use.

"Sure enough, didn't I say that Linghu Hongfei wouldn't be so easily suppressed?"

"It would appear that there's going to be a show to watch. It might be possible that this match will be settled."

After hearing Linghu Hongfei, many people became excited.

Due to Exalted Heavenly Fate's prophecy, they knew the outcome of the battle from the very start.

On top of that, Linghu Hongfei currently possessed a special status. Thus, the great majority of the people not only knew that he would win, but they also hoped for his victory.

In other words, they were not there for the sake of watching an exciting showdown. They were also there to personally witness how Chu Feng would be killed.

“Wuuuahhh!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng, who was holding superiority over Linghu Hongfei, did not continue to attack. Instead, his expression grew distorted, and he then stopped his attacks toward Linghu Hongfei.

He was retreating!!!

“What's going on?”

“What is Chu Feng doing?”

“Could it be that Chu Feng is frightened of Linghu Hongfei?”

“Could Chu Feng be getting cold feet, and planning to flee?”

The crowd all felt confused by his sudden reaction. This was especially true in regards to his current expression. It seemed like he had encountered some sort of trouble.

At that moment, all sorts of guesses were being voiced nonstop.

“Chu Feng, what's wrong?”

At the same time, there were countless voice transmissions reaching Chu Feng's ears.

Those voice transmissions were from Grandmaster Liangqiu, Gu Mingyuan, Chu Lingxi, Chu Xuanzhengfa, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and many other Chu Heavenly Clansmen.

They were all worried about Chu Feng. They were worried that he had encountered some sort of trouble.

In fact, their worries were correct. Chu Feng was indeed in trouble.

Inside Chu Feng's dantian was the Sacred Tree Seed.

Should his bloodline power attack it, his cultivation would be affected.

Right at that very moment, Chu Feng's bloodline power had decided to attack the Sacred Tree Seed again.

With the situation being like this, it was impossible for Chu Feng to not be affected.

Currently, his cultivation was being suppressed, and was decreasing.

"Girl, I might need for you to take over."

As Chu Feng spoke, he opened his world spirit gate.

Chu Feng knew that he was no longer able to continue the battle against Linghu Hongfei.

No matter how unwilling he might be, there was nothing he could do.

Fortunately, Yu Sha had awoken. Furthermore, she possessed the cultivation to take on Linghu Hongfei.

This could be considered to be great fortune among great misfortune.

"What's wrong with you?" Yu Sha asked.

"It's nothing. I'm going to hand him over to you," said Chu Feng.

"Oh." Yu Sha had evidently realized that something was amiss. However, since Chu Feng was unwilling to tell her what was happening, she did not ask too much about it either. Instead, she directly walked out from the world spirit gate.

"It's her. It's that world spirit again."

“Back in the Nine Dragons Upper Realm, it was precisely that world spirit that fought Linghu Hongfei to a tie.”

After Yu Sha appeared, the crowd immediately burst into an uproar.

Yu Sha was no ordinary world spirit. She was simply too famous. After all, from the battle in the Nine Dragons Upper Realm, Chu Feng had managed to become the first ranked of the Ancestral Martial Starfield alongside Linghu Hongfei all because of her.

Yu Sha’s strength had already obtained the crowd’s acknowledgement. In fact, she had become a legend to many people.

After all, back then, Yu Sha was only a rank one Exalted when she managed to tie with Linghu Hongfei, a rank two Exalted.

If one must say it, Yu Sha would actually be stronger than Linghu Hongfei.

After all, if they possessed the same cultivation, Linghu Hongfei would not be her match.

Most importantly, her current cultivation was far more powerful than before.

Everyone present could sense that her current cultivation was no longer that of a rank one Exalted. Instead, it was that of a rank four Exalted.

Back then, Yu Sha was able to tie with a rank two Exalted Linghu Hongfei as a rank one Exalted.

With this, it might be possible for her to defeat the rank five Exalted Linghu Hongfei as a rank four Exalted.

Although Yu Sha was a world spirit... she was indeed capable of being counted as a formidable opponent for Linghu Hongfei.

“It’s a bit interesting now.”

“Never would I have imagined that I’d actually be able to see you again.”

Linghu Hongfei was also rather surprised to see Yu Sha. The reason why he was surprised was likely because he did not expect her cultivation to have increased so much.

His own cultivation speed was already extremely fast.

Even if Chu Feng was able to catch up to his cultivation, he did not think that a single world spirit would be able to catch up to him.

That was the reason why he felt so surprised.

That said, after feeling surprised, a look of excitement blossomed on Linghu Hongfei's face.

Back then, if it wasn't for that world spirit, Chu Feng simply would not have been able to contend against him.

It was that world spirit that had made Chu Feng equally as famous as him.

Linghu Hongfei felt that to be a sort of humiliation.

This humiliation was all brought upon him by Chu Feng's world spirit.

Because of that, Linghu Hongfei felt deep hatred for Yu Sha.

"Perhaps today... will not only be a day where the outcome will be determined."

"Instead... it'll be a day where life and death will be determined."

A cold smile appeared on Linghu Hongfei's face when he saw Yu Sha.

Sure enough, he was thinking of killing Yu Sha the moment he saw her.

However, Yu Sha did not respond to Linghu Hongfei. She merely looked at him with a cold gaze. Furthermore, there was a trace of contempt in her gaze.

She actually did not place Linghu Hongfei in her eyes at all.

"Woosh~~~"

Suddenly, Linghu Hongfei unleashed his attack.

"Rumble~~~"

Golden radiance covered the sky and earth. That was no ordinary martial power. Instead, it was a very powerful Immortal Technique.

At practically the same instant as that golden radiance appeared, boundless black gaseous flames erupted out of Yu Sha's body like a volcanic eruption.

Yu Sha not only released the black gaseous flames, but she had also unleashed her black warhorse.

She mounted the horse and held a spear in her hand as she collided with Linghu Hongfei.

Chapter 3746 - Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens

The battle between Yu Sha and Linghu Hongfei was very different from that of Chu Feng and Linghu Hongfei's.

When Chu Feng was fighting with Linghu Hongfei, the two of them were using all sorts of martial skills in nonstop succession. Not only were their attacks mighty and overwhelming, but they had also dazzled the crowd and made them gasp in amazement with their mastery of their martial skills.

Yu Sha, on the other hand, was different. All of her abilities were composed of black gaseous flames.

Regardless of how powerful her attacks might be, they were all dark black gaseous flames.

No matter how dazzling Linghu Hongfei's attacks were, they were all stopped by the dark black gaseous flames.

One side of the sky was covered in golden light and all sorts of different powers. It was incomparably gorgeous.

As for the other side, it was composed of blazing black gaseous flames. The flames covered both the sky and the ground below, and were surging forth like countless evil spirits.

This seemed like a battle between God and the devil.

That said, the side that represented the devil was not the vicious, merciless and sinister Linghu Hongfei. Instead, it was Yu Sha.

The crowd's reactions were understandable too. After all, the auras of Asura World Spirits were closer to darkness.

In fact, the auras of Asura World Spirits were even more terrifying than that of Demon World Spirits.

The auras of Asura World Spirits were capable of raising fear from the bottom of one's heart. It was as if they represented evil itself.

“It seems like that world spirit is truly too powerful.”

“It's no wonder Chu Feng was able to tie with Linghu Hongfei that day. That world spirit is truly powerful.”

At that moment, not only were the bystanders completely dumbstruck, but even Chu Lingxi was gasping with praises.

The reason for that was because all of the abilities that Linghu Hongfei used were perfectly subdued by Yu Sha.

The fight between the two of them was not leaning toward either side. They were at a complete draw.

It was exactly the same as the situation in the Nine Dragons Upper Realm that day.

“Could it be that what happened in the Nine Dragons Upper Realm will occur again?”

The crowd were feeling somewhat panicked seeing the match turning out like this.

This was especially true for the people that had witnessed the battle in the Nine Dragons Upper Realm.

They were truly afraid that Linghu Hongfei and Chu Feng's world spirit would once again fight for ten days and nights.

“Rooaarr~”

Following an ear-piercing roar, the sky was completely covered by darkness.

It was not simply black clouds. Instead, the entire region had fallen into darkness.

Most terrifying of all, a pair of giant eyes appeared in the dark black sky.

Not only were those eyes enormous in size, but they were also eerily empty.

That terrifying gaze came from the sky, and was shooting straight for the crowd. In the end, the gaze fixed onto Linghu Hongfei.

“What is that? Could that be an ability from that world spirit?”

“What terrifying power!”

“Is that the power of an Asura World Spirit?”

When the crowd saw the transformation of the sky, they started feeling nervous. At the same time, they started to feel excitement.

They felt that the equilibrium in the battle might soon be destroyed, that the time to determine a winner had arrived.

After all, the might of the gaze in the sky was simply too powerful.

“That girl actually held back the last time around?”

Not to mention the others, even Chu Feng exclaimed in admiration upon seeing the transformation in the sky.

The atmosphere was truly akin to that of the arrival of doomsday. It seemed like everyone in the world would all be killed in the next instant.

That sort of oppressive sensation was something that even someone like Chu Feng found difficult to endure.

With the situation being like that, the crowd actually began to worry for Linghu Hongfei.

Even when Chu Feng was suppressing him earlier, the crowd did not think that he would lose.

However, now, the crowd actually felt that if Linghu Hongfei didn't reveal some sort of overwhelming ability, he might really be defeated.

After all, the might of the gaze in the sky was truly overwhelming, truly terrifying.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when the crowd were all worried, Linghu Hongfei began to emit a white light from his body.

After the white light appeared, Linghu Hongfei began to form hand seals. With that, a white mirror formed before him.

That white mirror did not appear to be anything special.

At the very least, in terms of imposing might, the mirror formed by Linghu Hongfei simply had a heaven and earth difference from Yu Sha's ability.

However, it was precisely this unremarkable mirror that brought great alarm to the crowd.

"Am I seeing things? Could that be... the strongest martial skill of the Linghu Heavenly Clan, the Vast Heavenly Lens?!!!"

At that moment, cries of alarm sounded in the sky repeatedly.

The reason why the crowd was so astonished was because the Vast Heavenly Lens was not an ordinary martial skill. Instead, it was an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill.

Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens was the Linghu Heavenly Clan's clan protection martial skill. It was also the strongest martial skill of the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

In the Ancestral Martial Starfield, there were only an extremely small number of Exalted Taboo Martial Skills. For the great majority of the powers present, they simply did not possess a martial skill of that caliber.

Exalted Taboo Martial Skills were truly priceless treasures.

Most importantly, Exalted Taboo Martial Skills were not only extremely powerful, but they were also extremely difficult to learn.

Exactly how difficult was it to learn that Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens?

Its difficulty could be seen by the four Utmost Exalted-level Supreme Elders of the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

Of the four, only Linghu Yuhua and Linghu Wentai had managed to successfully learn the Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens.

As for the other two Supreme Elders, they had trained for many years, but were unable to successfully grasp that Exalted Taboo.

One must know that they were Utmost Exalted-level experts.

As Utmost Exalted-level experts, not only were they capable of controlling Utmost Exalted-level martial power, but their understanding and familiarity toward martial skills also far surpassed Exalted experts.

However, even existences like them were unable to learn that Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens. Yet, Linghu Hongfei had actually managed to learn it.

What did this mean? It meant that Linghu Hongfei's talent had already surpassed the crowd's imagination.

"You've lost."

After unleashing the Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens, confidence filled Linghu Hongfei's face. He actually declared that Yu Sha had lost.

It could be seen that Linghu Hongfei was filled with confidence towards the Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens.

"Whether I win or lose can only be determined with strength."

Provoked by Linghu Hongfei, the uncommunicative Yu Sha actually spoke.

It would appear that she was truly enraged by his arrogance.

"Paa~~~"

Suddenly, Yu Sha clasped her palms.

The terrifying eyes in the sky disappeared.

When they reappeared, they were behind Yu Sha.

"Rumble~~~"

Suddenly, the enormous eyes shot forth two streams of black gaseous flames. They were aimed straight at Linghu Hongfei.

Not only were the flames pitch black, but they were also emitting massive destructive power.

“Humph.”

However, faced with the terrifying black gaseous flames, Linghu Hongfei showed no panic at all. Instead, the corners of his mouth rose into a cold smile.

Then, Linghu Hongfei raised his arm, and the mirror before him immediately started trembling.

As it trembled, an enormous white image appeared above Linghu Hongfei.

The image was that of the mirror before him. Merely, the mirror was over a hundred thousand meters in diameter. It could be said that the mirror had completely covered the sky.

Following that, the enormous mirror actually shot out a white light straight towards Yu Sha.

“Rumble~~~”

When the black gaseous flames arrived, the white light radiated all over.

The surroundings were separated into black and white!!!

The collision of black and white caused even the heaven and earth to tremble violently. Even though the oppressive might caused by the collision was blocked by the various experts present, and could not cause any harm to them, the oppressive might from the collision still swept out in all directions, causing many people of the younger generations to lose their footing and fall to the ground in an embarrassing state.

Chapter 3747 - Chu Feng Entering The Battle Again

After the violent trembling stopped, the sky turned bright again as the black gaseous flames started to dissipate.

The crowd was able to see that even though Yu Sha was not greatly injured, she was half kneeling in midair. Her appearance was, to a greater or lesser degree, rather sorry.

However, when they looked at Linghu Hongfei, he was not only completely uninjured, but even the Vast Heavenly Lens was still floating before him.

At that moment, Yu Sha's overwhelming black gaseous flames that had covered the sky had completely dissipated.

It was obvious which of the two of them was stronger.

"As expected of the Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens' mighty reputation is truly well justified."

"So powerful. It actually managed to defeat such a mighty attack instantly. It is truly amazing."

The crowd were all able to clearly sense how powerful Yu Sha's previous attack was.

It was something that many people of the older generation present, even those peak Exalted-level experts, would feel fear toward.

Yet, such an attack was defeated by Linghu Hongfei's Vast Heavenly Lens.

That had truly proved how powerful the Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens was.

Hearing the praises from the crowd, not only was Linghu Hongfei pleased, but even the aloof and remote strongest expert of the Ancestral martial Starfield, Linghu Zhishi, revealed a proud smile.

After all, the Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens not only represented Linghu Hongfei. It also represented the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

"I've said it already, it's your loss."

"Now do you believe me?"

Linghu Hongfei looked to the half kneeling Yu Sha and repeated what he had said previously.

"Damn it!"

Yu Sha was gnashing her teeth furiously and attempting to stand up.

However, even though she appeared to be uninjured, it took strenuous effort for her to stand up.

Seeing that, the crowd realized that Yu Sha was seriously injured. Merely, her injuries were not physical. More than physical injuries, it was her soul that had been injured.

Yu Sha's injury was truly serious. Even though she had barely managed to stand up, she was unable to even stand firm after standing back up.

Seeing that Yu Sha was about to tumble, a powerful hand suddenly grabbed her arm and supported her.

It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng was at that moment, standing before Yu Sha.

Not only was he standing before her, but he also had a look of confidence on his face again.

"Let go of me. I'll take care of him."

Yu Sha struggled to break free. As Yu Sha struggled, Chu Feng was able to sense how furious she was.

"Girl, it's enough."

"Let me handle the rest." Chu Feng said to Yu Sha.

After hearing those words, Yu Sha finally calmed down.

For some unknown reason, when she looked to the current Chu Feng, the anger in her heart calmed down a lot.

Thus, she hesitated for a moment, and then took a glance at the world spirit gate Chu Feng had opened. In the end, being supported by Chu Feng, she slowly walked into the world spirit gate.

"Huuu~~~"

After Yu Sha entered the world spirit gate, Chu Feng let out a long sigh.

Dangerous. That was truly too dangerous.

Earlier, his bloodline power had decided to attack the Sacred Tree Seed, causing his cultivation to decrease.

Even though he had hidden the change to his cultivation and did not allow anyone to detect it, he himself knew very well that he would not have been able to continue to contend against Linghu Hongfei like that.

Fortunately, his bloodline power suddenly stopped attacking the Sacred Tree Seed. With that, Chu Feng had regained his cultivation.

If he hadn't regained his cultivation, he would not have been able to contend against Linghu Hongfei.

Furthermore, with Yu Sha's personality, even if she did not even have the strength to stand up, she would still insist on fighting Linghu Hongfei.

Should that be the case, Chu Feng knew very well what the outcome would be.

That animal Linghu Hongfei wouldn't possibly hold back just because Yu Sha was a woman.

It might be possible for Yu Sha to be killed. Even if she didn't get killed, her outcome would definitely be very miserable.

After all, even though Chu Feng was not present that day, Linghu Hongfei had still dug out Chu Lingxi's eyes.

And now, Chu Feng was right before him. It was certain that Linghu Hongfei would be even more ruthless.

To Linghu Hongfei, being able to torture someone Chu Feng cared about before his eyes was something even more enjoyable.

"Linghu Hongfei, it's about time to settle this." Chu Feng said to Linghu Hongfei.

Chu Feng was planning to unleash his hidden trump card.

The reason for that was because he could not be certain if his bloodline power would attempt to act out against the Sacred Tree Seed again.

If his bloodline power attacked the Sacred Tree Seed again, Chu Feng's cultivation would once again be suppressed; would once again decrease.

Thus, he must quickly obtain victory and end the match.

"Very well. In that case, why don't you show me what sort of abilities you possess?"

Linghu Hongfei only let out a cold sneer toward Chu Feng.

He was laughing very mockingly. The gaze that he looked to Chu Feng with resembled the gaze of someone looking at a clown.

At that moment, Linghu Hongfei was filled with confidence.

His confidence stemmed from his overwhelming strength.

Earlier, the attack Yu Sha had used was so powerful already. Even many of the older generation's experts present were intimidated by it.

Yet, such an attack was dispersed by Linghu Hongfei's Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens. $n()o/-v/-e)-l)-B-(l(-n$

Because of that, Linghu Hongfei became even more confident in his Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens.

In fact, he felt that his Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens was the strongest technique in the entire world.

"Since you want to experience it, I'll let you experience it."

Chu Feng revealed a faint smile. Then, his expression turned serious.

Chu Feng began to form hand seals with his left hand, and placed his right palm onto his chest.

At the same time, Chu Feng closed his eyes.

However, right after he closed his eyes, he immediately opened them again.

"Buzz~~~"

At the moment Chu Feng opened his eyes, the people present, including Linghu Hongfei and Linghu Zhishi, all grew tense.

Judging from one's naked eye, the current Chu Feng did not appear to be any different.

He did not give rise to any sort of imposing mighty power like that of Yu Sha. In fact, he did not even create a faint white light like Linghu Hongfei.

However, at that moment, the aura emitted by Chu Feng became extremely powerful.

It was like Chu Feng had a devastating and destructive power within him.

That power was not at all any weaker than the Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens!!!

“What is going on? This sensation, it's so powerful.”

“Exactly what sort of ability does Chu Feng possess?”

At that moment, the crowd were making all sorts of guesses. At the same time, they were filled with curiosity.

Chu Feng was most definitely going to unleash a very powerful attack. Merely, they did not know exactly what sort of technique he was going to use.

At the moment when the crowd were all puzzled, Gu Mingyuan said, “It's an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill!!!”

“Exalted Taboo martial Skill?”

The crowd were once again stunned upon hearing those words.

“Chu Feng has also grasped an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill?”

“But, that shouldn't be possible. Exalted Taboo Martial Skills are very precious; not to mention the Chu Heavenly Clan, not even the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan possesses an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill.”

“Where did Chu Feng acquire that Exalted Taboo Martial Skill?”

At the same time as the crowd were feeling astonished, they were also feeling utter disbelief.

It wasn't that they were looking down on Chu Feng. Instead, to the people of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, Exalted Taboo Martial Skills were simply too precious.

Chapter 3748 - Terrifying Transformation

Right at that moment, Linghu Zhishi spoke.

"There's no mistake, that is indeed an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill." *no re-lb*(In

"To actually manage to grasp an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill at such a young age, it would appear that young friend Chu Feng has experienced a fortuitous encounter."

That said, there was a trace of greed in his eyes as he said those words.

Although he spoke pleasantly, he already had a sinister plot in his heart.

Exalted Taboo Martial Skills were extremely precious. Since one had appeared before him, he had decided to seize it for himself.

After even Linghu Zhishi said that what Chu Feng was using was an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill, the crowd had no choice but to accept it to be true.

After all, Linghu Zhishi was different from Gu Mingyuan. No matter how strong Gu Mingyuan might be, her Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan did not possess an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill.

The Linghu Heavenly Clan was different. Not only did they possess an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill, but Linghu Zhishi was also someone who had mastered that Exalted Taboo Martial Skill.

Thus, since he confirmed Chu Feng's technique to be an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill, it must be an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill.

After confirming that Chu Feng had indeed grasped an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill, Linghu Hongfei no longer dared to be careless.

Instead, he gathered the power within him to strengthen the power of his Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens.

“Linghu Hongfei, I’ll use this move to determine the battle.” said Chu Feng.

“Determine the battle? I’m afraid that move of yours will not suffice,” Linghu Hongfei mocked.

“You will soon learn whether or not it’ll suffice.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng’s smiling face turned into an extremely serious one. He suddenly shouted, “Exalted Taboo: Heavenly Fate Seal!!!”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng shot forth his palm before his chest.

“Rumble~~~”

Once he shot forth his palm, white light immediately appeared. After the white light gathered, a palm emitting white light appeared before him.

The palm was enormous. It measured ten thousand meters across. Such an enormous palm was flying straight for Linghu Hongfei.

“Humph, what a disappointment.”

After Linghu Hongfei witnessed the power of Chu Feng’s Exalted Taboo Martial Skill, the serious expression on his face disappeared, and the corners of his lips raised upward into a sneer.

After all, his Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens measured a hundred thousand meters across.

“Buzz~~~”

Controlled by Linghu Hongfei, the image of the Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens appeared above him again.

When a mirror measuring a hundred thousand meters was directly placed against a ten thousand meter palm, it must be said that Chu Feng’s Exalted Taboo: Heavenly Fate Seal appeared to be much weaker.

“Boom~~~”

White light surged forth. The Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens shot out dazzling white light again.

Like a sea of white, the white light instantly engulfed Chu Feng's Exalted Taboo: Heavenly Fate Seal.

"Oh no!"

Seeing that, Gu Mingyuan and others were all extremely worried.

They all felt that even though they were both Exalted Taboo Martial Skills, Chu Feng's Exalted Taboo: Heavenly Fate Seal seemed to be incapable of contending against Linghu Hongfei's Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens.

"Clamor~~~"

Suddenly, a loud and sharp sound was heard.

Hearing that sound, Gu Mingyuan and the others that were originally worried about Chu Feng immediately revealed joyous looks on their faces.

It was now the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen that were worried.

The reason for that was because what they'd heard was clearly the sound of a mirror shattering.

Sure enough, upon closer inspection, mirror fragments filled the sky, and were falling from the battlefield.

Although the mirror had already shattered, the crowd were able to recognize those shattered pieces to be Linghu Hongfei's Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens.

The bystanders were unable to determine the reason why. However, Gu Mingyuan and the others were capable of seeing it clearly.

At that moment, the Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens before Linghu Hongfei had not only shattered, but Linghu Hongfei was also completely covered in blood.

Although Linghu Hongfei was not knocked flying away by Chu Feng's attack, he was still seriously injured by it.

"Huu~~~"

Suddenly, Chu Feng's arm moved. A violent wind was immediately raised.

As the wind swept forth, the white gaseous flames that covered the sky were all dispersed.

At that moment, it was no longer only Gu Mingyuan and the other experts that were able to see Linghu Hongfei. Everyone present, regardless of whether they might be from the older or the younger generation, were all able to clearly see Linghu Hongfei's current appearance.

Linghu Hongfei was half-kneeling in midair. His clothes were completely tattered, and he was covered in blood. Although he did not look completely mutilated, he still had a very sorry appearance.

Seeing this scene, the crowd were all stupefied. Shock filled their eyes and faces.

Linghu Hongfei was defeated. Linghu Hongfei was actually defeated!!!

Most importantly, it was not only Linghu Hongfei who was defeated. Defeated alongside him was the Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens, the strongest martial skill of the Linghu Heavenly Clan, and one of the strongest martial skills in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

However, it was precisely such a powerful martial skill that was defeated.

At that moment, the crowd were unable to keep themselves from looking towards Chu Feng. Their gazes had become complicated.

This was especially true for Exalted Heavenly Fate. Not only did he have a look of awkwardness on his face, but his eyes were also filled with astonishment.

It was a look filled with doubt. The scene before him was simply completely different from what he had prophesied!!!

Linghu Hongfei's strongest technique had been defeated by Chu Feng.

This meant that the match had come to an end.

The person that had lost was not Chu Feng. Instead, it was Linghu Hongfei.

Exalted Heavenly Fate's prophecy was wrong. Exalted Heavenly Fate, who had never made a mistake in the past, actually ended up making a false prophecy!!!

Chu Feng had really managed to prove himself with his strength.

“Hahaha!!!”

Suddenly, a burst of laughter was heard.

The laughter came from Linghu Hongfei.

Although he was seriously injured, he was slowly standing back up.

Compared to when Yu Sha climbed back to her feet, Linghu Hongfei was able to get up much easier.

Even though he appeared to be very seriously injured, his injuries were not as serious as Yu Sha’s injuries.

That said, that was not what was important. What was important was his current expression.

Even though he was clearly seriously injured, even though his Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens was defeated by Chu Feng, Linghu Hongfei was not panicked in the slightest. He was also not feeling any sort of unease. Instead, the look of confidence was still fully visible on his face.

“Chu Feng, did you think you’d won?” Linghu Hongfei asked Chu Feng.

“Did I not?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’ve already told you from the very start that you... will definitely lose today.”

“I’ve also told you earlier that I’m going to play with you. Never would I have expected that my playing with you would actually give you the misconception that you’d be able to win.”

“My apologies, it was my bad. I wasn’t serious enough, and ended up making you have that sort of misconception.”

“However, I will now have to end this boring match.”

“Chu Feng, it will be your time to die now.”

After saying those words, Linghu Hongfei’s eyes turned fiery red.

“Rooaaarrr~~~”

Then, Linghu Hongfei began to emit fiery gaseous flames from his body.

Even his skin had turned fiery red. It seemed like magma, instead of blood, was flowing throughout his body.

That was not all. Linghu Hongfei’s body was also enlarging.

In the blink of an eye, Linghu Hongfei turned into a giant over three thousand meters tall.

It was not only an increase in size. His outward appearance had also changed. From fiery red, his eyes had become blood-red, extremely nefarious and fierce.

At that moment, Linghu Hongfei resembled a demon. A bloody horn had also appeared on his forehead.

Behind him was an enormous figure. It was a face.

It was a face that was ten thousand meters tall.

That said, that was not the face of a person. Instead, it was the face of countless people, millions upon millions of people.

The millions of faces gathered together to form that giant face. They were not only moving about, but they were also letting out either gloomy and low or sharp and intense voices.

All of this appeared so very strange, so very terrifying.

Most astonishing of all, after undergoing this transformation, Linghu Hongfei’s aura changed again.

His cultivation had increased again. From rank eight Exalted, his cultivation increased to rank nine Exalted.

Rank nine Exalted, that was the cultivation of a peak Exalted!!!

Chapter 3749 - The Descent Of The Four Symbols

“His cultivation actually increased again?!!!”

Seeing the current Linghu Hongfei, the crowd felt incomparably complicated.

There were a lot of Exalted-level experts...

Among them, many possessed Heavenly Bloodlines or Divine Power.

However, not all cultivators were capable of increasing their cultivation through the power of their bloodline or Divine Power.

Linghu Hongfei possessed a Heaven level Lightning Mark, Lightning Armor, and the Cyan Nethersoul. With them, he was able to increase his cultivation three times in succession. That was already the limit for martial cultivators.

Yet, he had actually managed to increase his cultivation by another level.

Naturally, the crowd would feel completely astonished.

Furthermore, the transformation to Linghu Hongfei was very terrifying.

He no longer resembled a person. Instead, he seemed like a fierce demon.

The aura emitted by Linghu Hongfei did not resemble the power of Bloodlines, did not resemble Divine Power, and also did not resemble the power of a treasure.

If one must describe the aura emitted by Linghu Hongfei, it seemed more like a nefarious aura, a taboo aura... the aura that one would emit after taking a forbidden medicine.

“Could it be, Linghu Hongfei took a forbidden medicine?”

This thought came to many people.

“Forbidden medicine? Fools, this is our Heavenly Demon Body!!!”

“It is a power even more noble, even more powerful than Divine Power. It is a power from the Ancient Era,” Linghu Hongfei said. Even his voice had changed.

His voice sounded like that of a ferocious beast. It was very forceful, very imposing. At the same time, it was filled with killing intent.

It seemed like he would be able to kill a person at any given time and place.

“Heavenly Demon Body?!!”

“How come I’ve never heard of that sort of power?”

The crowd felt even more confused upon hearing Linghu Hongfei’s explanation.

Both bloodline power and Divine Power were sacred powers.

But even if one possessed bloodline power or Divine Power, it did not mean that one would definitely be very powerful.

It would depend on the cultivator himself as to exactly how much power he would be able to unleash. Because of that, both bloodline power and Divine Power were acknowledged by others.

That was also the reason why the crowd felt that Chu Feng, Linghu Hongfei and Chu Lingxi were all demon-level geniuses.

The reason for that was because they’d relied on their own bloodlines to increase their cultivations. Even if they’d relied on treasures as well, those treasures were not things that just anyone could subdue.

However, forbidden medicines were different. Anyone could use forbidden medicines. Furthermore, after using the forbidden medicine, their cultivations would increase.

Thus, taking forbidden medicine was looked down upon by everyone. It was an action of desperation, an action of someone driven to helplessness with no other alternative.

Taking forbidden medicines was unrelated to one’s own cultivation, unrelated to one’s own talent. As long as one possessed a forbidden medicine, anyone could take it. At the very most, one would suffer a backlash after taking forbidden medicine.

The aura emitted by Linghu Hongfei at that moment was precisely that.

Even though he appeared very frightening, even though he had indeed increased his cultivation by an entire level, when Linghu Hongfei said that his Heavenly Demon Body was a power more precious than Divine Power, no one believed him.

“I got it. That is precisely the feeling I had when Linghu Hongfei suppressed me with his oppressive might. That is precisely the power that restricted my own power,” said Chu Lingxi.

“Too strange. That is most definitely not a pure power. Instead, that’s some sort of corrupt method,” said Gu Mingyuan.

Actually, there were a lot of people that felt the same way as Gu Mingyuan.

However, that was not important. What was important was that Linghu Hongfei’s cultivation had increased again. With this, exactly how was Chu Feng supposed to respond?

“Linghu Hongfei, that power of yours does not seem like a Heavenly Demon Body. Instead, it’s more like a Clown’s Body.”

“Use that Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens to look at yourself. The current you truly resembles a clown,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“What is Chu Feng doing? Has he gone mad?”

Seeing that Chu Feng was not panicking and was instead mocking Linghu Hongfei, the crowd all felt that he had gone mad.

Since they’d already signed the life and death contract, if Chu Feng were to infuriate Linghu Hongfei, what awaited him would only be a miserable death.

After all, the person Chu Feng was facing at that moment was not a martial cultivator. Instead, Linghu Hongfei was a true monster.

“There is indeed a clown here. However, that clown is not me. Instead, it’s you.”

Suddenly, Linghu Hongfei let out a roar.

The next instant, violent wind visible to the naked eye was sent forth from his mouth and swept toward Chu Feng.

In an instant, the surging wind completely engulfed Chu Feng.

That was no ordinary wind storm. Instead, it was a storm of death.

“Sure enough, Exalted Heavenly Fate’s prophecy cannot be mistaken.”

At that moment, the crowd were sighing nonstop. At the same time, they were feeling pained.

Naturally, they were feeling pained for Chu Feng.

Chu Feng's performance was close to perfect. Witnessing his strength, the crowd came to a realization as to why Chu Feng would dare to show up, even knowing Exalted Heavenly Fate's prophecy.

Chu Feng's strength was indeed superior to that of ordinary people. With the same cultivation, even Linghu Hongfei was defeated by him.

Unfortunately, Linghu Hongfei still had a trump card in his hand.

Regardless of how Linghu Hongfei had obtained his Heavenly Demon Body, it was undeniable that he was indeed capable of killing Chu Feng.

"Linghu Hongfei, what are you doing? Are you tickling me?"

Suddenly, a voice was heard. It was Chu Feng's voice.

Hearing that voice, the crowd all turned their gazes back to where he had stood previously.

The reason for that was because they'd not only heard Chu Feng's voice, but they'd also heard confidence and ease in his voice.

Faced with such a terrifying Linghu Hongfei, how could Chu Feng be so relaxed?

"Rooooarr~"

At the moment when the crowd were feeling confused, a transformation occurred in the sky.

A sea of golden clouds appeared in the sky. The clouds were emitting a golden light..

The golden light sealed off the sky and enveloped and basked the surroundings in gold.

Seeing the golden clouds that sealed off the sky, the crowd all exclaimed in astonishment.

To the crowd's surprise, there were four giant creatures galloping in the golden clouds.

Those four giant creatures were none other than the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise, the Four Great Divine Beasts!!!

“Rooarr~~~”

After the Four Great Divine Beasts appeared, they roared at the same time.

Their roars were extremely intimidating. Not only were they deafeningly loud, but they also brought fear to the crowd's hearts.

It seemed like the four giant beasts were capable of devouring everyone present should they wish it.

The oppressive might emitted by the Four Symbols Divine Beasts was simply too strong, so strong that everyone felt fear toward them.

The might of the Four Symbols Divine Beasts was different from any others.

They were both powerful and divine. They appeared like sacred beings, gods even.

It was as if the four of them were creatures of a higher caliber than the people present.

“What are those? What sort of ability is that? What a terrifying might.”

Seeing the scene in the sky, the crowd were all endlessly astonished, and crying out in alarm.

“It's Divine Power.”

Suddenly, a voice was heard. The person who said those words was Grandmaster Liangqiu.

Hearing those words, the crowd felt completely tensed. They felt as if their heads were about to explode.

Divine Power????!!!

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3750 - Divine Body Vs. Demon Body - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3750 - Divine Body Vs. Demon Body

Chapter 3750 - Divine Body Vs. Demon Body

“What? Divine Power?”

“Heavens! That’s Divine Power?!”

“Never have I witnessed such a powerful Divine Power!”

The crowd felt utter disbelief upon learning that Chu Feng’s power was Divine Power. It was all because his Divine Power was simply too imposing.

However, Grandmaster Liangqiu was someone with great prestige in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Thus, when he declared it to be Divine Power, the crowd had no choice but to believe it, even if they were unwilling to do so.

“Divine Power?”

Upon hearing Grandmaster Liangqiu’s words, the expressions of the mother and daughter Gu Mingyuan and Chu Lingxi changed greatly. Subconsciously, they looked to each other.

At that moment, the two of them discovered that they had the same sort of expression in their eyes.

After Grandmaster Liangqiu declared it to be Divine Power, they came to a realization.

It would appear that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist did not lie. He seemed to truly possess the means to help others fuse with Divine Power.

Otherwise, how could Chu Feng possibly possess Divine Power? After all, he was a Heavenly Bloodline possessor.

“Who’s Divine Power is that? Is it Chu Feng’s Divine Power?”

“But, that shouldn’t be possible. He is clearly a Heavenly Bloodline possessor. How could he possess Divine Power? That is simply unheard of.”

The crowd felt utter disbelief. In fact, they felt it to be impossible.

There were people that began to survey their surroundings in hopes of seeing if there were any hidden experts that had released such a mighty Divine Power.

It wasn’t that the crowd did not believe that Chu Feng was capable of possessing such a powerful Divine Power, how could they not?

They knew very well how talented Chu Feng was.

Merely, it was simply impossible for a cultivator to possess both a Heavenly Bloodline and Divine Power.

This had nothing to do with one’s talent. It was simply impossible in and of itself.

Regardless of whether it might be Heavenly Bloodlines or Divine Power, if one were to possess either of them, it would mean that one was loved by the heavens, and was much more fortunate than ordinary people.

For a person to possess both Divine Power and a Heavenly Bloodline, how enormously fortunate must they be?

At the very least, up until that point, they had simply never heard of such a thing.

Keep in mind that they’d never heard of it, and never seen it.

“Huu~~~”

Suddenly, the golden light and enormous might that filled the sky turned into a ray of golden light and descended, entering Chu Feng’s body.

At the same time, the crowd were able to clearly sense his aura.

Chu Feng’s aura had increased again. From rank eight Exalted, he had become a rank nine Exalted!!!

“This...”

At that moment, the crowd were all dumbstruck. Even the elders that had witnessed a lot of things opened their mouths wide in shock.

In fact, even the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, Linghu Zhishi, had a look of shock.

"How could this be... he... actually really possesses Divine Power?" Linghu Zhishi muttered in a low voice. His voice was also filled with astonishment.

As for the others, they were not only stunned; they were simply terrified.

At that moment, the previously clamorous surroundings had become absolutely quiet again...

"Boom~~~"

In the following instant, the crowd exploded in an uproar.

"Heavens! Chu Feng... he actually managed to possess both Divine Power and a Heavenly Bloodline at the same time."

"A child beloved by the heavens, that is truly a child beloved by the heavens!!!"

Many people were crying out in alarm. They were no longer considering what the Linghu Heavenly Clan might think.

They were truly incapable of containing their emotions.

Even though the matter was unrelated to them, they felt extremely honored to be able to witness such a scene.

"Drop dead!!!"

Suddenly, a furious shout was heard.

It was Linghu Hongfei. An enormous white mirror had appeared before him.

It was the Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens.

Not only did Linghu Hongfei unleash his Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens, but that Exalted Taboo: Vast Heavenly Lens had also sent forth a beam of white light straight towards Chu Feng.

Although the beam white of light was headed towards him, Chu Feng did not attempt to dodge or avoid it. He allowed that terrifying white light to devour his body.

Most shocking of all, even though the power of that white beam of light was clearly so powerful, Chu Feng was completely unharmed after it passed by him!!!

“How could this be?”

The crowd looked towards each other. They were unable to comprehend what had just happened.

No matter how powerful Chu Feng might be, how could he not be injured after withstanding the white beam of light with his body?

After all, that white beam of light was the attack of an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill, the strongest martial skill of the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

“It should be my turn now, no?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng spoke. After saying those words, Chu Feng directly unleashed his attack and shot forth a punch.

“Boom~~~”

With his punch, martial power visible to the naked eye soared into the sky. Not only did it strike Linghu Hongfei, but it even pierced through his body, and left an enormous hole in his giant body.

“Eeeahhh~~~”

Linghu Hongfei let out a scream, and his body began to change. He returned to his original appearance and lost the ability to fly. Like a loose kite, he spun around and started falling downwards. Ultimately, he crashed ferociously into the ground.

After crashing, Linghu Hongfei continued to scream painfully. He was grabbing his chest with a look of suffering.

“He not only blocked an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill, but he even defeated Linghu Hongfei with a single punch?”

“That’s simply too powerful. What exactly is going on?”

Seeing that Chu Feng had actually managed to defeat Linghu Hongfei with a single punch, the crowd simply did not dare to believe their eyes.

“That’s the disparity in strength.”

At the moment when the crowd were all confused, Gu Mingyuan, who had been quiet the entire time, suddenly spoke.

“Disparity in strength? But aren’t the two of them clearly both rank nine Exalted?” the crowd asked.

“Although the two of them both increased their cultivations to rank nine Exalted using their respective methods, it remains that strength differs enormously, even among those with the same cultivation.”

“Although Linghu Hongfei’s cultivation had also increased, his power was extremely unstable. Because of that, his battle power was extremely weak.”

“However, it is different for Chu Feng. His Divine Power is extremely strong to begin with. It far surpasses other people’s Divine Power.”

“With the circumstances like that, his battle power did not decrease, it instead increased greatly.”

“That is disparity,” said Gu Mingyuan.

Hearing those words, the crowd came to a sudden realization.

They were, after all, also cultivators themselves. Thus, it was actually not difficult for them to understand such a disparity.

It was just that they were uncertain earlier. They’d thought about such a disparity being the case, but they did not dare to be certain of their guesses.

However, now they’d ascertained it to be the case. After all, Gu Mingyuan was qualified to make such a judgement.

“Exalted Heavenly Fate, can the Life and Death Contract take effect now?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s voice was heard.

After Chu Feng's voice was heard, the crowd realized that he had already descended, and was standing before Linghu Hongfei.

Chu Feng was planning to dig out his eyes.

"This... I..."

Exalted Heavenly Fate was holding the Life and Death Contract in his hand. However, he had become speechless.

Exalted Heavenly Fate was standing there in a stupefied manner. He was enormously shocked by the failure of his prophecy.

"Linghu Hongfei, are you prepared?" At that moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze to Linghu Hongfei.

Hearing those words, Linghu Hongfei's heart tensed up. The others present also grew tense.

Could Chu Feng really be planning to dig out Linghu Hongfei's eyes?

But, Linghu Hongfei was not the only person present. The Linghu Heavenly Clan and even Linghu Zhishi were all there.

Would Chu Feng really dare to dig out Linghu Hongfei's eyes in such circumstances?

However, at the moment when the great majority of the crowd felt that he would not dare, Chu Feng turned his gaze to Linghu Hongfei.

Regardless of what the crowd might think, Chu Feng simply did not seem like he was planning to stop.

"Chu Feng, I'd urge you to stop immediately!"

Suddenly, a voice exploded in the sky.

It was Linghu Zhishi. Not only was his voice very deep and powerful, but it was also filled with displeasure.

Linghu Hongfei's defeat had brought great displeasure to Linghu Zhishi.

Sensing the displeasure in Linghu Zhishi's voice, the crowd immediately shut their mouths.

They actually did not even have the courage to speak.

After all, regardless of how heaven-defying Chu Feng's talent might be, the strongest person in the Ancestral Martial Starfield was none other than Linghu Zhishi.

No one was willing to offend him.

However, even though everyone was afraid of him, Chu Feng was not.

"And what if I refuse to stop?" Chu Feng asked.

"In that case, everyone related to you shall be buried here today," Linghu Zhishi said coldly.

"Are you threatening me?" asked Chu Feng.

"It is not a threat. Rather, it's a warning," Linghu Zhishi's voice turned even colder. It seemed like he did not even have the patience to speak with Chu Feng.

"Oh," Chu Feng nodded.

"Woosh~~~"

Suddenly, Chu Feng moved his arm, and a splash of blood splattered forth.

That blood had come from Linghu Hongfei's face.

"Eeeahhh~~~"

Following that, a miserable scream was heard.

Due to the fact that the region was particularly quiet, the scream sounded particularly miserable.

Looking over to Linghu Hongfei, the crowd discovered that he was covering his eyes with his hands. A great amount of blood was flowing from his face and his hands.

“Clan Chief Linghu, look carefully.”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng raised his right hand and opened his fist.

The crowd was able to see that Chu Feng’s palm was covered in blood.

In the center of that blood-covered palm were Linghu Hongfei’s eyes.

Seeing his eyes, the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief’s eyes turned crimson with anger, and his veins bulged explosively.

However, to everyone’s surprise, Chu Feng actually made another motion.

Chu Feng suddenly clenched his palm, and with a ‘puu,’ the eyes in his hands were crushed.

“Eeeaahhhh~~~”

At that moment, Linghu Hongfei’s scream became even more miserable.

Chapter 3751 - Defending One’s Honor With One’s Life

The surroundings grew absolutely silent.

However, the crowd’s hearts were surging like giant waves.

The crowd truly never expected that Chu Feng would really dig out Linghu Hongfei’s eyes.

Not only did he dig out Linghu Hongfei’s eyes, but he even completely destroyed them.

Furthermore, he did all of that before Linghu Zhishi and all the experts of the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

Could Chu Feng really be planning to challenge the authority of the Linghu Heavenly Clan?

What made him think he was qualified to challenge their authority?

Even the Wuming Clan that had ruled over the Ancestral Martial Starfield for tens of thousands of years was defeated by the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

How could Chu Feng possibly challenge them?

Although confused, the crowd still subconsciously turned their gazes to Linghu Zhishi.

They all wanted to know how the number one individual in the Ancestral Martial Starfield was going to take care of Chu Feng.

At that moment, Linghu Zhishi's face had turned deep red with fury. His veins were bulging explosively.

The crowd even felt like they could hear the sound of Linghu Zhishi gnashing his teeth.

Needless to say, he was completely enraged by Chu Feng's actions.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had not only destroyed Linghu Hongfei's eyes, but his action was also an act of provocation to Linghu Zhishi. He was not placing him in his eyes.

"Chu Feng, you will pay for your actions," said Linghu Zhishi.

Linghu Zhishi was truly worthy of being the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

He possessed outstanding tolerance. Even though he was completely enraged and surging with killing intent, he did not directly attack Chu Feng.

"Woosh~~~"

"Woosh~~~"

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, several figures appeared before Chu Feng and surrounded him from all directions.

They were Gu Mingyuan, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and Chu Xuanzhengfa.

They knew that Chu Feng had courted a disaster, and Linghu Zhishi could be planning to murder him at any moment.

With the situation being like that, they simply could not afford to do nothing. Thus, all of them rushed forward to protect him.

“Clan Chief Linghu, if you plan to kill Chu Feng, then you’ll have to first thread past this old man’s corpse,” the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said loudly.

The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was not only very good-natured, but he was also very humble.

As the clan chief of the Chu Heavenly Clan, he had always considered the greater good of the clan.

Thus, when he encountered people or powers stronger than the Chu Heavenly Clan, he would always be very humble.

However, this time around, he was completely different. He showed no signs of servitude.

Even when faced with an existence like Linghu Zhishi, he did not back down in the slightest.

He seemed like he was prepared to face death.

“No need to fret, today, all of you will die.”

Linghu Zhishi let out a cold smile. Then, he shouted, “Where are my Linghu Heavenly Clansmen?!!”

“Milord, we are here!!!”

Once Linghu Zhishi spoke, the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen inside the warships and outside the warships all stood up uniformly. They had all drawn their weapons.

From their appearance, as long as Linghu Zhishi gave the order, they would immediately unleash a massacre upon the Chu Heavenly Clansmen.

“Where are my Chu Heavenly Clansmen?!”

To the crowd’s surprise, the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief also let out a loud shout.

Even more unexpected was that after he gave the order, all of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen also rushed out and stood behind him in an orderly manner.

They seemed like they were truly planning to fight the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen to death.

In fact, that was precisely the case.

The Chu Heavenly Clansmen already knew that this day would not end well.

Regardless of whether Chu Feng won or lost, their Chu Heavenly Clan was still destined to suffer a calamity.

Thus, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had already had the great majority of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen leave ahead of time.

They'd all gone to Ancestral Martial Dragon City. After all, that place was the safest place to be.

The remaining Chu Heavenly Clansmen were people that were determined to face death. Even if they were to die, they would still defend their Chu Heavenly Clan's honor.

“Striking a stone with an egg, this is simply striking a stone with an egg.”

“The Chu Heavenly Clan is truly overestimating their capabilities.”

Seeing the Chu Heavenly Clansmen looking like they were planning to confront the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen, the crowd did not show them respect and honor. Instead, they were rolling their eyes and ridiculing them.

“Sure enough, your Chu Heavenly Clan is already prepared to have a falling-out with my Linghu Heavenly Clan.”

Seeing those Chu Heavenly Clansmen, Linghu Zhishi showed no sign of surprise. Instead, the corners of his mouth rose into a strange curve.

At the same time, he made another action.

“Paa~~~”

“Paa~~~”

He clapped his hands, and then an enormous warship started to rumble.

Then, under the crowd's gazes, the enormous warship opened up. The inside of the warship could be seen clearly by the crowd.

"That is?!!!"

Once the warship opened, the crowd were all stunned.

They were all able to clearly see that there were hundreds of thousands of people inside the warship.

However, those people were not from the Linghu Heavenly Clan. Instead, they were all Chu Heavenly Clansmen.

Furthermore, those people, regardless of whether they were old or young, men or women, even the newborn infants, were all tied up by black chains.

They were prisoners. The Chu Heavenly Clansmen had all been reduced to prisoners.

"Linghu Zhishi, you!!!"

Witnessing that scene, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, Chu Hanpeng, Chu Xuanzhengfa and the others' expressions all changed enormously.

It was impossible for them to not recognize their own clansmen. They knew very well that those clansmen of theirs were all people that had gone to seek shelter in Ancestral Martial Dragon City.

"You all appeared to be heroic, fearless and willing to die in battle."

"However, you'd secretly transferred the great majority of your clansmen away."

"Did you plan to have Ancestral Martial Dragon City nurture your younger generations?"

"Clan Chief Chu, you're truly playing quite a hand."

"Unfortunately, did you really think our Linghu Heavenly Clan to be fools?"

"Your each and every action was already within my grasp."

The smile on Linghu Zhishi's face became even more pleased.

At that moment, the crowd came to a realization...

The Chu Heavenly Clansmen that had departed for Ancestral Martial Dragon City were all captured by the Linghu Heavenly Clan enroute.

It turned out that Linghu Zhishi had planned to eliminate the Chu Heavenly Clan from the very start.

Even a fool could tell that he had no intentions to spare them.

Even if Chu Feng hadn't dug out Linghu Hongfei's eyes, the Chu Heavenly Clan would still not be able to escape the fate of extermination.

After all, Linghu Zhishi had planned this from the very start.

Having witnessed the truth at that moment, the crowd's expressions became complicated.

The Linghu Heavenly Clan's manner of conduct was simply too ruthless. They simply did not care what the crowd thought of them.

The crowd also knew why the Linghu Heavenly Clan had decided to do all this. Naturally, it was because of Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was a thorn in their eyes, a sting to their heart, and a threat to their position.

Thus, they must erase him.

But, even if that was the case, their manner of conduct was simply still too vicious. The crowd were capable of understanding the Linghu Heavenly Clan's intention to eliminate Chu Feng. However, to eliminate the entire Chu Heavenly Clan because of Chu Feng was simply too excessive.

Thinking back, even though the Wuming Clan was also ruthless in their own way when they ruled over the Ancestral Martial Starfield, they still had a bottom line.

The Wuming Clan had most definitely defeated Chu Hanxian and Chu Xuanyuan.

Yet, they did not attempt to directly eliminate them. More than that, they never thought of eliminating the entire Chu Heavenly Clan.

Chapter 3752 - A Gargantuan Joke?

“Linghu Zhishi, you are despicable to the extreme!!!”

“Someone like you is not qualified to be the overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield! You are not qualified!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Xuanzhengfa let out a furious shout.

Following him, many other Chu Heavenly Clansmen also began to curse out the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

However, their curses appeared very powerless. In fact, the people of the Linghu Heavenly Clan were not at all angered.

They looked at the Chu Heavenly Clansmen like they were a bunch of clowns.

They knew that the Chu Heavenly Clan simply could not contend against them. The disparity in strength between them was simply too enormous.

Thus, the Chu Heavenly Clansmen could only attack them using words.

However, this sort of resistance was very powerless...

“Clan Chief Linghu, don’t forget that Linghu Hongfei is still here.”

“I’m assuming that you do not want him to live?”

Right at that moment, Gu Mingyuan spoke. As she spoke, she captured Linghu Hongfei who was lying on the ground and grabbed him by the neck, lifting him up.

“That’s true. Linghu Hongfei is in their hands.”

“With such a hostage, would the Linghu Heavenly Clan dare do anything?”

Seeing that scene, the crowd came to a sudden realization.

After all, they all knew how important Linghu Hongfei was to the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

In the eyes of the Linghu Heavenly Clan, all the lives of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen would not be able to replace the life of Linghu Hongfei alone.

Thus, if the Chu Heavenly Clan was to take Linghu Hongfei as a hostage, they might really end up being able to escape.

“Hahaha...”

However, to everyone’s surprise, Linghu Zhishi laughed at Gu Mingyuan’s threat.

He was laughing with great pleasure. Not only was he very pleased with himself, but his laughter was also filled with ridicule.

He laughed for a very long time before finally stopping. Then, he looked at Gu Mingyuan.

“Gu Mingyuan, look carefully at who it is you’re holding in your hand,” said Linghu Zhishi.

“This!!!”

Hearing those words, the crowd immediately looked over at Gu Mingyuan’s hand.

Upon doing so, the expressions of Gu Mingyuan and everyone present changed enormously.

The person Gu Mingyuan was holding at that moment was clearly not Linghu Hongfei. Instead, it was someone else, who was completely covered in blood. That person had been mutilated beyond recognition.

However, on this person’s waist was the title plate of the Chu Heavenly Clan. That person... was someone of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Furthermore, that person had already died.

Judging from his appearance, he had just died.

“How could this be?”

The crowd were all completely baffled by the scene before them.

It was clearly Linghu Hongfei that Chu Feng had seriously injured earlier.

Linghu Hongfei was lying there and screaming in pain the entire time.

Even when Gu Mingyuan captured him, Linghu Hongfei had still looked exactly the same.

Thus, why would he suddenly turned into a Chu Heavenly Clansman?

“Chu Feng, you will definitely pay for what you’ve done!”

Suddenly, a gnashing voice filled with killing intent was heard. n0V E)I b-In

The crowd saw that a figure had walked out behind Linghu Zhishi.

It was that person that had said those words. As for that person, he was actually Linghu Hongfei.

Merely, the current Linghu Hongfei looked different from before.

He had changed into clothes without blood. Even the wounds on his face had disappeared.

However, his eyes were covered in gauze, and one could still see two bloodstains beneath the white gauze.

This meant that Linghu Hongfei was indeed seriously injured, and had his eyes blinded by Chu Feng.

Replaced with a fake!!!

Seeing the current Linghu Hongfei, the crowd came to a sudden realization.

Before all those people, the Linghu Heavenly Clan had managed to rescue Linghu Hongfei and treat his injuries while Linghu Zhishi was exchanging words with the Chu Heavenly Clan.

That said, this made the crowd realize that the injuries to Linghu Hongfei’s eyes seemed to be rather serious.

After all, even after Linghu Hongfei’s injuries were treated, his eyes were still injured. He had truly lost his sight.

“Gu Mingyuan, you’re a failure of an Utmost Exalted. You actually didn’t discover us replacing Hongfei before your eyes. You actually used a corpse from the Chu Heavenly Clan to threaten me?”

“Gu Mingyuan, you’ve truly disappointed me,” Linghu Zhishi mocked.

Sure enough, Linghu Hongfei had been replaced by the Linghu Heavenly Clan only a short while before.

It was no wonder they were so confident.

“Linghu Zhishi, do you really think that you’re definitely going to win?”

“You shouldn’t be taking glee so quickly.”

As Gu Mingyuan spoke, she flipped her palm, and a total of ten medicinal pellets appeared in her hand.

All ten medicinal pellets were forbidden medicines. Furthermore, they were extremely powerful forbidden medicines.

Those forbidden medicines all possessed very terrifying backlashes. If Gu Mingyuan were to devour all ten forbidden medicines at once, she would undoubtedly die. No one would be able to save her.

Upon seeing the ten forbidden medicines, everyone knew that she was planning to risk her life.

“Mother!”

Chu Lingxi was standing right beside Gu Mingyuan. Tears emerged in her eyes.

She knew what her mother was planning to do. However, she was powerless to stop her.

After all, they would all be killed anyways. Thus, if they were to risk their lives to fight, then perhaps they might have a chance of survival. If they were to give in to fate, then only death awaited them.

Chu Lingxi understood that principle. However, it remained that Gu Mingyuan was her mother.

Seeing her mother's intention to fight to the death, Chu Lingxi was unable to contain the grief in her heart.

"Go ahead and take them. Let me experience exactly how powerful those forbidden medicines of yours are," said Linghu Zhishi.

Linghu Zhishi had no intention to stop Gu Mingyuan. Even though he knew that she was planning to put up a life and death struggle, he still did not place her in his eyes at all.

"I'll satisfy you!"

Determination appeared in Gu Mingyuan's eyes. She raised her hand with the intention to swallow the forbidden medicines.

"Paa~~~"

However, right after Gu Mingyuan raised her hand, a hand grabbed her wrist, stopping her.

It was Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, don't attempt to dissuade me. At a time like this, this is the only thing that can be done," Gu Mingyuan said to Chu Feng.

"Senior, I understand what you're feeling. However... there's actually no need for all this," said Chu Feng.

"No need for all this?"

Chu Feng's words not only confused Gu Mingyuan, but they also puzzled the others present.

However, at the time when the crowd were all confused, Chu Feng made another action.

This action of his was even more shocking.

Chu Feng turned his gaze to the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen.

His gaze landed on all of the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen present.

After examining them with his gaze, Chu Feng finally spoke, "Let's talk about the unpleasant things first. If you all are to leave now, there will still be a margin for discussion."

"However, if you are to continue to stay, then you will truly be making an enemy out of our Chu Heavenly Clan."

"Toward enemies, I, Chu Feng... will never show leniency."

Hearing Chu Feng's words, the surroundings grew completely quiet.

Although the surroundings had grown quiet, the crowd's hearts were unable to calm down.

It was like there was unending thunder exploding in the crowd's ears.

The crowd all felt that their ears had malfunctioned.

The reason for that was because they were unable to believe what they'd just heard.

Just then, Chu Feng seemed to have threatened the Linghu Heavenly Clan?

But, how was Chu Feng qualified to make that threat?

"Hahahaha!!!"

Suddenly, deafening laughter exploded.

All of the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen were laughing with great delight.

The crowd was capable of understanding why they would laugh.

Chu Feng's words were akin to a little rabbit telling a bunch of wolves that he would eat them.

That was indeed ridiculous and laughable.

"Chu Feng, you are truly capable of cracking jokes."

"What's this? Are you trying to relieve your nervousness?" mocked Linghu Zhishi.

Chu Feng acted as if he did not hear Linghu Zhishi's mocking words.

His expression remained unchanged facing the mocking laughter of the Linghu Heavenly Clan. He was completely unaffected.

He said, "It would appear that no one is planning to leave. Since that's the case, all of you can die here."

Chapter 3753 - Chu Feng's Trump Card

Although his words sounded very fierce, the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen still considered it to be a joke.

They simply did not take Chu Feng's words to heart at all.

"Chu Feng, if you are to dig out your own eyes, I will consider keeping your corpse whole," said Linghu Zhishi.

Chu Feng acted as if he did not hear Linghu Zhishi's words. He said, "Clan Chief Linghu, remember this."

"The death of your Linghu Heavenly Clansmen here today is all thanks to you."

Seeing Chu Feng reacting in such a manner, the crowd felt that he had gone mad. They felt that he was simply blabbing crazy and unfounded ravings.

"Has Chu Feng gone mad? What exactly is he talking about?"

"Mad, he must've gone mad."

Such words could be heard everywhere.

"Buzz~~~"

However, in the following instant, a strange scene occurred.

A body of white light appeared before Chu Feng and the Chu Heavenly Clansmen. Although that body of light was semi-transparent, it seemed like a boat, and had completely surrounded them.

That body of light did not only protect Chu Feng, Gu Mingyuan and the others.

Another such body of light had also appeared around the Chu Heavenly Clansmen that were imprisoned by the Linghu Heavenly Clan in the warship behind Linghu Zhishi.

Most importantly, after that body of light appeared, the crowd all felt their nerves tense up. The feeling emitted by that body of light was simply too powerful.

It was a sort of indestructible spirit formation!!!

“What is that?”

Seeing that spirit formation, the crowd all revealed looks of astonishment.

They were actually able to tell that it was a spirit formation. The reason why they asked what it was, was because they did not know where such a powerful spirit formation could come from.

“It’s Chu Feng!!!”

Suddenly, someone cried out in alarm. After hearing that person, the crowd all turned their gazes to Chu Feng.

Upon doing so, they discovered that there was a stick in his hand.

The stick itself did not appear to be particularly noteworthy at all. However, it was currently covered in white symbols and runes. Most importantly, those symbols and runes were very mystical. If one were to glance at them, one would not notice anything. However, if one were to pay close attention, one would notice that they contained unfathomable power.

“That white protective formation was released by that stick?”

“What sort of treasure is that?”

“It’s actually able to release such a powerful spirit formation?”

“Even the Chu Heavenly Clansmen imprisoned by the Linghu Heavenly Clan are being protected by that spirit formation. It’s simply capable of moving about at will.”

Suddenly, the vast sea of people that filled heaven and earth all burst into a complete uproar.

None of them were able to remain collected.

None of them had ever witnessed such a powerful treasure before.

At that moment, they finally understood why Chu Feng would dare to show up knowing full well that it was a death trap.

They also realized that he had not been speaking nonsense earlier.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had a trump card in his hands.

Not only was this trump card capable of protecting his own safety, but it was likely capable of protecting all of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen too.

The reason why the crowd felt this way was because they were capable of sensing how powerful that spirit formation was.

“Chu Feng, did you really think that you’d be able to protect them with that spirit formation?”

At the moment when the crowd were all feeling astonished by the spirit formation, Linghu Zhishi’s cold voice was heard.

His voice was still filled with contempt. Even though that spirit formation was very powerful, Linghu Zhishi still did not place it in his eyes.

“Clan Chief Linghu, why don’t you personally experience how powerful this spirit formation of mine is?” asked Chu Feng.

“If I am to act, all of you will die,” as Linghu Zhishi spoke, he released his rank two Utmost Exalted oppressive might.

Rank two Utmost Exalted, that was the strongest cultivation in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Linghu Zhishi’s oppressive might wreaked havoc throughout the surroundings, sweeping away everything before its path.

As Linghu Zhishi was filled with anger, his oppressive might appeared particularly fierce.

He was planning to attack. Everyone knew that if Linghu Zhishi attacked, he would definitely unleash a massacre.

However, once he unleashed his oppressive might, his expression immediately changed.

Then, he turned his gaze behind him.

Following Linghu Zhishi's gaze, the crowd discovered that a body of light had appeared around Linghu Hongfei.

That body of light had enveloped him.

Even though that body of light was very small, and only capable of enveloping Linghu Hongfei alone, its shape and appearance was exactly the same as the light that had enveloped the Chu Heavenly Clansmen.

Chu Feng not only protected the Chu Heavenly Clansmen using that body of light, but he was actually also able to envelop Linghu Hongfei using that same body of light.

Chu Feng was simply able to move that body of light around at his heart's desire.

That said, the crowd were very confused as to why he would envelop Linghu Hongfei in such a protective spirit formation.

Could Chu Feng possibly be planning to protect Linghu Hongfei?

But, why would he possibly do that? The crowd all knew very well how much Chu Feng hated him.

Was he taunting Linghu Hongfei?

Was he humiliating him?

These were the first things that came to the crowd's mind.

However, the body of light that had enveloped Linghu Hongfei suddenly began to contract.

As the body of light shrunk, the space Linghu Hongfei had to move in grew smaller and smaller. If this were to continue, he would be squeezed to death by that body of light.

With the situation being like that, Linghu Hongfei started to panic. He tried his best to push the body of light away. However, he was unable to move it in the slightest.

With that, Linghu Hongfei began to use various abilities to breach the body of light. Unfortunately, no matter what sort of ability he used, he was unable to stop it from shrinking.

At that moment, the crowd came to a sudden realization.

Chu Feng was not merely planning to humiliate Linghu Hongfei.

That spirit formation of his was not only capable of protecting people, but it was also capable of killing.

“Clan Chief Linghu, are you still planning to stand around doing nothing? Do you want to watch as Linghu Hongfei is crushed to death?”

Chu Feng spoke with a beaming smile. Not only was he filled with indifference and ease, but his tone was even slightly ridiculing.

“Humph.”

Linghu Zhishi let out a cold snort. Then, he extended his hands.

He formed blades with his hands and thrust them toward the protective formation.

“Clank~~~”

However, his thrust did not manage to pierce through the protective formation. Instead, the impact of his thrust sent the protective formation and Linghu Hongfei flying.

“That spirit formation is actually that powerful?!”

Even though the crowd had already felt the power of the spirit formation, they were still astonished to personally witness Linghu Zhishi being unable to breach it.

After all, that was Linghu Zhishi, the strongest expert in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

“Damn it!”

At that moment, Linghu Zhishi began to use all sorts of methods to try to breach the protective formation.

Unfortunately, they were all useless. Whether he used his weapon, martial skills or Immortal Techniques, they were all completely ineffective. The protective formation was simply impregnable.

Linghu Zhishi was simply incapable of destroying it.

In fact, he was unable to even cause the slightest amount of damage to it.

He could only look on helplessly as Linghu Hongfei screamed in pain as he continued to be squeezed tighter and tighter by the protective formation...

Although he was the strongest expert in the Ancestral Martial Starfield, he was completely powerless to do anything.

It wasn't that he didn't wish to save Linghu Hongfei. Rather... he simply did not possess the ability to save him.

Chapter 3754 - The Unexpected

Seeing such a scene, the crowd all felt completely astonished.

Merely by using a treasure, Chu Feng was actually able to render the most powerful individual in the Ancestral Martial Starfield powerless.

The crowd all wanted to know where such a treasure came from. Thus, they all turned their gazes to Chu Feng.

It was not only the bystanders; even Chu Lingxi, Gu Mingyuan and the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief all looked at Chu Feng with a longing expression in their eyes.

They also all wanted to know where such a treasure had come from.

In fact, it was not only the others that were astonished. Chu Feng himself was also completely astonished.

Although he had sensed how powerful that spirit formation was, he had not expected it to be so powerful.

An existence like Linghu Zhishi was actually so weak and small before his spirit formation.

This made Chu Feng recall the words spoken by the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Perhaps the Ancestral Martial Starfield was truly extremely weak.

The Ancestral Martial Starfield was not only deemed trash by the other starfields in the Holy Light Galaxy, but it was also the trashiest of them all.

Otherwise, how could the strongest person in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield be unable to contend against a single treasure?

“Chu Feng, stop immediately! Otherwise, I will definitely eradicate your entire Chu Heavenly Clan!!!”

Suddenly, an ear-piercing roar exploded throughout the surroundings.

It was Linghu Zhishi’s voice. Accompanying that roar was a boundless amount of ice-cold and piercing killing intent.

Furthermore, the gaze that Linghu Zhishi was looking at Chu Feng with at that moment was exceptionally terrifying.

The Chu Heavenly Clansmen were so scared that they did not dare to look Linghu Zhishi in the eyes. As for the bystanders, their hearts all tensed up with fear upon seeing his gaze.

However, the expression of Chu Feng, the person that that terrifying gaze was focused on, remained completely unchanged.

Chu Feng knew why Linghu Zhishi had suddenly acted in such a manner.

Linghu Zhishi had been forced to desperate straits because Linghu Hongfei was on the verge of being crushed to death by Chu Feng. Yet he, Linghu Zhishi, was completely powerless to do anything.

“Clan Chief Linghu, those words of yours are quite dull and meaningless, no?”

“After all, you’d never planned to spare my Chu Heavenly Clan to begin with.”

“Rather than making such foolish claims, you should instead quickly think of a way to save Linghu Hongfei. Otherwise, he will really be crushed to death.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng turned his gaze to Linghu Hongfei.

Hearing those words, the crowd all subconsciously turned their gazes to him as well.

Even Linghu Zhishi was not an exception.

“Bang~~~”

At the moment when the crowd’s gazes all landed on Linghu Hongfei, a muffled explosion was heard.

Following that muffled explosion, white light scattered in all directions, along with a large pile of crimson blood.

All of it had come from Linghu Hongfei.

At that moment, the crowd were all astonished. They simply did not dare to believe their eyes.

After all, that person was Linghu Hongfei, the strongest genius of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, the future clan chief of the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

Linghu Hongfei was killed just like that?!

The manner in which Linghu Hongfei had died was simply too humiliating.

He was crushed to death by the protective formation!

If Chu Feng had killed him with his own hands, Linghu Hongfei would’ve enjoyed a much more honorable death than being crushed alive.

“Chu Feng, I’m going to kill you!!!”

After a brief moment of silence, an incomparably furious roar exploded again.

After that roar was heard, the whole region started to tremble violently. Even space itself was shattered.

Everyone could sense Linghu Zhishi’s current killing intent!!!

He was truly planning to unleash a massacre!!!

However, faced with Linghu Zhishi's threat, Chu Feng revealed a mocking smile.

He was smiling in the same manner as the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen had towards him earlier.

"You want my life?"

"I'm afraid you're powerless to even defend yourself."

After Chu Feng's voice was heard, the crowd's expressions all changed enormously.

Even Linghu Zhishi, the person emitting overflowing killing intent, was no exception.

At that moment, the crowd were able to see protective formations appearing around all of the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen. Even Linghu Zhishi was covered in a protective formation!!!

At that moment, endless panic began to spread through all the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen.

They had already realized how terrifying that protective formation was after they personally witnessed Linghu Hongfei's death.

And at that moment, that same terrifying spirit formation had enveloped every one of them.

To them, that was no longer an ordinary spirit formation. Instead, it was a spirit formation that demanded their lives.

Linghu Hongfei would not be the only death. All of the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen would die!!!

At that moment, the crowd felt extremely complicated.

Originally, they'd come to witness Chu Feng's death.

They were planning to witness Linghu Hongfei obtaining the title of the strongest person of the Ancestral Martial Starfield's younger generations.

They were planning to witness how tyrannical and powerful the Linghu Heavenly Clan, the new overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, was.

None of them had expected that instead of that, they would end up witnessing the death of Linghu Hongfei.

And now, they would be witnessing the extermination of the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

“Crack~~~”

“Crack~~~”

“Crack~~~”

“What is that sound?”

“Heavens! Isn’t that?!!!”

At the moment when the crowd felt that the Linghu Heavenly Clan would perish, cracking sounds began to be heard nonstop.

Looking toward the direction of the sounds, the crowd’s expressions all changed enormously.

Even Chu Feng was no exception.

They were astonished to discover that the powerful protective formation was shattering.

It was not only the protective formations around the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen that were shattering; even the ones around Chu Feng and the Chu Heavenly Clansmen were shattering!!!

Chapter 3755 - A Look Of Joy

“Why would this be happening?”

Gu Mingyuan and the others all turned their gazes to Chu Feng.

They all wanted to know why the protective formation would suddenly start shattering.

However, not even Chu Feng knew what was happening.

It was like he was losing control over the protective formation.

With the situation like that, it was already impossible for him to kill the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen with it.

Helpless, Chu Feng used the protective formation to shift the Chu Heavenly Clansmen imprisoned in the Linghu Heavenly Clan's warship over to his side.

Since he was no longer able to use the power of the protective formation to kill the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen, he could only maintain the power of the protective formation so that he could barely protect himself and the others.

Suddenly, a shattering sound was heard.

It was Linghu Zhishi.

Linghu Zhishi had managed to shatter the protective formation around him with a punch.

Even though he was simply unable to contend against the intact protective formation, the shattered protective formation was simply unable to withstand a single blow from him.

"They're doomed. It seems like Chu Feng's protective formation cannot be used for long."

"Chu Feng is going to suffer now."

Seeing that scene, the crowd's expressions became complicated.

All the things that had happened were simply too shocking.

When they felt that Chu Feng was doomed, he had unleashed the protective formation.

Through the overwhelming power of the protective formation, he had not only crushed Linghu Hongfei to death before Linghu Zhishi, but had also nearly exterminated the entire Linghu Heavenly Clan.

However, at the moment, when the crowd felt that Chu Feng would be able to extinguish the Linghu Heavenly Clan through that protective formation, the protective formation started to shatter.

Without the protective formation, how exactly was Chu Feng supposed to contend against Linghu Zhishi?

It was simply impossible for him to do so.

Judging from the current situation, it was no longer the Linghu Heavenly Clan that was forced into a corner. Instead it was Chu Feng and the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Chu Feng’s protective formation is done for! Look at that stick he’s holding in his hand!”

At that moment, the crowd turned their gazes to the stick Chu Feng held in his hand.

They could see that the white light originally emitted by the stick was dissipating, and the strange runes and symbols were also dimming. The great power of that stick seemed to be disappearing.

Seeing the change to the stick, Chu Feng shouted in his heart, “Don’t play this sort of joke with me at a time like this!”

Chu Feng was more nervous than anyone else. Even though he was trying his hardest to maintain the power of that protective formation...

... he was simply incapable of maintaining it.

Rather than saying that he was no longer able to continue to control the power of the protective formation, it was more accurate to say that the power of the protective formation was disappearing.

“What is going on? I clearly didn’t feel that this spirit formation had a time limit before.”

At the same time as Chu Feng was panicking, he was also feeling very puzzled.

The reason why he was so confused was because he was certain that the protective formation could be used continuously.

However, the current result was completely different from what he had imagined.

The protective formation was acting like it had reached its time limit, and was shattering.

As for the reason why Chu Feng was panicking, it was naturally because the only way he could contend against Linghu Zhishi was using that protective formation.

It was as the crowd was thinking, if Chu Feng were to lose the power of the protective formation, he would no longer be able to contend against Linghu Zhishi. After all, no matter how powerful he might be, he was only an Exalted.

“Crack, crack, crack~~~”

Shattering sounds exploded simultaneously in the sky.

At that moment, glass fragments shattered all over the heaven and earth.

All of the protective formations shattered at the same time.

As the white light that filled the sky started to sprinkle down like rain, all of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen revealed looks of despair.

Even the bystanders felt Chu Feng and the others to be doomed.

They were all able to tell by the way that things were looking...

The protective formation's shattering actually had nothing to do with Linghu Zhishi.

At the moment when the protective formation shattered, the stick in Chu Feng's hand returned to a dull and normal appearance.

The power of the protective formation had completely disappeared. Chu Feng's strongest trump card had disappeared.

“Done for, they're done for.”

The people that did not wish for Chu Feng's death all became dejected.

No matter how the situation was previously, Chu Feng's expression had remained unchanged the entire time.

Yet now, the crowd were able to witness panic on his face.

This made them realize that Chu Feng had been forced into a corner. Otherwise, he would not be reacting in such a manner.

“Chu Feng, I will dismember you into ten thousand pieces!!!”

Suddenly, a furious roar resounded throughout the sky. Linghu Zhishi's oppressive might had once again begun to wreak havoc.

It was not only his oppressive might. What terrified the crowd the most was his ice-cold killing intent.

This was the third time Linghu Zhishi had shouted so furiously in a short period of time.

Both his oppressive might and his killing intent were extremely strong.

However, of the three times, this time was the most terrifying to the crowd.

After all, no matter how furious Linghu Zhishi was previously, the protective formation was still there. Because of that, there was nothing Linghu Zhishi could do to Chu Feng.

At that time, Linghu Zhishi's furious roars sounded more like he was venting his helplessness, his unreconciliation.

However, it was different this time around. The current him was capable of obliterating Chu Feng and the others.

After all, the crowd all knew that even if Gu Mingyuan took those forbidden medicines, she would not be able to contend against Linghu Zhishi.

Although she was unable to contend against Linghu Zhishi, Gu Mingyuan still took out those forbidden medicines.

Even though she knew she would die, she still had to try to put up a final fight in this sort of situation.

However, to everyone's surprise, at the moment when the calamity was about to hit, the expression of the frowning and panicked Chu Feng suddenly changed.

Not only did that frown disappear from his face, but he even revealed a look of joy!!!

Chapter 3756 - Utmost Exalted Army

The spirit formation had disappeared. The stick in Chu Feng's hand appeared to be a completely ordinary stick.

Yet, holding the stick, Chu Feng was able to sense a completely different sort of power.

It was precisely this power that brought a smile to Chu Feng's face.

Holding the wooden stick in his hand, Chu Feng spoke softly, "Senior, you must've done this on purpose."

"Never would I have imagined that you'd play this sort of joke with me."

"Chu Feng's actually smiling?"

At the moment when the crowd were thinking that Chu Feng was doomed, some people were surprised to discover that he actually had a smile on his face.

Hearing some people mentioning Chu Feng's smile, the others also turned their gazes to him.

Upon doing so, they were all surprised. All of them noticed the smile on Chu Feng's face.

Could it be that Chu Feng still had another trump card?

Or could it be that Chu Feng had deliberately concealed the protective formation, that it had not actually shattered and disappeared?

Seeing Chu Feng smiling like that, the crowd were unable to keep themselves from thinking of these sorts of possibilities.

It was not only the bystanders that were thinking that way; even Linghu Zhishi himself was thinking that way.

Because of that, his overwhelming killing intent grew much weaker.

He did not dare to act blindly without thinking.

After all, he had personally experienced how powerful Chu Feng's protective formation was.

He knew that if the protective formation was present, it would be impossible for him to win.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke, "Linghu Zhishi, did you really think you've won?"

He had a look of confidence on his face as he said those words.

"You..."

"What are you implying?" Linghu Zhishi asked sternly.

Not only was his tone no longer unyielding as he said those words, but even the overflowing killing intent that filled the sky had completely vanished.

He was... afraid.

Even though the crowd were unwilling to believe it, it was the truth presented before them.

The protective formation had already disappeared. Yet, Linghu Zhishi still did not dare to attack Chu Feng.

He was afraid, afraid that Chu Feng had done all of this on purpose.

He was afraid that Chu Feng would be able to envelop them with the protective formation again should he so desire. Thus... he was seeking a way out of the situation.

Linghu Zhishi wanted to seek for peace with Chu Feng. Although he did not mention that explicitly, the easing of his tone and removal of his killing intent had both revealed to the crowd his desire for peace.

“Lord Clan Chief, we absolutely cannot spare him!”

“We must avenge Hongfei!!!”

Suddenly, a furious shout was heard. Then, a figure, with overwhelming killing intent rushed towards Chu Feng.

Flying towards Chu Feng was also the oppressive might of an Utmost Exalted. It was the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Supreme Elder, Linghu Wentai.

When even the bystanders noticed Linghu Zhishi’s desire for peace, Linghu Wentai naturally noticed it too.

Thus, he who did not want peace decided to directly attack Chu Feng.

“Courting death.”

However, before Linghu Wentai could reach Chu Feng, Gu Mingyuan had shot forth her palm explosively.

The power of her palm was so strong that it instantly engulfed Linghu Wentai.

Following a muffled sound, blood splattered everywhere. Linghu Wentai’s body had been smashed to pieces.

Although Gu Mingyuan’s actual cultivation was only that of a rank one Utmost Exalted, she was able to increase her cultivation to rank two Utmost Exalted through her bloodline’s power. Thus, Linghu Wentai was unable to withstand even a single attack from her.

Earlier, Gu Mingyuan was holding back when she attacked Linghu Wentai. Thus, she had only simply injured him.

However, this time around, she was no longer showing any leniency, and directly killed him.

Seeing Linghu Wentai being killed by Gu Mingyuan in such a manner, the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen all felt endless sadness.

In fact, even the bystanders felt sadness.

Utmost Exalted-level experts were extremely sparse in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

The death of every one of them represented a loss to their entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

“Hahaha...”

To everyone’s surprise, after Linghu Wentai died, Linghu Zhishi burst into loud laughter.

Even though Linghu Wentai’s death should be sad for him, he was laughing with no trace of sadness on his face. Instead, he seemed to be feeling joyous.

This greatly confused the crowd.

“Turns out that protective formation of yours has indeed disappeared. You are deliberately mystifying things to deceive us,” said Linghu Zhishi.

Hearing those words, the crowd came to a sudden realization as to why Linghu Zhishi was laughing.

Linghu Wentai’s death had proved that Chu Feng’s protective formation had indeed disappeared.

Indeed, if that protective formation were still present, why didn’t Chu Feng use it to take care of Linghu Wentai? Why would he need Gu Mingyuan to act to protect him?

However, even if that was the case, Linghu Zhishi still shouldn’t be laughing like that. After all, the person who had died was his Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Supreme Elder, one of his close aides.

From Linghu Zhishi’s laughter, the crowd realized that Linghu Wentai was simply insignificant in Linghu Zhishi’s eyes. Because of that, he was not at all affected by his death.

Linghu Zhishi was truly ruthless. He remained indifferent even at the death of such an important member of his clan.

“Indeed, the power of that spirit formation has disappeared. However, you will only die in a more miserable manner.”

“After all, you will be personally killed by me.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng suddenly raised the stick in his hand.

Once Chu Feng raised the stick and silvery light immediately started shining all over.

In the next instant, the crowd noticed a silver halberd in Chu Feng's hand.

That silver halberd gave off an extraordinary air, and captured everyone's attention.

After all, that was the Battle God's Halberd.

Merely, the Battle God's Halberd was a legendary item. Very few people had ever seen it before.

Thus, the crowd had no idea that it was the Battle God's Halberd. They were only able to tell that the halberd in Chu Feng's hand was an extraordinary weapon.

That said, the crowd were still confused. Even if the weapon itself was an extraordinary weapon, it was still only a weapon. How could Chu Feng possibly be able to kill Linghu Zhishi with it?

Different from treasures, a weapon's power could only be unleashed should a cultivator of matching cultivation utilize it.

This was especially true in terms of the halberd in Chu Feng's hand. Although it emitted an extraordinary air akin to a ruler descending upon the world of mortals, the crowd were unable to determine what sort of weapon it was.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

At the moment when the crowd were all feeling confused, the silver halberd began to release streams of light.

“Heavens, what are those?!!!”

In the next moment, the crowd were all stupefied. Endless astonishment filled their eyes.

The reason for that was because there were over ten thousand guardian spirits, like an army, standing before Chu Feng in neat rows.

The appearances of the guardian spirits need not be described, as what astonished the crowd the most was their cultivation.

After all, those ten thousand guardian spirits were all Utmost Exalted-level existences!!!

Chapter 3757 - The Power Of The Battle God's Halberd

“Am I seeing things? This aura, it seems to be the aura of Utmost Exalted-level existences?!”

“There's no mistake. I'm also able to sense it. They are all Utmost Exalted.”

“What are those? They actually all possess Utmost Exalted-level cultivations?”

Seeing the army of Utmost Exalted-level guardian spirits half-kneeling before Chu Feng, the crowd felt completely astonished. At the same time, they were unable to contain the fear in their hearts.

Afraid. They would naturally be afraid. After all, those were ten thousand Utmost Exalted-level existences.

The crowd all knew very well what ten thousand Utmost Exalted-level existences represented.

“What is it that you're holding in your hand?” Linghu Zhishi asked as he looked at the silver halberd in Chu Feng's hand.

The crowd were all able to tell that the ten thousand Utmost Exalted-level existences were all being controlled by the silver halberd in Chu Feng's hand.

It was a rare treasure. Should one possess that treasure, it would be equivalent to controlling an army of Utmost Exalted.

Thus, Linghu Zhishi really wanted to know exactly what that treasure was.

Before Chu Feng could answer, Grandmaster Liangqiu answered, “That's the Battle God's Halberd.”

“Battle God's Halberd?!”

Hearing those words, the already astonished crowd all gasped with astonishment.

After all, the Battle God's Halberd was renowned throughout the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield. Everyone knew about it.

It was also precisely because the crowd knew how exceptional an item the Battle God's Halberd was that they were skeptical that Chu Feng's halberd was it.

After all, the Battle God's Halberd was hidden within the Mirror Sea. As for the Mirror Sea, the crowd all knew how dangerous a place it was.

That place was deemed to be one of the most dangerous places in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Could Chu Feng really have obtained such a legendary item?

Seemingly sensing the skepticism of the crowd, Grandmaster Liangqiu repeated himself. "Indeed, that is the Mirror Sea's Battle God's Halberd."

"It's actually the Battle God's Halberd!"

After Grandmaster Liangqiu repeated himself, the crowd all opened their mouths wide with shock.

At the same time, the gazes with which they looked at Chu Feng had changed again.

He had simply shocked them too many times in one day.

He had defeated Linghu Hongfei, unleashed a heaven-defying spirit formation, and then revealed the legendary Battle God's Halberd too.

Chu Feng's performance had far surpassed the crowd's expectations. In fact, he had smashed the crowd's imaginations.

"I truly never would've imagined that you actually obtained even the Battle God's Halberd."

"However, do you actually think that you're able to win against me using only those things?"

"Chu Feng, you're a cultivator yourself. How could you not understand that the disparity between cultivation is not something that numbers can make up for?"

“Today, I will have you, Chu Feng, die with understanding. I will have you witness how your rank one Utmost Exalted are completely useless before me.”

As Linghu Zhishi spoke, his clothes fluttered, and his overwhelming oppressive might started surging towards Chu Feng with a power capable of toppling mountains and overturning seas.

At that moment, he was no longer using his oppressive might to scare Chu Feng. Instead, he had truly used his oppressive might to attack him.

At that moment, the crowd were all able to witness how powerful a rank two Utmost Exalted was.

Even though an army of ten thousand Utmost Exalted was extremely astonishing, those Utmost Exalted guardian spirits appeared very small and weak by comparison.

This was a match with a massive disparity in strength.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, silvery light started to shine brightly, illuminating the surroundings.

As that silvery light filled the surroundings, Linghu Zhishi’s oppressive might was forcibly suppressed.

Seeing that, the first reaction of the crowd was to look at Gu Mingyuan.

After all, she was the only person that they felt to be remotely capable of contending against Linghu Zhishi.

However, when the crowd looked to Gu Mingyuan, they discovered that she had a look of bewilderment on her face. This meant that she was not the one who had blocked Linghu Zhishi’s oppressive might.

Thus, the crowd all turned their gazes to Chu Feng, who stood beside her.

The dazzling silvery light was being emitted from him.

Upon doing so, the crowd were astonished to discover that it was actually Chu Feng who had blocked Linghu Zhishi’s oppressive might.

The current Chu Feng was not only emitting the same sort of silvery light as the Battle God's Halberd, but even his aura was identical to the Battle God's Halberd. The current Chu Feng seemed to have fused with the Battle God's Halberd.

Most importantly, the aura Chu Feng currently emitted was that of a rank two Utmost Exalted!!!

"You still don't understand the true power of the Battle God's Halberd."

"That said, that cannot be blamed on you. After all, one can only sense its true power while holding it," Chu Feng said to Linghu Zhishi.

What Chu Feng said was the truth. When Chu Feng saw the Ox-nosed Old Daoist holding the Battle God's Halberd back then, he, like the crowd now, only thought the Battle God's Halberd's power to be an army of ten thousand Utmost Exalted guardian spirits.

However, after holding the Battle God's Halberd, Chu Feng discovered that it was much more powerful.

Even though he was only granted the power of a rank two Utmost Exalted by the Battle God's Halberd at that moment, Chu Feng was able to sense that rank two Utmost Exalted was most definitely not its true power.

It was merely that he could not handle its true power.

It was like the Battle God's Halberd had said to him before.

Chu Feng had only gained a preliminary acknowledgement from it. Thus, he could not grasp its full power.

That said, even though it was only the cultivation of a rank two Utmost Exalted, it was already sufficient for Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, let us take care of him together." *noVe(lB)In*

As Gu Mingyuan spoke, she planned to take the forbidden medicines she held in her hand to assist Chu Feng.

However, before she could put the forbidden medicines in her mouth, all of the forbidden medicines shattered.

They were all destroyed.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing?”

Seeing that, Gu Mingyuan looked to Chu Feng, who stood beside her.

She knew that it was Chu Feng who had destroyed those forbidden medicines.

Those forbidden medicines were their hope. Now that he had destroyed them, it was equivalent to having ruined their hope.

Because of that, Gu Mingyuan was slightly angry. She was unable to understand why he would do such a thing.

Although Chu Feng was able to tell that Gu Mingyuan was angry, he did not fluster. Instead, he smiled.

“Senior, there’s no need for you to act to take care of him.”

“Please go and rest. Allow me to take care of this clan chief.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng turned his gaze to Linghu Zhishi. “I’ve told you, I will kill you personally.”

“Heh...” Hearing those words, Linghu Zhishi let out a mocking laugh.

He said, “Even rank two Utmost Exalted differ in strength. Obtaining the power of a rank two Utmost Exalted through the use of a weapon is no different from Gu Mingyuan’s rank two Utmost Exalted power that she obtained from her bloodline power.”

“Chu Feng, since you have such a deathwish, I will let you witness the true power of a rank two Utmost Exalted.”

“Woosh~~~”

Right after Linghu Zhishi finished saying those words, his expression changed enormously.

He was astonished to discover that Chu Feng had disappeared.

When Chu Feng reappeared, he was right in front of Linghu Zhishi.

The Battle God's Halberd in Chu Feng's hand streaked across the sky and swept towards him.

"Bang~~~"

The halberd struck. Linghu Zhishi was sent flying.

Everything had happened too quickly. The crowd were simply unable to see the details of what had happened.

After everything was over, the crowd noticed that Chu Feng was standing where Linghu Zhishi stood previously.

As for Linghu Zhishi, he had retreated several tens of thousands of meters away.

Furthermore, a bloody wound was present on his chest.

Chapter 3758 - Strange Laughter

"Chu Feng actually managed to injure Linghu Zhishi?"

"This... this is simply too unimaginable!"

"Even if the Battle God's Halberd has increased his cultivation, it has only increased his cultivation to rank two Utmost Exalted, no?"

The crowd were all exclaiming in admiration. If they hadn't witnessed it with their own eyes, they simply wouldn't dare to believe that Chu Feng could actually injure Linghu Zhishi.

In fact, even Linghu Zhishi himself had a look of disbelief on his face as he looked at his wound.

He had felt that using a treasure to increase one's cultivation simply could not be compared to actual cultivation gained through training.

It was much like how he still viewed Gu Mingyuan to be an ant, completely powerless to contend against him, even though she had managed to increase her cultivation to rank two Utmost Exalted through her bloodline's power.

n))OveL&1n

Even if Gu Mingyuan was to take those forbidden medicines, Linghu Zhishi still wouldn't place her in his eyes.

Thus, even though Chu Feng was holding the legendary weapon, the Battle God's Halberd in his hand, Linghu Zhishi still did not place him in his eyes.

Yet, the person that he looked down on actually managed to inflict a serious injury upon him.

This greatly surprised Linghu Zhishi. At the same time... he found it completely intolerable.

To him, this was simply a humiliation.

"Chu Feng, I will dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!!!"

After a brief moment of being stunned, Linghu Zhishi let out a loud roar.

Then, he took out a weapon and rushed forward to attack Chu Feng.

His weapon was a top quality Incomplete Exalted Armament.

Even though one could use Incomplete Exalted Armaments at the Exalted realm, Utmost Exalted experts would be able to unleash its power even better.

Thus, with the Incomplete Exalted Armament in hand, Linghu Zhishi's battle power immediately surged.

However, even when facing such a Linghu Zhishi, Chu Feng still showed no trace of fear.

Holding the Battle God's Halberd in hand, he rushed forth.

"Boom, boom, boom, boom!!!"

Suddenly, rumbles sounded nonstop, and ripples began to wreak havoc everywhere.

Chu Feng and Linghu Zhishi had collided in battle.

Their battle had surpassed the observational abilities of the crowd.

Apart from Gu Mingyuan, the people present, including Utmost Exalted-level experts like Grandmaster Liangqiu, were all unable to clearly see the battle between Chu Feng and Linghu Zhishi.

In fact, even Gu Mingyuan was only able to see the general situation of the battle, and was unable to clearly see the fight between Chu Feng and Linghu Zhishi.

“That boy Chu Feng is truly powerful.”

Even though Gu Mingyuan was only able to see the rough situation of the battle, she was unable to keep herself from praising Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because she was capable of determining that he held the upper hand in the battle. He was suppressing Linghu Zhishi the entire time.

Even though Linghu Zhishi had revealed his Incomplete Exalted Armament and was using his martial skills, he was still unable to gain the slightest bit of an advantage over Chu Feng.

While it was most certainly true that the Battle God’s Halberd had bestowed Chu Feng with power, his superiority in the battle was most definitely also due to his own techniques.

In fact, Gu Mingyuan felt that Chu Feng was not going all-out. Facing Linghu Zhishi, the current strongest expert of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, Chu Feng was actually acting very confident and at-ease.

Because of that, Gu Mingyuan felt that should Chu Feng be given a sufficient cultivation, he would be able to obtain superiority over anyone in a battle.

Seeing the superiority displayed by Chu Feng, Gu Mingyuan not only had a look of joy in her eyes, but ice-cold killing intent also flashed through her eyes.

With ice-cold killing intent, she looked towards the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s army.

“Linghu Heavenly Clan, you all ought to pay the price.”

As Gu Mingyuan said those words, she began to walk toward the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s army. Furthermore, a sword appeared in her hand.

“Gu Mingyuan, what are you trying to do?!”

Seeing Gu Mingyuan walking towards them in such an aggressive manner, the expressions of the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Supreme Elders all changed enormously. They hurriedly stood before their clansmen.

“You all came here today with the intention to massacre us. Yet now, you’re asking me what I plan to do?”

“Since you want to know so much, I might as well tell you.”

“Today, I, Gu Mingyuan, will unleash a massacre upon your Linghu Heavenly Clan!!!”

“Woosh~~~”

After she finished saying those words, Gu Mingyuan’s body shifted, and she rushed towards the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s army.

With the help of her bloodline power, Gu Mingyuan’s cultivation was that of a rank two Utmost Exalted.

As for the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen, even their Supreme Elders were only rank one Utmost Exalted.

Such a Gu Mingyuan was simply akin to a ferocious beast entering a flock of sheep.

Not to mention the Linghu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, even those Supreme Elders were completely helpless before her.

Right after Gu Mingyuan moved, screams sounded nonstop, and blood splattered everywhere. A vast amount of blood poured down from the sky like rain.

In merely the blink of an eye, several thousand people were killed by Gu Mingyuan.

However, one needed to know that Gu Mingyuan did not utilize her oppressive might or any martial skills.

She was slaughtering those Linghu Heavenly Clansmen with the sword in her hand.

Furthermore, she was killing them with a slash each. However, even though she was using such a tedious method, she still managed to cause massive casualties to the Linghu Heavenly Clan in a short period of time.

Screams sounded nonstop. The Linghu Heavenly Clansmen were fleeing in all directions.

Fear, panic and the sound of weeping filled the vast sea of people.

However, those were all completely useless. To Gu Mingyuan, the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen were inferior to even a flock of sheep. They were more like a pile of fruits and vegetables.

For Gu Mingyuan, killing them was easier than cutting a gourd or chopping vegetables.

The more she killed, the more ferocious she became. She raised her hand and slashed her sword down without any hesitation.

“This...”

“This...”

At that moment, the crowd no longer had any heart to observe the battle between Chu Feng and Linghu Zhishi.

Instead, their gazes were all focused on the direction of the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen.

As they saw the rain of blood pouring down from the sky nonstop, and thought of how it was the blood of the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen, many people began to tremble with fear.

Massacre. This was truly a massacre. Gu Mingyuan was showing no hesitation at all as she slaughtered the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen.

“Gu Mingyuan, cease your hands!!!”

Seeing that, Linghu Zhishi let out a furious roar.

Gu Mingyuan was too powerful. If he didn't stop her, she would be able to massacre all his clansmen in no time.

Unfortunately, he was pinned down by Chu Feng. It was simply impossible for him to save his clansmen.

He could only watch as Gu Mingyuan massacred his clansmen one by one.

“Are you still not going to act?! How much longer are you planning to watch this show?!”

Suddenly, Linghu Zhishi let out another shout of anger.

After hearing his shout of anger, the crowd were all confused.

The reason for that was because his furious shout was not only a furious shout. It seemed more like he was speaking to someone.

However, his words were clearly not meant for the people present.

At the moment when the crowd were feeling confused, a strange laugh was heard.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk...”

“Linghu Heavenly Clan, you are all truly useless.”

“I’ve already helped you get rid of the Wuming Clan.”

“Yet, you are unable to even handle a bunch of trash from the Ancestral Martial Starfield?”

Chapter 3759 - Outsider’s Puppet

The noisy sky suddenly turned particularly quiet.

Even the screaming and wailing Linghu Heavenly Clansmen grew quiet.

At that moment, the crowd were able to witness a figure appearing among the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen.

That person was not someone from the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

That person wore black clothes and a conical bamboo hat. One could not see his appearance, and could not sense his aura.

However, at that moment, his hand had grabbed Gu Mingyuan's wrist.

He was the person who had stopped her, preventing her from continuing her massacre of the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen.

Even though she only had her wrist grabbed by that mysterious person, Gu Mingyuan's face was covered in pain.

“Senior!”

Seeing that Gu Mingyuan was injured, Chu Feng immediately turned around and rushed towards the black-clothed-bamboo-hat-wearing individual.

“Wuuahh~~~”

However, that person merely waved his sleeve, and Chu Feng was sent flying like a leaf.

At the instant that person attacked Chu Feng, the crowd finally managed to sense his aura.

Rank three Utmost Exalted. That mysterious individual was actually a rank three Utmost Exalted.

It was no wonder even Chu Feng was completely powerless before him.

“Who is that?”

The crowd all immediately felt a very deep sense of shock. However, more than being shocked by that person's cultivation, the crowd was extremely curious as to who he might be.

After all, they'd all heard what that person had said earlier.

Thus, at that moment, the crowd all understood that the Linghu Heavenly Clan had not defeated the Wuming Clan on their own. Instead, they'd received outside assistance.

It was likely that black-clothed individual that had helped the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

But, exactly who was that black-clothed individual? Judging from his words, he didn't seem to be someone from the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

The battle between the Linghu Heavenly Clan and the Wuming Clan was clearly an internal affair of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

If the Linghu Heavenly Clan had defeated the Wuming Clan with outside help, it would be too excessive.

The crowd were no fools. They knew that no one would help the Linghu Heavenly Clan without cause.

If they were willing to help the Linghu Heavenly Clan defeat the Wuming Clan, it would likely mean one thing.

That is, even after the Linghu Heavenly Clan defeated the Wuming Clan and became the overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, they would only be puppets.

The true overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield would be the person behind the Linghu Heavenly Clan, someone from another starfield.

No one in the Ancestral Martial Starfield wished for such a thing to happen. After all, no one wanted to be ruled by someone from another starfield.

Thus, after learning of this matter, the crowd's opinion of the Linghu Heavenly Clan changed completely.

Many people stopped acknowledging the Linghu Heavenly Clan, and some even began to feel utter disgust towards them.

For many people, they felt that the Linghu Heavenly Clan's behavior was simply an act of betrayal towards their Ancestral Martial Starfield. They were no different from detestable traitors.

Such a Linghu Heavenly Clan was unqualified to rule the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

“Do you plan to kill them yourself, or do you need my assistance?”

Right at that moment, the black-clothed individual looked at Linghu Zhishi.

“I'll do it myself.”

With anger-filled eyes, Linghu Zhishi's killing intent was surging violently.

As he spoke, he rushed towards Gu Mingyuan.

“Wuuahh~~~”

However, right after Linghu Zhishi moved, before he could even approach Gu Mingyuan, he let out a scream.

At the same time as he let out that scream, Linghu Zhishi stopped midair.

He was stopped. An arm had appeared before him. It was because Linghu Zhishi violently collided with that arm that he let out a scream.

At this moment, the crowd’s expressions all changed.

The reason for that was because many people recognized who the owner of that arm was.

That person was the Ancestral Martial Dragon City’s City Master, Long Daozhi.

It was Long Daozhi who had suddenly appeared and stopped Linghu Zhishi in his tracks.

But, no matter how powerful Long Daozhi might be, he was only the Ancestral Martial Dragon City’s City Master.

In the crowd’s opinion, no matter how powerful the Three Cities might be, they would, at the very most, only be on par with the Wuming Clan or the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

However, the scene before the crowd was Long Daozhi easily stopping Linghu Zhishi.

Long Daozhi’s cultivation was most definitely not only that of a rank two Utmost Exalted. Otherwise, he couldn’t possibly stop Linghu Zhishi so effortlessly.

That said, the crowd had no time to be astonished by Long Daozhi’s strength.

It was not only the Ancestral Martial Dragon City’s Long Daozhi that had appeared.

Two other figures had appeared beside Chu Feng and supported him.

Those two people were also top characters in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

They were respectively the Monstrous Holy City's City Master Xian Yuying, and the Divine Body Royal City's City Master Kong Shanwu.

The Three Cities' City Masters had all appeared.

Seeing the Three City Masters, the people of the Ancestral Martial Starfield reacted as if they'd seen hope.

After all, now that the Wuming Clan had been defeated, and the Linghu Heavenly Clan became an outsider's puppet, the only people they could rely on were the people of the Three Cities.

Thus, the three City Masters were the hope in the crowd's eyes. They were the final three people that could stand up for their Ancestral Martial Starfield.

"Linghu Zhishi, for the sake of defeating the Wuming Clan, you actually went as far as to become a puppet to another starfield?"

"You've truly disgraced our Ancestral Martial Starfield," Xian Yuying said to Linghu Zhishi.

Although the crowd had already guessed that, Xian Yuying's words confirmed their guesses.

The Linghu Heavenly Clan had indeed become another starfield's puppet.

At that moment, the Ancestral Martial Dragon City's City Master lifted Linghu Zhishi up single-handedly.

The previously imposing Linghu Zhishi was akin to a weak chick in Long Daozhi's hand. nove)lB)In

He tried his hardest to struggle free. However, his struggle was completely useless. With the situation being like that, fear appeared on his face.

"Milord, save me, save me!"

Helpless, Linghu Zhishi turned his gaze to the black-clothed individual.

He had realized that Long Daozhi was far stronger than he had imagined. He was simply unable to contend against him. The only person that could possibly save him would be that black-clothed individual.

“Wasn’t it said that the people from the Three Cities do not meddle in the matters of the Ancestral Martial Starfield?”

“Why would you all suddenly make an exception to the rule today? Sure enough, the proclamation of not interfering is a bunch of nonsense,” the black-clothed said individual as he looked at Long Daozhi.

Hearing those words, the Ancestral Martial Dragon City’s City Master smiled faintly. Then, he said, “I’ve already warned you people from the All-heaven Sect that it’s best you not involve yourselves in the matters of our Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

What?! All-heaven Sect?!!!

The Ancestral Martial Dragon City’s City Master’s words brought great shock to everyone present.

Even Chu Feng was shocked.

The crowd all knew very well who the All-heaven Sect was.

They were the overlords of the All-heaven Starfield.

The All-heaven Starfield was the neighboring starfield of the Ancestral Martial Starfield. Thus, the crowd all knew the All-heaven Starfield pretty well.

The All-heaven Starfield was also an Abandoned Starfield of the Holy Light Galaxy.

However, their overall power was superior to the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

It was precisely because the crowd knew about the All-heaven Sect that they became extremely worried. At the same time, they were also astonished.

With how powerful the All-heaven Sect was, if they were to truly decide to attack their Ancestral Martial Starfield, they would all suffer enormously.

After all, there was no power in the Ancestral Martial Starfield that was capable of contending against the All-heaven Sect. Not even the Three Cities would be able to contend against them.

“Warnings have always been the privilege of the strong.”

“What makes you qualified to warn me?” The black-clothed individual said to Long Daozhi.

Sure enough, it was as the crowd had anticipated.

Not even the Ancestral Martial Dragon City’s City Master managed to receive that All-heaven Sect’s individual’s respect. Instead, he only received contempt and humiliation.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3760 - The Powerful Long Daozhi - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3760 - The Powerful Long Daozhi

Chapter 3760 - The Powerful Long Daozhi

“You asked what makes me qualified to warn you?”

As Long Daozhi said those words, a faint smile appeared on his face.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, his body shifted, and he disappeared. When he reappeared, he was before the black-clothed individual.

“Eeahh~~~”

A scream was heard.

Everything happened too quickly. By the time the crowd reacted to what had happened, they saw that Long Daozhi was standing beside Gu Mingyuan.

As for that black-clothed individual, he had backed several steps away. His arm had been sliced off, and blood flowed from the stump of his shoulder nonstop.

Furthermore, a pained expression filled his face.

This made the crowd realize that his lost arm was most definitely not a simple physical wound. Instead, it was an injury to his soul.

It was similar to when Linghu Hongfei had dug out Chu Lingxi's eyes. That sort of injury to one's soul was very difficult to cure.

What astonished the crowd the most was the fact that the black-clothed individual, being a rank three Utmost Exalted, was so powerless and weak before Long Daozhi.

Because of that, the crowd realized that Long Daozhi's cultivation was at least that of a rank three Utmost Exalted. Otherwise, he couldn't possibly seriously injure the black-clothed individual so effortlessly.

Rank three Utmost Exalted. This cultivation had surpassed the crowd's understanding of Long Daozhi. Even though they all knew that he was very powerful, they had not expected him to be this powerful. His strength had long surpassed that of both the Wuming Clan and the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

It turned out that Long Daozhi was actually the strongest expert in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Suddenly, the crowd seemed to finally understand why the Wuming Clan, with how arrogant they were, would be so respectful towards the Three Cities.

Turned out, it was not only because the Three Cities did not involve themselves in the matters of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, but it was actually because the Three Cities were so powerful that not even the Wuming Clan dared to provoke them.

"Now do you think I'm qualified?" Long Daozhi asked the black-clothed man.

"You! You dare injure me?! I am a Supreme Elder of the All-heaven Sect!"

"You will pay for injuring me!"

"I will make all of the people of your Ancestral Martial Starfield pay for my lost arm!!!"

Suddenly, a furious shout filled with killing intent exploded in the sky.

It was that black-clothed individual. As he said those words, he actually removed his conical bamboo hat.

“It’s him?”

Seeing his appearance, the expressions of many people changed.

That person was named Tuoba Chengan. He was one of the All-heaven Sect’s Supreme Elders.

The All-heaven Sect had many Supreme Elders. However, only two of them were capable of becoming the All-heaven Sect’s Sectmaster’s right-hand and left-hand men. As for that Tuoba Chengan, he was one of them.

The status Tuoba Chengan possessed in the All-heaven Sect could be said to be beneath only a single person, and above everyone else.

His status was extraordinary. It could even be said to be extremely important.

Thus, when those people recognized Tuoba Chengan, their hearts all grew tense.

After all, the crowd all believed their Ancestral Martial Starfield to be far inferior to the All-heaven Sect. Although the strength Long Daozhi had displayed was astonishing, they were still worried.

They felt that Long Daozhi injuring Tuoba Chengan was akin to offending the All-heaven Sect. Thus, they were extremely afraid that the people from the All-heaven Sect would decide to openly invade their Ancestral Martial Starfield.

“You truly shouldn’t have said those words to me.”

However, Long Daozhi showed no trace of fear toward Tuoba Chengan’s threat. Instead, he shook his head.

Many people were confused by his reaction.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Long Daozhi moved again.

His speed was simply too fast. By the time the crowd reacted to it, Long Daozhi was no longer where he stood. He had appeared before Tuoba Chengan again.

“You... you...”

At that moment, Tuoba Chengan was trembling all over. His complexion had turned pale. Even speaking had become difficult. Not only was he so weak that he seemed to be on the verge of dying, but his eyes were also filled with disbelief.

He was not the only person who was feeling disbelief. After the crowd managed to get a clear view of the situation, they also felt great disbelief.

Long Daozhi was not only standing before Tuoba Chengan, but his arm had also pierced through Tuoba Chengan's dantian.

Earlier, Long Daozhi had only sliced off an arm from Tuoba Chengan. However, at that moment, Long Daozhi had destroyed Tuoba Chengan's cultivation.

This was truly what it meant by a loose tongue causing a lot of trouble. If Tuoba Chengan hadn't said what he did after losing his arm, Long Daozhi would not have pierced his dantian.

Originally, Long Daozhi had only planned to slice off an arm. However, afterwards, he had decided to cripple his cultivation instead.

"Woosh~~~"

Suddenly, Long Daozhi pulled out his arm. As for Tuoba Chengan, he had fallen to his knees in midair.

"We're done for. We're done for now!"

Seeing this scene, many people became terrified.

Through the matter of the Linghu Heavenly Clan becoming a puppet, they already knew that the All-heaven Sect wanted to rule their Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Merely, due to some reasons, they were unwilling to openly attempt to dominate the Ancestral Martial Starfield. That was the reason why they had decided to manipulate the Linghu Heavenly Clan from the shadows.

However, the situation at that moment had changed. Long Daozhi was a representative of their Ancestral Martial Starfield.

His act of crippling the All-heaven Sect's Supreme Elder's cultivation would be equivalent to issuing a challenge to the All-heaven Starfield.

With that, the Ancestral Martial Starfield would suffer the retaliation of the All-heaven Sect.

To the people of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, the All-heaven Sect was simply too powerful of an existence.

The war between the Linghu Heavenly Clan and the Wuming Clan would, at the very most, implicate some people.

However, if the All-heaven Starfield were to attack them, the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield would be implicated; everyone would be confronted with fatal danger.

That said, compared to the bystanders, the Ancestral Martial Dragon City's City Master Long Daozhi's expression remained unchanged. Not only did he did not show any signs of fear, but he instead spoke to Tuoba Chengan using an extremely cold and grim tone, "Tuoba Chengan, I will not kill you because I need you to return to the All-heaven Sect."

"You are to personally pass on my words to your All-heaven Sect's Sectmaster."

"Tell him to behave himself and stay within his All-heaven Starfield. Don't think about coming to our Ancestral Martial Starfield again."

"As for the matters today, our Ancestral Martial Starfield will not look further into it."

"But..."

"If he is to ignore my warning and attempt to pry into the matters of our Ancestral Martial Starfield again, tell him that he'd best be more secretive with his actions, and not allow me to find out about it."

"Otherwise, I, Long Daozhi, will become the opponent of your All-heaven Sect."

After saying those words, an ominous glint flashed through Long Daozhi's eyes.

Although that ominous glint lasted but an instant, it was captured completely by Tuoba Chengan.

Seeing that ominous glint, the previously furious Tuoba Chengan started to tremble again. Only a single emotion remained on his face -- intense fear.

Chapter 3761 - Scram!!!

With fear all over his face, Tuoba Chengan looked at Long Daozhi.

The fear on his face was not only visible to Long Daozhi. Even the bystanders were capable of noticing it.

This made the crowd realize that Long Daozhi seemed to be far stronger than they had imagined him to be.

After all, they'd heard about what sort of person Tuoba Chengan was.

If even someone like Tuoba Chengan was afraid, it would mean that Long Daozhi was likely capable of causing restraining fear to even the All-heaven Sect.

Thinking of that, the crowd's fear towards the All-heaven Sect decreased a lot.

That said, at the time when the great majority of the crowd were starting to ease their hearts, there were also many people that became even more afraid, even more on edge.

They were the people from the Linghu Heavenly Clan led by Linghu Zhishi.

Long Daozhi had come out precisely to uphold justice.

They had been the ones colluding with the All-heaven Sect. Now that Tuoba Chengan had been taken care of, it was their turn to suffer.

The more powerful Long Daozhi was, the worse it was for them.

"Why are you still standing there? Scram," Long Daozhi looked at Tuoba Chengan and spoke coldly.

Hearing those words, Tuoba Chengan actually didn't say anything, and immediately dragged his weak body away and rapidly fled.

Although Long Daozhi had crippled Tuoba Chengan's cultivation, he did not cripple it completely.

In the end, Long Daozhi had acted leniently.

To be exact, Tuoba Chengan's cultivation was currently decreasing. If he was treated quickly, his cultivation could still be saved.

That said, it remained that Tuoba Chengan was seriously injured. Thus, he would likely not be able to save that rank three Utmost Exalted cultivation of his.

.....

"Linghu Zhishi, how does it feel to be a puppet?"

Sure enough, after Tuoba Chengan left, Long Daozhi turned his gaze to Linghu Zhishi.

"City Master Long, I truly didn't become their puppet. They were the ones that came to make a connection with me of their own accord. They told me they would help me take care of the Wuming Clan. Never did they say that they would meddle in the affairs of the Ancestral Martial Starfield."

"City Master Long, you should know about the resources of our Ancestral Martial Starfield too. Our resources are far inferior to their All-heaven Starfield's. There is nothing in our Ancestral Martial Starfield that they would want."

Linghu Zhishi tried his hardest to explain. He was trying to remove the accusation that he was being used as a puppet.

"Do you take me for a fool, or are you taking everyone present here to be fools?" Long Daozhi narrowed his brows and asked coldly.

"I..." Linghu Zhishi wanted to say something.

However, before he could say anything, he was shouted down angrily by Long Daozhi, "Shut up!"

No matter how unwilling Linghu Zhishi might be, he could only grit his teeth and not dare to say anything. Like a student being punished by his teacher, he lowered his head in silence, afraid to argue.

At that moment, the people present had a whole new level of respect for Long Daozhi. Naturally, this included Linghu Zhishi.

Linghu Zhishi truly never would've imagined that Long Daozhi was actually that powerful.

He was so powerful that even the rank three Utmost Exalted Tuoba Chengan was completely powerless before him.

Linghu Zhishi felt that Long Daozhi was at least a rank three Utmost Exalted. It might even be possible for him to be a rank four Utmost Exalted.

Not even the All-heaven Sect would dare to rashly provoke an existence like Long Daozhi. As for him, it was simply impossible.

Suddenly, Long Daozhi waved his hand at Linghu Zhishi. "Scram."

"Take your clansmen with you and scam."

When Long Daozhi said those words, his tone was filled with disappointment.

"We can't let them get away just like this."

Right after Long Daozhi said those words, Gu Mingyuan spoke out against it.

She still had a furious look on her face. Her eyes were like two sharp blades as she stared at Linghu Zhishi, who stood beside Long Daozhi.

"Gu Mingyuan, Chu Feng, please give me face today and drop this subject for the time being."

Long Daozhi looked at Gu Mingyuan, and also took a glance at Chu Feng when he said those words.

"How could we spare them? They nearly massacred the entire Chu Heavenly Clan."

"How could we let traitors like them get away just like this?"

Gu Mingyuan was still unwilling to drop the matter.

"Senior, it's enough," Chu Feng arrived beside Gu Mingyuan.

Chu Feng understood that if it wasn't for Long Daozhi's arrival, they would most likely all be dead.

After all, at the final moment, Linghu Zhishi was no longer someone they were afraid of. Instead, it was that All-heaven Sect's Supreme Elder Tuoba Chengan who became their most dangerous foe.

Facing a rank three Utmost Exalted-level expert, even if he possessed the Battle God's Halberd, Chu Feng still did not hold absolute certainty in being able to win against him.

It could be said that without a doubt, Long Daozhi had saved their lives. Thus, Chu Feng would naturally have to agree to his request.

After all, in the end, the ones that had suffered the most were the Linghu Heavenly Clan. At least, he had managed to avenge Chu Lingxi.

After Chu Feng spoke out, Gu Mingyuan's expression changed repeatedly. In the end, she said no more.

The crowd were truly surprised that Gu Mingyuan, with how hot-tempered and fearless she was, with how she dared to go against Long Daozhi even after everyone witnessed how powerful he was, would actually be persuaded by a single sentence from Chu Feng when Long Daozhi's persuasion had failed.

The crowd were truly unable to understand it. They were unable to understand why a person of the younger generation like Chu Feng would hold such weight to someone like Gu Mingyuan.

In fact, even Chu Lingxi was surprised by her mother's reaction.

Although he had decided to give Long Daozhi face. Chu Feng still held misgivings in his heart. After all, Linghu Zhishi was still a very dangerous person.

Thus, Chu Feng did not directly agree for the matter to be dropped. Instead, he said to Long Daozhi, "Senior, while I can spare them today, if they are to cause trouble for me again, I will definitely not spare them easily."

"Chu Feng, you can rest assured. Not only will the Linghu Heavenly Clan not cause trouble for you again, if they dare to cause trouble for anyone in the

Ancestral Martial Starfield, I will not forgive them," Long Daozhi guaranteed Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Linghu Zhishi's expression turned very ugly.

It was one thing for them to not attack Chu Feng, Gu Mingyuan and the others. However, Long Daozhi actually stated that he would not allow them to attack anyone in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

With that, wouldn't it mean that their Linghu Heavenly Clan could not offend anyone in the Ancestral Martial Starfield?

If that were the case, what sort of status would their Linghu Heavenly Clan still have in the Ancestral Martial Starfield?

"Did you not hear what I just said?"

"Why are you still standing here? Take your clansmen and scam!"

Right at that moment, Long Daozhi spoke to Linghu Zhishi again.

His words were extremely merciless. Already displeased, Linghu Zhishi felt even more displeased upon hearing those words.

However, he still did not dare to show his displeasure. With an eagerly attentive expression, he clasped his fist and bowed to Long Daozhi.

"Thank you for being lenient, City Master Long."

After saying those words, Linghu Zhishi turned around and withdrew with his Linghu Heavenly Clansmen.

Seeing the withdrawing Linghu Heavenly Clansmen, many people gasped with awe.

After all, the Linghu Heavenly Clan had just become the overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

However, they simply had none of the demeanor of an overlord now. They simply resembled a bunch of stray dogs. All of their dignity, honor and status had been forfeited.

Before that, no one had anticipated that the awe-inspiring Linghu Heavenly Clan would be reduced to such a state.

To everyone's surprise, Long Daozhi suddenly spoke again.

Long Daozhi's words not only astonished the people of the Linghu Heavenly Clan, but they also astonished Chu Feng and others.

"When I said scram, I was telling you to scram out of the Ancestral Martial Starfield."

Chapter 3762 - New Master

"Scram out of the Ancestral Martial Starfield?"

The crowd were all shocked upon hearing those words.

The Linghu Heavenly Clansmen were doubting their ears, wondering if they had misheard things.

After all, if they were banished from the Ancestral Martial Starfield, it would be an enormous shame and humiliation for their Linghu Heavenly Clan.

Where could they go? Regardless of where they decided to go, they would still become a laughingstock.

To leave on their own and to be banished were two completely different things.

"People like you aren't qualified to stay in the Ancestral Martial Starfield."

"I will give you all a month to scram out of the Ancestral Martial Starfield. If there are still people from the Linghu Heavenly Clan in the Ancestral Martial Starfield after a month passes, I will kill every single one I see," said Long Daozhi.

"City Master Long, please show leniency upon us. Please show leniency upon us."

Suddenly, with a putt, a person kneeled on the ground. It was the Linghu Heavenly Clan's Supreme Elder, Linghu Yuhua.

Following her, many other Linghu Heavenly Clansmen also knelt.

Linghu Yuhua's aged face was filled with tears.

Leading the Linghu Heavenly Clansmen, she begged, "City Master Long, our Linghu Heavenly Clan has existed in the Ancestral Martial Starfield for generations."

"I know that we've made an enormous blunder. But please give us a chance to make amends for our fault."

"You can punish us however you want, but please do not banish us from the Ancestral Martial Starfield, our root and our home."

"One must pay for one's mistake. The fault of one's clan chief shall be borne by the entire clan," Long Daozhi said.

"Why are you all crying?! Our root is not with the Ancestral Martial Starfield. Instead, it's with our Lord Clan Chief. Wherever he goes, we follow. Wherever he is shall be our root."

Seeing the crying and begging Linghu Yuhua and others, there were Linghu Heavenly Clansmen that lashed out at them.

With that many people stood up again. However, there was a large portion of them that were still on their knees, still pleading to Long Daozhi.

"City Master Long, please, we beg of you, please show leniency upon us, please allow us to stay."

Linghu Yuhua and the others were still begging and weeping bitter tears. Their grief-filled and heartbroken appearances did not seem to be fake.

Seeing that, Chu Feng was somewhat touched.

He discovered that when the Linghu Heavenly Clan was in fatal danger earlier, many people had knelt and begged for forgiveness out of fear.

However, those people that were begging for forgiveness earlier were not the same people begging for forgiveness at that moment.

The people that had begged for forgiveness before had done so for the sake of staying alive.

However, Linghu Yuhua and the others were begging because they did not wish to leave their home, did not wish to leave the place that their ancestors had taken root in.

“If you insist on staying, that’s fine too.”

“However, I have two demands.”

“Firstly, if you are to stay, you will only be allowed to stay in your Linghu Heavenly Clan’s Upper Realm. For ten thousand years, no one is allowed to leave.”

“I will dispatch people to monitor you for these ten thousand years. If I am to discover anyone disobeying that rule, they will be executed on the spot.”

“Secondly, Linghu Zhishi must scam out of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

Long Daozhi looked at Linghu Zhishi as he said those words.

“Ah?”

Hearing those words, the crowd’s expressions all changed.

They understood Long Daozhi’s intention.

He was giving Linghu Yuhua and the others a choice between two options. They could either leave with Linghu Zhishi, or they could stay in the Ancestral Martial Starfield. However, if they decided to stay, they would be monitored like criminals for ten thousand years.

Faced with the choice between the two, Linghu Yuhua and the others kneeling on the ground, all became quiet.

Their silence made Linghu Zhishi realize what their decision was.

Linghu Yuhua and the others had chosen to stay in the Ancestral Martial Starfield. They were not going to follow him.

“Elder Yuhua, you all are capable of making your own choices. I will not blame you.”

“However, a Linghu Heavenly Clan without me, Linghu Zhishi, will no longer be the actual Linghu Heavenly Clan.”

“Thus, I hope you all will not regret your decision today.”

After Linghu Zhishi finished saying those words to Linghu Yuhua, he waved his sleeve and left without a second thought.

As he left, a voice resonated throughout the sky.

“Those who still recognize me, Linghu Zhishi, as the clan chief, follow me.”

Once his words were said, a large amount of Linghu Heavenly Clansmen immediately followed him and left with him.

A small portion of the people kneeling on the ground hesitated for a while before standing up and following him as well.

However, the great majority of those kneeling, remained there. This included Linghu Yuhua.

“Elder Yuhua.”

Suddenly, a voice was heard. At the same time, a figure appeared beside Linghu Yuhua.

That person was Linghu Yueyue.

At that moment, Linghu Yueyue’s eyes were very red. Tearstains were visible on her face.

Although she was not crying, one could tell from her withered face that she had had a very tortuous experience.

That was understandable. After all, too many things had happened. To the Linghu Heavenly Clan, what had happened on that day, was simply an enormous shock. Even elders like Linghu Yuhua found it very difficult to accept, much less a person of the younger generation like Linghu Yueyue.

“Yueyue, you don’t have to try to persuade me.”

“I’m already very old, and will not be able to live for much longer. I only wish to be able to die in the clan,” Linghu Yuhua had a smile as she said those words.

Seeing the smile on Linghu Yuhua’s face, Linghu Yueyue seemed to have suddenly realized something.

“Senior, in that case, please take care of yourselves.”

After Linghu Yueyue finished saying those words, she turned around and followed Linghu Zhishi.

When she turned around, her gaze swept by Chu Feng.

There was deep resentment in her eyes. However, there was no killing intent.

Linghu Zhishi left leading the great majority of the people of the Linghu Heavenly Clan. However, the direction that they left in was not towards their Linghu Heavenly Clan. It could be seen that they'd chosen to directly leave the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

“You all should leave too,” Long Daozhi said to Linghu Yuhua.

“Thank you, City Master Long.”

After expressing their thanks, Linghu Yuhua and the others also got up in succession.

Soon, the Linghu Heavenly Clan's army split into two, and all disappeared before Chu Feng and the others' sight.

“City Master Long, a group cannot be without a leader. The starfield cannot be without a master.”

“City Master Long, please make a decision for us!”

Suddenly, someone half-knelt on the ground and bowed respectfully to Long Daozhi.

Immediately afterward, practically everyone present half-kneeled on the ground and bowed respectfully to Long Daozhi. Even the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief did the same.

Only Chu Feng, Gu Mingyuan, Chu Lingxi and a few others still stood there, stunned.

“Everyone, please get up.”

Long Daozhi raised his arm, and the people half-kneeling on the ground were all forcibly brought back to their feet.

“Everyone, I believe you all know very well that our Three Cities never involve ourselves in the matters of the Ancestral Martial Starfield. The only reason we acted today was because we were forced with no alternative. I, Long Daozhi, could not allow myself to look on as the Ancestral Martial Starfield was reduced to a domain of the All-heaven Starfield without doing anything.”

“However, our Three Cities made a pledge. That is, we will not rule over the Ancestral Martial Starfield,” said Long Daozhi.

“City Master Long, you cannot disregard us at a time like this...”

Hearing those words, the crowd immediately knelt again and began to beg Long Daozhi to lead them.

After witnessing his strength, they all hoped that he would rule the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

After all, if they had a ruler as powerful as Long Daozhi, their safety would be ensured.

However, if Long Daozhi and the Three Cities were all unwilling to become the Ancestral Martial Starfield’s overlord, who else in the Ancestral Martial Starfield could possibly take on such a task, such a heavy responsibility?

They couldn’t possibly allow the various powers to fight over that position. If that were to happen, another bloodbath would occur.

The Ancestral Martial Starfield had already lost the Wuming Clan and the Linghu Heavenly Clan, their two strongest powers, in succession.

They could not afford to have another war.

Seemingly understanding what the crowd were thinking, Long Daozhi spoke again, “Actually, regarding the position of the Ancestral Martial Starfield’s master, I already had someone in mind. Merely, I don’t know if everyone might agree with my decision.”

Chapter 3763 - The Disapproved Overlord

“City Master Long, please tell us who that person is.”

The crowd spoke in succession after Long Daozhi's words left his mouth. They all wanted to know who he would recommend to become the new overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

"I feel that the person in the Ancestral Martial Starfield that is most capable of managing it would be the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief."

Long Daozhi turned his gaze to the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief as he said those words.

"Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief?"

The crowd's gazes followed Long Daozhi. Upon confirming that the person Long Daozhi was speaking of was indeed the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, they immediately burst into a complete uproar.

If the Three Cities were to refuse to assume control over the Ancestral Martial Starfield, it would normally mean that the new overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield would be determined by strength.

With that, it would be Gu Mingyuan who was most qualified to assume that position. Although she was a rank one Utmost Exalted, she was capable of increasing her cultivation to rank two Utmost Exalted through her bloodline's power. Her strength was truly powerful. It could be said that after the Linghu Heavenly Clan left, apart from the Three Cities, no one in the Ancestral Martial Starfield would be able to rival her.

Gu Mingyuan's only shortcoming was her excessively fiery temper. If she were to become the Ancestral Martial Starfield's overlord, she would definitely be a tyrant.

However, even if Gu Mingyuan was a no-go, there was still the Tantai Heavenly Clan and the Jiaoli Heavenly Clan.

No matter what, it wouldn't be the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's turn.

Ignoring the fact that the Chu Heavenly Clan had a very low status in the Ancestral Martial Starfield to begin with, their clan chief was only a peak Exalted.

Although peak Exalted was only a step away from Utmost Exalted, there was an enormous difference between them.

In the Ancestral Martial Starfield, the number of Utmost Exalted-level experts could be counted with one's fingers. But, the number of peak Exalted were much more numerous.

To be the overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, one should at least be an Utmost Exalted. How could one be qualified to be the overlord with only the cultivation of a peak Exalted?

Thus, at that moment, the crowd began to spiritedly discuss the matter. Some people even bluntly declared Long Daozhi's recommendation to be completely absurd.

Hearing the discussions all around, Long Daozhi's expression suddenly grew gloomy.

"What's this? It seems like everyone is disapproving of my suggestion?"

"Who does not agree with me? Why do you not agree with my suggestion? Why don't you say it out loud?"

His words were not spoken very resoundingly. There was also no trace of anger in his voice.

However, his expression was extremely gloomy as he said those words.

Because of that, the crowd knew that he was displeased.

Thus, the crowd that were voicing their rejections nonstop earlier all shut their mouths.

Although they were disapproving of the Chu Heavenly Clan, they did not dare to offend Long Daozhi.

"City Master Long, I thank you for your high regard of this old man. Unfortunately, this old man's strength is truly limited. I am truly unable to take on such a heavy responsibility," the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said with his fist clasped.

He was not acting courteous. Rather, he truly felt that he was incapable of shouldering such a heavy responsibility.

“Clan Chief Chu, I said you’re capable, so you’re most definitely capable.”

“From today on, your Chu Heavenly Clan shall be the new master of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“My Ancestral Martial Dragon City will become your support. If anyone is unconvinced, or if anyone dares to show any disrespect towards your Chu Heavenly Clan, my Ancestral Martial Dragon City will definitely not spare them,” said Long Daozhi.

“Clan Chief Chu, my Monstrous Holy City will also stand beside you.”

“The same goes for my Divine Body Royal City.”

The Monstrous Holy City’s City Master and the Divine Body Royal City’s City Master also added their support.

Not only that, they even stood beside the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief as they said those words.

They had made their position very clear. Although their Three Cities would not involve themselves with the matters of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, they were going to support the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Our Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan also endorses the Chu Heavenly Clan in becoming the new master of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“Our Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan is an ally of the Chu Heavenly Clan. If anyone dares disrespect the Chu Heavenly Clan, they will be disrespecting our Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan. I believe everyone present knows what sort of temper I, Gu Mingyuan, possesses.”

“Thus, I hope that you all do not provoke me. My anger with the Linghu Heavenly Clan is still present. If you want to bring forth that resentment upon yourselves, do not blame me, Gu Mingyuan, for becoming unreasonable.”

Gu Mingyuan also spoke. Compared to the tactful behavior displayed by the three City Masters, she was much more direct, and openly threatened the crowd.

The crowd looked at each other in dismay. No matter how unwilling they were, they did not dare to utter a single word of disapproval.

Whilst it was true that the Chu Heavenly Clan was incapable of becoming the overlord, as both their clan and their clan chief were not approved by the crowd - the only person the crowd approved of was Chu Feng, who was still a person of the younger generation - but Ancestral Martial Dragon City, Monstrous Holy City, Divine Body Royal City and the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan were all powers recognized by the crowd.

Any one of those four powers were existences that no one would dare to provoke. And all four of them stood beside the Chu Heavenly Clan. No matter how much the crowd disapproved of the Chu Heavenly Clan, they could only endure it.

Whilst they might not be afraid of the Chu Heavenly Clan, they were deeply afraid of the four powers behind it.

“I pay my respects to the Starfield Master.”

Suddenly, someone half-kneeled and bowed respectfully to the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

When the crowd saw that person half-kneeling, they were all surprised.

The reason for that was because that half-kneeling individual was Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, don’t mess around.”

Seeing that Chu Feng actually addressed him as the Starfield Master, the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, who was unwilling to take on such a heavy responsibility from the start, immediately waved his hand to indicate for Chu Feng to stand back up.

“We pay our respects to the Starfield Master.”

However, to his surprise, in the next instant, voices akin to rolling thunder resonated in unison.

All of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen half-kneeled as well.

Following them, the other powers present also began to half-kneel in succession.

Even the Tantai Heavenly Clan and the Jiaoli Heavenly Clan, both powers that had Utmost Exalted-level experts leading them, half-kneeled.

Furthermore, the ones that kneeled first were the two Utmost Exalted-level clan chiefs of the two Heavenly Clans.

“This...”

At that moment, the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief’s face was filled with complicated emotions.

He found the current situation difficult to accept. He had never ever imagined that, one day, powers all over the Ancestral Martial Starfield would bow to him.

Starfield Master?

That was a title that he never dared dream about.

Yet, at that moment, that title was actually his.

At the moment when the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was feeling like he was dreaming and was completely baffled by the scene before him, the Chu Heavenly Clansmen all had looks of unconcealable excitement.

Like their clan chief, they too had never imagined such a day.

Yet, what they’d never dared imagine had actually occurred.

Their Chu Heavenly Clan, a power that was not recognized by others, a power looked down upon by others, suddenly became the power that all the various powers in the Ancestral Martial Starfield swore allegiance to. They would soon become the rulers of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

This was truly akin to a dream to them. However, this dream had come true. Naturally, they would be extremely excited.

Even though they knew that there were still many powers that did not approve of them from the bottom of their hearts, they were still extremely joyous to be able to gain such a title.

That said, at the same time as they were feeling joyous, many Chu Heavenly Clansmen were unable to keep themselves from looking over to Chu Feng.

They knew very well that it was actually not because of their Lord Clan Chief that they had gained the support of the four great powers. Instead, it was all due to Chu Feng.

They, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and even the outsiders were all very certain of this.

All of them knew that it was all due to Chu Feng that the Chu Heavenly Clan was able to obtain their current status.

Being the focus of the crowd, although Chu Feng also had an excited and joyous smile on his face, he actually felt an enormous boulder crushing down on his chest.

Chu Feng knew that the Chu Heavenly Clan becoming the overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield was a good thing.

However, it would also be an enormous challenge. In fact, it could be said to be an unprecedented challenge.

The reason why Chu Feng felt it to be a difficult challenge was not because the various powers in the Ancestral Martial Starfield were disapproving of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Instead, it was because Chu Feng's ambition was no longer limited to the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Chapter 3764 - Gasp With Admiration And Emotions

As matters had already reached this point, no matter how unwilling the crowd might be, they still had no choice but to accept things as they were.

Fortunately, the Chu Heavenly Clan had Chu Feng.

Although he was a person of the younger generation and his cultivation was also only that of an Exalted, Chu Feng was capable of releasing a terrifying army of ten thousand Utmost Exalted-level guardian spirits through the Battle God's Halberd. That in itself was already extremely extraordinary...

On top of that, the Battle God's Halberd was actually capable of allowing him to obtain a rank two Utmost Exalted cultivation himself.

It was precisely the power of the Battle God's Halberd that had allowed Chu Feng to suppress Linghu Zhishi earlier.

Had that All-heaven Sect's Supreme Elder not interfered, Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan would've likely extinguished the entire Linghu Heavenly Clan.

Although his cultivation was still insufficient for him to become the overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, his ability to use the Battle God's Halberd had illustrated how extraordinary he was.

On top of that, everyone present knew how talented Chu Feng was.

If he was allowed to continue to grow, it would only be a matter of time before he surpassed Long Daozhi.

As such, the fact that Chu Feng was part of the Chu Heavenly Clan eased the crowd's hearts somewhat.

Taking him into consideration, the crowd began to persuade themselves to accept the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Because of that, although the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was the current overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, the crowd all felt that the true overlord was already the person of the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation, Chu Feng.

Seeing Chu Feng, the crowd all gasped with admiration and emotions.

Chu Feng had carried the title of Chu Xuanyuan's son the entire time.

However, he had already surpassed his father and grandfather.

After all, even Chu Hanxian and Chu Xuanyuan were not powerful enough to contend against the Starfield Master Realm.

However, Chu Feng had nearly managed to crush the entire Linghu Heavenly Clan.

When even the people of the older generation were gasping with admiration and emotions, those from the younger generation naturally felt even more awed.

This was especially true for Xia Yun'er, Song Yunfei, Chu Huanyu, Chu Haoyan, Li Anzhi and others.

Back then, they were all people capable of contending against Chu Feng. However, now... Chu Feng had become the person that everyone in the Ancestral Martial Starfield looked up to.

Even though they'd already recognized the disparity between them and Chu Feng, they had not expected the disparity to increase so quickly, and by so much.

That said, although they were sighing and gasping emotionally, their lips were all raised into the same sort of curve.

Even though they already knew that Chu Feng would grow to become the strongest expert in the Ancestral Martial Starfield and they would never be able to catch up to him, when they thought about how he had actually competed and fought against them in the past, they all felt that they were very fortunate.

After kneeling for a short moment, the crowd stood up in succession. Long Daozhi turned his gaze to the Tantai Heavenly Clan and a few other powers.

Those powers that he looked at, all had a close relationship with the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

"Tantai Heavenly Clan, Jiaoli Heavenly Clan, Nightmare Spirit Clan, Heaven Reaching Beast Clan."

"Are you not allies of the Linghu Heavenly Clan? Why did you not follow Linghu Zhishi when he left?" Long Daozhi spoke with a mocking and ridiculing tone.

"City Master Long, we were indeed allies with the Linghu Heavenly Clan before. However, we had no idea they were colluding with the All-heaven Sect. If we had known, we would have never agreed to help them."

"Besides, we actually did not do much in the war between the Linghu Heavenly Clan and the Wuming Clan. We merely backed them up a little, increasing their power."

“City Master Long, our alliance with the Linghu Heavenly Clan has long been voided. We truly had no idea about the matter regarding the All-heaven Sect.”

The four clan chiefs all tried their hardest to explain themselves.

Even the Tantai Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, an Utmost Exalted-level existence, had a look of fear all over his face.

Afraid. Of course they’d be afraid. With how powerful Long Daozhi was, they truly did not wish to follow in the footsteps of the Linghu Heavenly Clan.

“You all allied with the Linghu Heavenly Clan to take on the original master of the Ancestral Martial Starfield. Your actions were those of a mutiny. Do you think you’ll be able to escape responsibility just by declaring that you’ve broken your alliance?” Long Daozhi asked coldly.

“This...”

Hearing those words, the expressions of the four clan chiefs turned even uglier.

After all, what he’d said was very reasonable. Logically, they were indeed in the wrong.

It was as Long Daozhi had said, what they’d done was a mutiny.

With the situation being like that, the four clan chiefs were completely terrified. They felt that they might end up suffering enormously.

In fact, they were not the only ones thinking that way. The other people were also thinking that way.

However, to the crowd’s surprise, after Long Daozhi deliberately made things difficult for the four clan chiefs, he did not mete out any punishment. Instead, he decided to have the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief decide how to punish them.

With the personality of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, he would naturally seek harmony.

Thus, the four clan chiefs only received verbal warnings, and not any substantial punishment.

After that, Long Daozhi made an announcement to call it a day.

The crowd all understood his intention. Thus, after bidding their farewells, they all returned to their respective worlds.

The grand existences like Exalted Heavenly Fate also took their leave.

Before Exalted Heavenly Fate left, although he didn't say anything, he took a glance at Chu Feng.

That glance of his was filled with complicated emotions.

He had seen a lot of people in his life. However, Chu Feng was most definitely the person that he would not be able to forget the most.

He had made countless prophecies throughout his life. All of them had come true. Only Chu Feng had managed to shatter his prophecy.

The Chu Heavenly Clan had originally thought that Long Daozhi would brief them on what to do after everyone left.

However, to their surprise, Long Daozhi did not tell them anything. He left with the other two City Masters without bothering with anything.

It seemed like they were truly planning to hand the Ancestral Martial Starfield to the Chu Heavenly Clan to manage.

As for how they would manage it, it was all up to the Chu Heavenly Clan. The three City Masters were not going to involve themselves in the matter at all.

Because of this, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief found himself in a very difficult situation.

To him, the weight of Starfield Master was simply too heavy. It was so heavy that he found it somewhat difficult to bear.

Of course, although the great majority of the powers had left, there was still a small portion remaining.

They'd decided to stay to congratulate the Chu Heavenly Clan on becoming the new overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Although the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief knew that those powers were opportunists trying to curry favors, he could not neglect them. In fact, he went out of his way to personally entertain them.

That said, Chu Feng, Gu Mingyuan and the others simply paid no attention to those powers.

Because of that, they did not bother to entertain the powers that came to congratulate the Chu Heavenly Clan. Instead, they all returned to the Chu Heavenly Clan to rest.

Finally, Gu Mingyuan asked the question, "Chu Feng, where did you obtain that grand protective formation of yours?"

When she asked that, Chu Lingxi, Grandmaster Liangqiu and others also looked over to Chu Feng curiously.

Compared to the Battle God's Halberd, the protective formation was clearly much more powerful.

Because of that, they were all very curious as to the origin of that protective formation.

"Regarding that... actually, even if I don't say anything, you all will still be able to guess it," said Chu Feng.

"Could it be, it really is that Ox-nosed Old Daoist?" asked Grandmaster Liangqiu.

Actually, Grandmaster Liangqiu had already guessed this in his heart.

After all, he had already learned that his old friend was actually a disguise of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. The true strength the Ox-nosed Old Daoist possessed was simply unfathomable.

"What? That Ox-nosed Old Daoist?"

Grandmaster Liangqiu's words astonished Gu Mingyuan, Chu Xuanzhengfa and the others.

Then, they looked at Grandmaster Liangqiu like they were looking at a fool.

“Grandmaster Liangqiu, what are you talking about? Shouldn’t it be Senior Zhu? Why would it be that Ox-nose?”

Although they’d learned that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had successfully helped Chu Feng fuse with his Divine Power, Gu Mingyuan and the others still felt that he was a very weak individual. After all, the unreliable image of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was already deeply rooted in their heads.

Because of that, Gu Mingyuan and the others had assumed that the person who’d given Chu Feng the protective formation was that old man Zhu.

After all, they felt old man Zhu to be the person who was truly unfathomable.

Seeing Gu Mingyuan and the others reacting with such surprise, Grandmaster Liangqiu suddenly laughed.

“Actually, Brother Zhu is the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. Brother Zhu is merely a disguise of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.”

“Gu Mingyuan, we’ve all underestimated Ox-nose. That guy is stronger than all of us,” Grandmaster Liangqiu said with a smile.

“Grandmaster, is what you said the truth?”

Gu Mingyuan and the others all found his words to be incredulous.

“How could I lie about this? If you don’t believe me, you can ask young friend Chu Feng,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“That is indeed the case.” Chu Feng nodded.

“This...”

After Chu Feng confirmed it, Gu Mingyuan, Chu Xuanzhengfa and the others looked at each other in dismay. The astonishment on their faces grew even more intense.

This news was truly something that they found very difficult to accept.

After all, it was simply too shocking.

Not to mention them, anyone would react in the same manner as they did if they learned about the matter.

"It would appear that one truly cannot judge a person by their appearance."
Chu Xuanzhengfa suddenly gasped in admiration after the shock passed.

Gu Mingyuan and the others understood his gasp of admiration.

"Buzz~~~"

Suddenly, the Battle God's Halberd Chu Feng held in his hand began to tremble violently.

This caught the attention of everyone present.

Under the focus of the crowd, the halberd started to shine with light. It was a spirit formation. A very powerful spirit formation had enveloped the Battle God's Halberd.

Following that, a voice sounded from it.

It was the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's voice.

"Boy, I'm only lending this thing to you, not giving it to you."

"Now, you will have to return it to its rightful owner. Remember, do not forget what you've promised me. Make sure to not make me lose face."

"Clank~~~"

After those words were said, the Battle God's Halberd broke free from Chu Feng's grasp and began to rapidly fly away. Its speed was so fast that it disappeared in the blink of an eye.

Gu Mingyuan wanted to give chase. However, she stopped before she actually flew after the Battle God's Halberd.

The reason for that was because she discovered that it was simply flying too fast. Even if she gave her all to chase after it, she would not be able to catch up to it.

Even though the Battle God's Halberd had decided to leave of its own accord, Chu Feng showed no trace of worry on his face.

He knew that the Battle God's Halberd must've been controlled by the spirit formation, and was flying towards the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's location.

Although Chu Feng was very collected, Gu Mingyuan and the others all looked at him with astonished looks on their faces.

“Was that also the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s trick?”

Chapter 3765 - Crazy Man

“Was that also the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s trick?”

There was an unconcealable look of shock on Gu Mingyuan’s face as she asked.

It was merely a spirit formation, yet it had a speed that she could not catch up to.

Recalling the protective formation that Chu Feng had unleashed earlier, Gu Mingyuan once again realized how small and weak she actually was...

Although she was a top existence in the Ancestral Martial Starfield, she was only a weakling before true experts.

“That voice was his. Naturally, that spirit formation would be his too,” Grandmaster Liangqiu said with a smile.

He was actually feeling very joyous. Although the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had made him realize there was an enormous disparity between them, so much that he simply could not take on the title of the strongest world spiritist in the Ancestral Martial Starfield with the Ox-nosed Old Daoist present, it remained that he could be considered to be the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s close friend.

When he thought of how he was capable of befriending such an existence, Grandmaster Liangqiu felt very fortunate.

“I truly never would’ve imagined for that old codger Ox-nose to have concealed himself so deeply.”

“I had originally thought that the Ancestral Martial Dragon City’s City Master Long Daozhi was already someone who had concealed his strength extremely well. Never would I have imagined that Ox-nose would’ve concealed his strength even more.”

“The way I see it, even Long Daozhi would not be able to match Ox-nose.”

“That old codger is the most terrifying existence in the Ancestral Martial Starfield,” Gu Mingyuan said with a gasp of admiration.

She was not the only one thinking this way. Both Chu Xuanzhengfa and Chu Lingxi felt this way too. Compared to Long Daozhi, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s strength shocked them even more.

After all, the impression he had left on them before was truly lacking. The worse of an impression they had of him, the more astonished they were.

“To be exact, he is not someone from our Ancestral Martial Starfield,” Grandmaster Liangqiu added.

Hearing those words, the expressions of Gu Mingyuan and the others all changed. Then, they all turned silent.

Grandmaster Liangqiu’s words had startled them awake.

Indeed, their Ancestral Martial Starfield couldn’t possibly possess such a powerful martial cultivator.

After all, in the Holy Light Galaxy, their Ancestral Martial Starfield could simply be said to be the weakest of all the starfields.

After gasping with admiration, Gu Mingyuan turned her gaze to Chu Feng.

Curious, she asked, “Chu Feng, what did you agree to help the Ox-nosed Old Daoist with?”

“Senior, it’s nothing much. It’s merely a trifling matter. I will be able to handle it myself.” Chu Feng did not wish to mention the matter he had promised to help the Ox-nosed Old Daoist with to Gu Mingyuan. He felt that if he was to tell her, she would definitely not allow him to depart on his own.

Had it been before, Gu Mingyuan might still agree to it. However, now, she would definitely not agree to it.

After all, the All-heaven Starfield was ruled by the All-heaven Sect.

“Chu Feng, that Linghu Zhishi is still alive. Now that the Battle God’s Halberd has been retrieved by Ox-nose, if you were to wander around on your own at a time like this, it could be very dangerous.”

Sure enough, Gu Mingyuan's expression changed. The crowd all understood what her intentions were.

The word 'worried' was practically written all over her face.

"Senior, I've experienced all sorts of dangers in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm."

"I know that senior is worried about me. However, I will have to grow up on my own. Thus, it's better to allow me to handle this matter by myself," said Chu Feng.

"That's true." Gu Mingyuan smiled. Then, she said, "Boy, your advancing speed is truly rapid. Likely, the Ancestral Martial Starfield will no longer be able to contain you."

After she finished saying those words, Gu Mingyuan looked to Chu Lingxi, who stood beside her. "Girl, you will have to put forth more effort. Otherwise, you will not be able to match up to your big brother Chu Feng."

"Mother, what are you talking about? What 'big brother Chu Feng'? He's clearly younger than me. He's my little brother, okay?" Chu Lingxi corrected with a serious attitude.

Soon, she seemed to have realized something. She said, "What do you mean by I can't match up to him? Why must I be a match for him?"

"You yourself know very well the reason why." Gu Mingyuan revealed a mischievous smile.

"Truly! You're clearly my mother, why are you helping an outsider bully me?"

Chu Lingxi's face turned red. After she finished saying that, she ran away.

That said, no one was able to tell if her face had turned red from anger, or something else.

"Oh, that's right. Senior, about that Blood Devouring Hall's Hall Master, how are we to handle him?" Chu Feng asked.

"You've reminded me of that. That fellow is still alive."

"Let's go. We'll go and finish him together," Gu Mingyuan looked to Chu Xuanzhengfa as she said those words.

How could Chu Xuanzhengfa dare to neglect her? He immediately began to lead her to the location where the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master was imprisoned.

"Senior, has that Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master confessed?" asked Chu Feng.

"That old fellow is truly tough-mouthed. He is clearly an evil-doer, but he has insisted on upholding loyalty, righteousness and whatnot."

"However, don't fret, I will definitely make him speak. After all, I'm already holding his weakness," said Gu Mingyuan.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng knew that Gu Mingyuan must've found the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master's rumored grandson.

Sure enough, after Chu Xuanzhengfa opened the gate to where the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master was imprisoned, everyone could see that the Hall Master was no longer the only person imprisoned there.

In addition to him was a man.

That man appeared to be over eight hundred years old.

Normally, based on the age of martial cultivators, that man could still be considered to be a young man. **no ve-LB**)In

However, his head was already filled with white hair, and his appearance was extremely aged.

The reason why he looked that way was because his cultivation was extremely weak. He was only a Half Martial Emperor.

If he were placed in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, his Half Martial Emperor cultivation would make him a top expert.

However, in the Ancestral Martial Starfield, a place with experts akin to trees in a forest, where even Martial Immortals were numberless, Half Martial Emperor would be truly akin to a powerless ant.

Not to mention Exalted-level experts like Chu Feng and the others, or Utmost Exalted-level experts like Gu Mingyuan, even a True Immortal could drown him with a spit or shatter his soul with a breath.

That was the disparity in cultivation.

However, that person was extremely intimate with the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master. Without needing to think, Chu Feng knew that he must be his grandson.

Merely, how could the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master, someone so powerful, have such a weak grandson?

Furthermore, although that man was well-dressed, his mannerisms seemed somewhat strange.

"Grand... grandpa."

When Chu Feng and the others approached, that man immediately lost his head out of fear and hid behind the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master.

Judging by his panicked appearance, Chu Feng felt even more astonished. That man was not only weak; his head seemed to have some issues too. It was very possible that the man was mentally handicapped.

"The grandfather and grandson seem to be getting along very well," a gloomy and cold gaze appeared in Gu Mingyuan's eyes.

"How could a retard like this be my grandson? Gu Mingyuan, have you gone mad?" The Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master revealed a mocking smile. He was not admitting that man to be his grandson.

"It would appear that you're planning to refuse a toast so that you can be forced to drink a forfeit," Gu Mingyuan said.

"I've already said that I will not tell you anything even if you are to kill me," said the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master.

"Very well. I shall see how tough your mouth really is."

As Gu Mingyuan spoke, she extended her hand and made a grabbing motion. Suction power was immediately released from her hand.

The suction brought that crazed man into her palm. Like a watermelon, his head was tightly grabbed by Gu Mingyuan's palm.

At that moment, the man was crying and screaming, trying his hardest to struggle. However, he was simply unable to break free from Gu Mingyuan's grasp.

"Gu Mingyuan, what are you planning to do?"

Seeing that, the expression of the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master changed enormously.

Terror filled his previously calm eyes.

Chapter 3766 - Strange Poison

"Didn't you say this man is not your grandson? If that's the case, why are you panicking?" asked Gu Mingyuan.

"Even if he's not my grandson, that's still a life we're talking about here. If you want to punish anyone, you can punish me. Why would you torture the innocent?" said the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master.

"Torture the innocent? Someone like you actually said those words?"

Suddenly, Gu Mingyuan revealed a look of anger. Evidently, she was enraged by what the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master said.

After she finished saying those words...

A layer of power was released from her palm and instantly enveloped that crazed man.

"Eeeahh~~~"

In the next instant, the crazed man began to scream miserably.

He was suffering intense pain and screaming as if he would rather be dead.

An existence like Gu Mingyuan could make that crazed man vanish with a simple wave of her hand.

Torturing him was simply a trifling matter.

“Stop! Stop!!!”

Seeing the pained appearance of the crazed man, the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master began to shout himself hoarse.

Not only that, but his face was covered with anger, pain, and other complicated emotions.

As matters stood, it was obvious to everyone that the crazed man was the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master’s grandson. Otherwise, he wouldn’t possibly care about him so much.

However, to the crowd’s confusion, even though the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master was concerned about his grandson, even though he was watching his grandson being tortured right before him, he was still unwilling to reveal who the mastermind that ordered him to kill Chu Feng was.

“Senior, it’s enough.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng extended his hand and grabbed Gu Mingyuan’s hand.

Chu Feng was able to see the determination of the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master. Even if Gu Mingyuan tortured the crazed man dead, the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master would still not mention who the mastermind was.

Although he was unable to understand why the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master was so reluctant to reveal that person, so much so that he was willing to disregard the life of his grandson, Chu Feng knew that nothing would come of it even if they continued to torture the crazed man.

Even killing the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master would only serve to vent one’s anger. That was not the result that Chu Feng wanted.

“Chu Feng, you might still not know exactly how many innocent people were killed by the Blood-devouring Hall.”

“There’s simply no need for you to be merciful towards someone like him,” Gu Mingyuan said after seeing that Chu Feng was trying to stop her.

“Senior, whilst it is true that the people of the Blood-devouring Hall all deserve to die, he is still innocent of their crimes.”

Chu Feng looked at the crazed man as he said those words.

“You...” Gu Mingyuan sighed. “Forget it.”

“This is a matter of your Chu Heavenly Clan to begin with. You can handle it however you wish.”

Gu Mingyuan not only felt helpless upon hearing Chu Feng’s words, but she was also slightly angry. After saying those words, she walked out.

“Senior, you all should leave too,” Chu Feng said to Grandmaster Liangqiu, Chu Xuanzhengfa and the others.

Grandmaster Liangqiu and others were very tactful. After Chu Feng asked them to leave, they all walked out.

At that moment, the crazed man once again ran over to the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master, who was still tied up, and grabbed him tightly.

Although he was mentally handicapped, he still recognized the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master to be his grandfather.

“Chu Feng, thank you.”

Surprisingly, the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master actually thanked Chu Feng with a look of gratitude on his face.

“Thus, you’ve finally admitted that he is your grandson?” asked Chu Feng.

“Correct. He is indeed my grandson.”

The Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master knew that he was no longer able to conceal this matter. Furthermore, there was no need for him to do so.

“I am very confused. Who exactly could the mastermind be to be able to make you guard your mouth so well?”

“What I am unable to understand even more is that even if you don’t wish to reveal who the mastermind is, you can very well give a random name. There’s no need for you to be so insistent no?” said Chu Feng.

Hearing Chu Feng’s words, the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master revealed a wry smile.

“Chu Feng, perhaps you will not believe me. Whilst it is true that I’ve done all sorts of evil and should be someone without any baseline, I am actually someone who has a baseline.”

“Never in my life have I lied or deceived anyone.”

“You can say that I am guilty of monstrous crimes and extreme evil, but I am most definitely not a despicable and vile character.”

“Actually, it would be one thing if the person that wanted to kill you was someone else. However, he is my benefactor. He has saved my life. Even if I am to renounce my own life, I still cannot betray him.”

The Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master had an emotional look on his face as he said those words. Chu Feng felt that he was not lying.

“I can tell that you care about that benefactor of yours greatly. However, you should also think about your grandson.”

“If you reveal who that benefactor of yours is, I will let you and your grandson go. Otherwise, your grandson will continue to remain here and accompany you,” said Chu Feng.

“If that’s the case, it wouldn’t be bad either.”

Surprisingly, the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master actually smiled at Chu Feng’s words.

He was not smiling out of mockery. Instead, he was smiling in satisfaction. It was as if being imprisoned was the kind of life he wanted.

“Whilst you are capable of allowing yourself to be imprisoned for the rest of your life, what about your grandson? Are you planning to have him pay for your crimes too?” asked Chu Feng.

Hearing Chu Feng’s words, the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master was suddenly stunned. He then looked at his grandson, who was tightly hugging him and weeping nonstop. Then, the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master revealed a complicated emotion in his eyes.

“Think it over.”

“You can talk when you feel like talking.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng turned around and prepared to leave.

“Wuuahh~~~”

Suddenly, the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master’s grandson grabbed his head with both hands, fell to the ground and began to roll around whilst screaming in pain.

Seeing that, Chu Feng immediately turned around and released his spirit power to treat him.

However, after treating his condition for a while, Chu Feng discovered that the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master’s grandson’s pain was unrelated to the torture from Gu Mingyuan earlier.

Instead, there was a substance in his head. It was a black liquid.

That black liquid was very strange. It seemed to be alive. That black liquid had already assimilated with the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master’s grandson’s soul, and it was that black liquid that was causing such enormous pain to him.

In fact, Chu Feng felt that it was possible that the reason why the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master’s grandson was mentally handicapped was also related to that black liquid.

“Your grandson has been poisoned, did you know that?” Chu Feng raised his head and looked at the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master.

The Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master sighed helplessly.

“He’s my grandson, how could I not know he was poisoned?”

“Unfortunately, there’s nothing that can be done. I’ve tried all sorts of methods. None of them were able to remove the poison.”

“I had sought a master world spiritist in another starfield and asked him to use spirit formations to restrict the poison so that my grandson would not have to suffer its torture.”

“Originally, he had been living peacefully all these years. Likely, Gu Mingyuan destroyed the spirit formation when she attacked him earlier. That’s why he is suffering from the poison again,” said the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master.

“That poison is indeed very difficult to remove. However, if it’s restricting it, I am able to give it a try,” said Chu Feng.

“You’re willing to help him?” Hearing those words, the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master’s expression changed.

Chu Feng ignored him. He sat down cross-legged and released his spirit power to envelop the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master’s grandson.

Chu Feng began treating the grandson of the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master.

Seeing that, the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master revealed a complicated gaze.

The poison his grandson was inflicted with was no small matter. Back then, he had paid quite a high price in order to have that master world spiritist help him.

The reason for that was because one would have to pay a certain price in order to subdue that poison.

No one would be willing to help for free.

As a world spiritist, Chu Feng couldn’t possibly not know about that. Yet, he was still willing to help him. In fact, he did not hesitate at all. This surprised and, to a greater extent, moved the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master.

Chapter 3767 - Bai Liluo’s Return

It took Chu Feng a total of two hours to subdue the poison within the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master’s grandson.

Two hours was actually not a long time. However, after Chu Feng finished, he did not even have the strength to stand up. It took him a long time before he was finally able to stand up with difficulty.

The current Chu Feng was extremely weak. That was precisely the price he had to pay to restrict the poison.

He had exhausted himself.

However, after Chu Feng spent such effort to restrict the poison of the grandson of the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master, he did not say anything after standing up, and began to walk toward the exit.

Seeing Chu Feng walking away in a weak manner, the eyes of the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master were filled with complicated emotions.

From his expression, one could tell that he was making a very difficult decision.

At the moment when Chu Feng was about to walk out of the gate, the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master suddenly spoke.

“Chu Feng, be careful of the Wuming Clan.”

“Wuming Clan?”

Chu Feng stopped upon hearing those words.

He turned around and asked the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master, “In other words, it is the Wuming Clan that wanted to kill me?”

The Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master lowered his head, and did not answer him.

However, his silence had verified Chu Feng's guess.

In the past, it was the Wuming Clan that had deemed Chu Xuanyuan and Chu Hanxian to be threats, and forced Chu Feng's grandfather and father to leave the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Thus, Chu Feng was not surprised to learn that the Wuming Clan considered him a threat too.

“If it's the Wuming Clan, they're not something to be afraid of.”

“After all, the Wuming Clan has already disappeared from the Ancestral Martial Starfield,” said Chu Feng.

“Disappeared? Could it be that the Linghu Heavenly Clan declared war on the Wuming Clan?” asked the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master.

“The war has already ended,” said Chu Feng.

At that moment, the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master narrowed his brows. From Chu Feng's words, he was able to tell that it was the Linghu Heavenly Clan that had won the war.

However, there was no trace of joy on his face after learning this news. Instead, there was a look of worry in his eyes. He soon looked at Chu Feng again. "Chu Feng, the Wuming Clan is not as simple as you imagine them to be."

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's expression also changed. He asked, "How are they not simple?"

"I also do not know any details. However, the Wuming Clan is most definitely more extraordinary than they appear to be," said the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized that the Wuming Clan might really be as the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master had said, and more extraordinary than everyone imagined them to be.

After all, if they weren't capable, they wouldn't have been able to control the Ancestral Martial Starfield for so many years.

The warning from the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master had hinted to Chu Feng that the Wuming Clan might make a comeback.

Without a doubt, if the Wuming Clan really did make a comeback, the Chu Heavenly Clan would be the one to face the greatest danger.

After all, the current overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield was not the Linghu Heavenly Clan. Instead, it was the Chu Heavenly Clan.

This caused Chu Feng to have a feeling of urgency. He felt that he must quickly become stronger. Otherwise... he would not be able to protect the Chu Heavenly Clan.

"Don't fret, what will come will come eventually."

Soon, a smile of ease appeared on Chu Feng's face.

Although he was able to sense the latent threat, he did not feel too much pressure.

The reason for that was because he was confident that even if the Wuming Clan were to make a comeback, he would be able to deal with them.

Afterwards, Chu Feng walked out of the palace hall.

However, to his surprise, he was not only greeted by Chu Xuanzhengfda, Grandmaster Liangqiu and Gu Mingyuan, but there were also three additional people.

One was Chu Lingxi, who had run away earlier with a reddened face.

The other person was the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, who was originally entertaining guests.

The last person was not someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

She was a little girl...

She appeared to only be eight or nine years old. Although she looked very young, her features were very refined. One could tell that she would definitely become an exceptional beauty once she grew up.

However, this adorable little girl had a head full of snow-white hair.

"Big sister."

Chu Feng was pleasantly surprised upon seeing the little girl.

He took a step forward and ran over to her.

It was impossible for Chu Feng to not recognize her. After all, she was Bai Liluo.

But, wasn't Bai Liluo inside the Black-feathered Specter? Shouldn't she be in the Tantai Heavenly Clan?

Why would she suddenly appear there?

That said, regardless of what might be the case, Chu Feng was relieved to see her safe and sound.

After all, this was a good thing. At least, it showed that Bai Liluo was not in danger.

“My, little brother, your cultivation has truly increased quickly. You’re actually a rank five Exalted already.” Bai Liluo’s little exquisite face was also brimming with smiles after seeing Chu Feng. It was a very amiable smile.

After all, she did not know anyone else from the Chu Heavenly Clan. She was there precisely to find Chu Feng.

“Big sister, why are you suddenly fine now? Could it be that you’ve managed to fuse with the Black-feathered Specter?” Chu Feng asked.

Once Chu Feng said those words, the expressions of Gu Mingyuan and others who stood beside him all changed.

Black-feathered Specter, they had all heard that name before.

However, the Black-feathered Specter in their impression was not something good.

“How could it be that easy? Your big sister is already very fortunate to be alive and standing before you.”

Whilst smiling, Bai Liluo spread open her hands. Her smile was very sweet. Yet, there were also traces of helplessness.

“In other words, it was a failure?” asked Chu Feng.

“You can say that,” said Bai Liluo.

“Then... what about that Black-feathered Specter? Where is it now?” asked Chu Feng.

Chu Feng knew that the Black-feathered Specter was not something good, and would definitely be a potential threat to the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

“I also do not know where it went. However, before it left, it created a major disturbance,” said Bai Liluo.

“Major disturbance?” Chu Feng’s heart tensed up upon hearing those words. He asked, “What major disturbance?”

“It has massacred the entire Tantai Heavenly Clan,” said Bai Liluo.

“What?”

“Massacred the Tantai Heavenly Clan?!”

Hearing those words, the expressions of Chu Feng and the others present all changed greatly.

Chapter 3768 - Dangerous Being

“The Tantai Heavenly Clan has been massacred? When did that happen?” Grandmaster Liangqiu and the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked at practically the same time.

Their faces were filled with shock as they said those words.

After all, that was a major event.

“Right before I came here. However, it seemed like all the strong individuals of the Tantai Heavenly Clan had left. It could be said that they’ve dodged a calamity. That said, the people that remained in the Tantai Heavenly Clan were all killed.”

“Regardless of their age or gender, including even the pets and ferocious beasts that the Tantai Heavenly Clan kept, everyone was killed,” said Bai Liluo.

“Ah?”

Hearing those words, even Chu Feng felt astonished.

From Bai Liluo’s words, he was capable of imagining what sort of sight the Tantai Heavenly Clan was left in.

It would truly be a field of corpses, a river of blood, an appalling scene of devastation.

Chu Feng had been to the Tantai Heavenly Clan before. Thus, he knew what it looked like.

They were a power second only to the Linghu Heavenly Clan in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Not only were they strong and possessed of a great amount of resources, but they also had a great number of clansmen.

The number of Tantai Heavenly Clansmen numbered in the several tens of millions.

Although the Tantai Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had brought their elites to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, the elites composed only a small portion of the Tantai Heavenly Clansmen.

Thus, even though the Tantai Heavenly Clan had managed to keep their most outstanding elites alive, the countless people that had died were all their relatives. Chu Feng felt that this would definitely be an enormous shock to the Tantai Heavenly Clan.

That said, the Tantai Heavenly Clan could still be said to be enormously fortunate in this great disaster.

If those elites hadn't travelled to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, they would likely have been killed by the Black-feathered Specter too.

With that, the Tantai Heavenly Clan would truly have disappeared from the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

That said, Chu Feng was still unable to help but gasp at how ruthless the Black-feathered Specter was.

What it had done was truly a massacre.

"Is the Black-feathered Specter still in the Tantai Heavenly Clan?" asked Chu Feng.

This question concerned the future of the Tantai Heavenly Clan. If the Black-feathered Specter was still in the Tantai Heavenly Clan, the elites of the Tantai Heavenly Clan would definitely meet their deaths upon their return.

"It left. Merely, I do not know where it went," said Bai Liluo.

Hearing those words, Grandmaster Liangqiu heaved a sigh of relief.

There was no grievance between him and the Tantai Heavenly Clan. Thus, he did not wish for them to be completely exterminated.

That said, although he had heaved a sigh of relief, he was still greatly concerned.

After all, as long as the Black-feathered Specter was still present, the Tantai Heavenly Clan would forever live under its shadow.

“Why did that Black-feathered Specter deliberately allow itself to be captured by the Tantai Heavenly Clan back then?” asked Chu Feng.

“To absorb the power of that formation,” said Bai Liluo.

Chu Feng was not surprised at her answer. After all, he had warned the Tantai Heavenly Clan and told them that the Black-feathered Specter was deliberately allowing itself to be captured. Merely, the Tantai Heavenly Clan did not believe him.

Back then, Chu Feng had thought of a lot of reasons as to why the Black-feathered Specter would deliberately allow itself to be captured. He had also guessed that it might be doing so to absorb the power of that formation.

“In that case, big sister Liluo, how did you manage to escape from its body?” asked Chu Feng.

Although Chu Feng had not truly witnessed the power of the Black-feathered Specter, he was able to imagine how powerful it was. He knew that its power must be extremely terrifying, and might be something that no one in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield could contend against.

Precisely because the Black-feathered Specter was so powerful, Chu Feng felt that it was a miracle that Bai Liluo was able to escape from its body.

“You can say that it spared me. After all, it is thanks to me that it was able to awaken,” said Bai Liluo.

“Thanks to you? What do you mean?”

Chu Feng and others were all very curious upon hearing those words.

“Back then, when I was in the Tantai Heavenly Clan, for the sake of helping you obtain good achievements in the selection for the Ancestral Martial Decastars, I deliberately left that letter and forged the Black-feathered Specter’s feather. I did that so that you all would think that I was captured by the Black-feathered Specter.”

"However, at that time, I felt a very terrifying power lying dormant in the Tantai Heavenly Clan. Curious, I went to investigate. However, before I could approach it, that thing awakened. Not only that, but it even devoured me," said Bai Liluo.

"That was the Black-feathered Specter?" asked Chu Feng.

"Naturally," said Bai Liluo.

"Young lady, if that's the case, you've created a massive calamity." Grandmaster Liangqiu had a slightly blaming look on his face as he said those words.

His reaction was understandable. If the Black-feathered Specter didn't wake up, the Tantai Heavenly Clan wouldn't have been exterminated by it. All those innocent people would not have died.

Besides, the awakening of a monster like the Black-feathered Specter was definitely grievous news to the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

"Even if I didn't approach it, it would also have awoken on its own. I merely made it awaken a bit sooner," refuted Bai Liluo.

The crowd found themselves unable to refute her words.

Indeed, the Black-feathered Specter was filled with unknowns to begin with. It was an existence that surpassed their understanding.

"Young lady, in that case, how did you manage to sense the existence of the Black-feathered Specter?" Gu Mingyuan asked curiously.

According to Bai Liluo, the Black-feathered Specter should've been in the Tantai Heavenly Clan the entire time.

However, the Black-feathered Specter had disappeared for many years without the Tantai Heavenly Clan being able to detect it. Yet, Bai Liluo was able to detect it.

This made the crowd realize that she might possess some sort of special detection power.

"My power is simply not something that you humans could compare to."

“For example, there is also a very dangerous thing inside this Chu Heavenly Clan. You all are unable to sense it, no?”

As Bai Liluo said those words, she took a glance at Grandmaster Liangqiu, the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and Gu Mingyuan. Not only did she have a very pleased look on her face, but there was also a trace of contempt in her eyes.

Hearing Bai Liluo’s words, the crowd simply had no heart to concern themselves with the contempt in her eyes as she looked at them. The reason for that was because their hearts had tensed up upon hearing her words.

“Young lady, you cannot make that sort of joke,” the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said with a smile. However, that smile of his was a bit stiff.

He was afraid that she was not joking around. If she wasn’t joking around, it would be an enormously bad thing.

“I’m not joking. I’m serious. You had all best drive it away. Otherwise... it will cause no end of trouble,” said Bai Liluo.

“Big sister Liluo, what is ‘it’ that you’re referring to?”

Chu Feng asked with a serious look on his face.

He was able to tell that Bai Liluo was not joking.

In fact, it was not only Chu Feng who became serious. The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, Grandmaster Liangqiu and even Gu Mingyuan all turned serious.

The reason for that was because they were able to infer from Bai Liluo’s words that the dangerous existence was something that none of them could handle.

Otherwise, she would’ve told them to kill it, and not simply drive it away.

“I am unable to be certain of what it might be,” said Bai Liluo.

“Young lady, where is that thing?” asked the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“In there,” said Bai Liluo.

“What?” The crowd were all deeply startled upon hearing her words.

The reason for that was because the location Bai Liluo was pointing to was the place where Chu Feng had just come from.

Imprisoned in that place was the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master and the other experts.

Chapter 3769 - Deeply Worried

“Young lady, that place is a jail for prisoners. How are they dangerous?” asked Gu Mingyuan.

She felt very complicated.

On the one hand, she felt that Bai Liluo was not lying.

On the other hand, she felt that the people from the Blood-devouring Hall did not pose a threat.

Otherwise, why would the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master not do anything when she was torturing his grandson earlier?

Unless... he was plotting something.

“Prisoners? You imprisoned that monster?” asked Bai Liluo.

“Monster?”

Upon hearing her words, the crowd realized that something was amiss.

It was very possible that what Bai Liluo was indicating was not the people from the Blood-devouring Hall.

After all, although those people were dangerous, they could not be considered to be monsters. At the very least, they were not as dangerous as the monster Bai Liluo described.

“Big sister Liluo, are you indicating the thing inside that man?” Chu Feng pointed to the direction of the cell.

The person Chu Feng was indicating was the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master’s grandson.

“That person? I can only sense that monster, not people,” said Bai Liluo.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng came to a realization. As Bai Liluo was a Natural Oddity, she had a special sort of perception.

However, her perception was only effective towards special beings. She was unable to detect ordinary martial cultivators.

The place where the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master and the others were imprisoned was covered in a spirit formation that was capable of blocking one’s perception.

Although that spirit formation had blocked Bai Liluo’s perception of the people, it was unable to block her perception of the special existence there.

“Forget it, I’ll take a proper look myself.”

As Bai Liluo spoke, her gaze started to change. She looked at the entrance gate again.

However, after Bai Liluo’s gaze changed, Chu Feng and Grandmaster Liangqiu’s expressions changed.

“That young lady?”

While Chu Feng was able to remain rather calm, Grandmaster Liangqiu revealed a look of astonishment.

Both Chu Feng and Grandmaster Liangqiu were able to detect that Bai Liluo was using a special perception ability.

She was using a world spirit technique. Through the ability Bai Liluo used, Chu Feng and Grandmaster Liangqiu were able to tell that Bai Liluo’s world spirit techniques were at the level of a Dragon Mark Saint-cloak World Spiritist.

Her world spirit techniques were on par with Grandmaster Liangqiu’s.

Thus, after Bai Liluo used her ability, the spirit formation around the prison that blocked one’s perception was immediately rendered useless.

At that moment, the situation inside the prison was fully visible to Bai Liluo.

“Little brother Chu Feng.”

“Did you also manage to detect that?”

After surveying the prison, Bai Liluo turned her gaze to Chu Feng.

“Big sister Liluo, it really is the thing inside that man’s head?” asked Chu Feng.

“That’s right. It is that thing,” said Bai Liluo.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt some lingering fear.

The monster Bai Liluo spoke of was the poison within the grandson of the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master.

Earlier, Chu Feng had been in contact with that monster. Although he had realized that the poison was very strange, he had not expected it to be so dangerous.

Fortunately, Bai Liluo had come. Otherwise, perhaps no one would’ve discovered that such a dangerous thing was hidden in their Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Chu Feng, exactly what is going on here?”

Gu Mingyuan, the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and others all looked to Chu Feng with curiosity.

Although he had come to understand what was going on, the others were still completely baffled.

Seeing that, Chu Feng began to roughly explain the situation to them.

“The grandson of the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master has a monster inside him?”

The crowd were all surprised upon hearing those words.

The person feeling the most surprised was Gu Mingyuan. After all, she had tortured the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master’s grandson earlier.

Furthermore, she was the one who had captured him and brought him there.

“Young lady, is that thing very difficult to handle?” asked Gu Mingyuan.

“It’s hard to tell. It’s still dormant. I can only determine its strength after it awakens.”

“However, it’s best to not take that risk. I am able to tell that that thing is very dangerous. The nefarious aura it emits is even stronger than that of the Black-feathered Specter. If it is to awaken, we will not be able to handle it, and will only be courting trouble for ourselves,” said Bai Liluo.

“Sssss~~~”

Hearing those words, even Chu Feng was unable to keep himself from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

When Bai Liluo said, that the nefarious aura it emitted was even stronger than that of the Black-feathered Specter, it had proved how dangerous it was.

After all, the Black-feathered Specter had just massacred the Tantai Heavenly Clan. What it had done was enough to raise people’s hackles.

An existence more nefarious than the Black-feathered Specter, one could imagine what sort of thing a being like that would do.

“Young lady, that monster is inside that man’s body, right?” asked Gu Mingyuan.

“More or less.” said Bai Liluo.

“In that case, if its host is killed, will it die?” asked Gu Mingyuan.

“Killed? It’s best that you do not infuriate it. The host’s mood will also affect that monster.” said Bai Liluo.

“This...”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng, Chu Xuanzhengfa and Grandmaster Liangqiu subconsciously took a glance at Gu Mingyuan.

Gu Mingyuan was slightly embarrassed after feeling their gazes.

After all, what she had done earlier was not only a simple action of infuriating the host.

It could be said that what she did earlier had been extremely dangerous.

“In that case, we can only release them.” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he looked to the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. “Lord Clan Chief, is that fine?”

“Let’s release them.” The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief nodded.

No one voiced any objection to this decision. Even Gu Mingyuan didn’t voice any objections.

Logically, as the people from the Blood-devouring Hall had come with the intention to kill them, it was already showing great mercy to allow them to live. Releasing them should be impossible.

However, due to that monster, they could only choose to release them. After all, they could not provoke the grandson of the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master.

Even though the grandson was merely the host of that monster, Bai Liluo had said that if the host was provoked, that monster could be affected too.

Thus, killing the host would be impossible. The only choice would be to release him.

After making their decision, Chu Feng and the others really ended up releasing the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master, the experts and, naturally, the grandson of the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master.

Of course, they couldn’t possibly release them just like that. Chu Feng and the others deliberately put on a show for them.

They made the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master and others think that it was Chu Feng who had tried his hardest to urge Gu Mingyuan and the others to agree to spare them.

Furthermore, before releasing them, Chu Feng put forth a demand.

That is, after being released, he wanted the Blood-devouring Hall’s Hall Master to take his subordinates and his grandson with him and leave the Ancestral Martial Starfield, never to return, and never to willfully slaughter the innocent in the other starfield they settled in.

The Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master and experts did not anticipate that they would be able to come out alive.

Thus, they naturally agreed to Chu Feng's demand without any hesitation.

Furthermore, they were not putting up a pretense. Instead, they were extremely earnest. They were even filled with gratitude and remorse when they agreed to Chu Feng's demand.

Chu Feng and Gu Mingyuan had both experienced what sort of individual the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master was.

Although he could be considered to be a sinner covered in the blood of countless innocent people, he was also someone who valued loyalty and honor.

Thus, since he had agreed to his demand, Chu Feng felt that he would most likely be able to keep it.

Just like that, the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master left the Chu Heavenly Clan with his subordinates and grandson.

However, after the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master left, Chu Feng became deeply worried.

"Chu Feng, what did you tell the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master in your voice transmission earlier?" asked Gu Mingyuan.

They all knew that Chu Feng and the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master had talked about some things using voice transmission.

The worry that Chu Feng showed at that moment was most definitely related to what he had talked about with the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master.

"I think I know where that monster came from," said Chu Feng.

"Ah?"

The crowd were all shaken upon hearing those words.

They also wanted to know about the origin of that monster.

Merely, after seeing Chu Feng's reaction, they realized that the monster's origin was no small matter.

It was very possible that that origin concerned their fate.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3770 - The Specter's Curse - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3770 - The Specter's Curse

Chapter 3770 - The Specter's Curse

"Chu Feng, exactly what is going on?" Gu Mingyuan and the others asked in unison.

Chu Feng began to tell them what he had learned from the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master.

The Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master's grandson used to be a genius martial cultivator in his childhood.

He began cultivation at the age of five. At ten, he became a Half Martial Emperor.

Logically, with his talent, he would definitely become a grand and famed individual in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Unfortunately, when the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master's grandson was ten years old, he encountered an accident.

He was poisoned. Someone had deliberately poisoned him.

Furthermore, the poisoning was not done by a single person. Instead, it was done by a group of people. Every one of them were very powerful, far more powerful than the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master.

Those people were wearing red cloaks and white conical bamboo hats. On their red cloaks were black characters with the words 'Netherworld Envoy.'

The Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master didn't understand why they had decided to poison his grandson.

However, ever since the poison had entered his grandson, he went from an intelligent and extremely talented individual to a mentally handicapped individual.

The Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master had tried all sorts of methods to cure him. Unfortunately, everything was to no avail.

He had also attempted to find those red-cloaked individuals to avenge his grandson and find a way to treat him.

Because of that, the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master had practically traveled through the entire Holy Light Starfield.

Through his efforts, he had encountered those people two times. Unfortunately, he was defeated by them both times.

After being defeated, the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall master had no choice but to kneel and beg.

He did not beg them to spare his life. Instead, he begged them to give his grandson the antidote to the poison.

However, those people that were originally planning to kill him actually retrieved their killing intent and spared him after learning about his grandson.

However, without exception, they did not give his grandson the antidote. They also did not inform the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master about why they'd poisoned his grandson.

To date, the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master still didn't understand why they had poisoned his grandson.

Chu Feng and the others, on the other hand, knew why those people had done that.

The reason for that was because it was simply not poison. Instead, it was a sort of monster.

Those red-cloaked individuals were simply not putting the monster in the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master's grandson out of kind intentions.

Those red-cloaks individuals had deliberately selected a talented child to be the host for that monster.

According to the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master, that mysterious organization seemed to have a lot of members. Furthermore, they were very powerful, as all their members were top martial cultivation experts.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that the Blood-devouring Hall's Hall Master's grandson was most likely not the only casualty.

There should be a lot of other victims.

No one knew what the purpose of that organization was. However, what they'd done was most definitely not a good thing.

After all, putting that sort of monster into talented children and reducing their mental capability was in itself very vile. In fact, one could even say that that was a heinous and wicked crime.

Merely from that, one could tell how dangerous that organization was.

"Truly vile. They actually did such a despicable thing."

Learning about it, Gu Mingyuan had a look of anger.

She was not the only one. All the people present were all furious.

That said, they were, at the same time, feeling very worried.

Such a dangerous power was spreading terrifying monsters throughout the Holy Light Galaxy.

Regardless of what they intended to do, it must be something very terrifying.

"We should report this matter to the Holy Light Clan."

"We cannot allow that sinister power to continue committing crimes in the Holy Light Galaxy," said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

"Forget about it. Our Ancestral Martial Starfield is an Abandoned Starfield."

"The Holy Light Clan simply does not care about our life and death. They will not concern themselves with this sort of matter." Gu Mingyuan smiled bitterly and shook her head.

Hearing those words, Grandmaster went silent.

Although they stood atop the Ancestral Martial Starfield, their status was extremely petty and low in the Holy Light Galaxy.

“Sure enough, there’s no such thing as peace in places where martial cultivators exist. Being in the Ancestral Martial Starfield, we are faced with mutual deception. However, the entire Holy Light Galaxy is actually also equally chaotic and equally dangerous.” The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief sighed helplessly.

“Everyone, stop overthinking things. If it’s a fortune, it will not be a disaster. If it is a disaster, it cannot be avoided.”

“Rather than thinking about relying on others, it is better to strive hard to improve oneself,” said Bai Liluo.

After saying those words, she looked at Chu Feng and smiled. “Little brother Chu Feng, is big sister not correct?”

“Big sister Liluo, what you’ve said is correct. If one is to rely on the mountain, the mountain could collapse. If one is to rely on another person, that person could run away. It is best to rely on oneself,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Although he had discovered that there was a terrifying power in the Holy Light Galaxy plotting something terrifying, he was simply powerless to stop them.

Rather than having groundless fears, it was better to make the most of the time he had to improve oneself.

Thus, the look of worry disappeared from Chu Feng’s face.

“Wuuu~~~”

Suddenly, Bai Liluo’s exquisite little face started to distort.

She revealed a look of pain.

“Big sister Liluo, are you alright?”

Seeing that, Chu Feng immediately rushed over to Bai Liluo and supported her.

The others also began to examine her condition with worry on their faces.

Bai Liluo's current condition was very abnormal. Not only did she have a look of pain on her face, but she was also grimacing. Furthermore, black gaseous flames were being emitted from her body.

The black gaseous flames soared into the sky and formed words.

'Those who dare provoke me shall be cursed for the rest of their life!!!'

"This aura?!"

Seeing the distorted characters in the sky composed of black gaseous flames, Chu Feng and the others all tensed up.

The reason for that was because they were able to sense the aura of the Black-feathered Specter from the black gaseous flames.

"It's the curse! This young lady has been cursed!" Grandmaster Liangqiu said with a look of alarm.

"The Black-feathered Specter has left a curse on her?" asked Gu Mingyuan.

"Eeeahhh~~~"

Bai Liluo did not answer. She was in even more miserable pain.

Not only that, but black feathers also began to sprout from her body.

The black feathers pierced through her skin as they grew. Looking at them, one could tell that they were causing her great pain.

Most importantly, the black feathers were identical to the black feathers of the Black-feathered Specter.

"Big sister Liluo!"

Chu Feng and Grandmaster Liangqiu immediately released and enveloped Bai Liluo with their spirit power.

They were trying to alleviate her pain.

However, their actions were simply useless. They were simply unable to alleviate Bai Liluo's pain.

They could only watch as she continued to suffer in anguish. They were completely powerless to help her.

Bai Liluo's painful condition persisted for an entire hour before finally alleviating.

After the pain subsided, the black feathers started to ebb, and the black gaseous flames dissipated. The look of pain on Bai Liluo's face also disappeared.

It seemed like nothing had happened.

"That damned Black-feathered Specter!"

Bai Liluo sat on the ground. She was panting for breath.

However, she reached like she was completely fine. There was no trace of worry on her face.

Suddenly, Bai Liluo looked to Chu Feng. Her little mouth spread open, and she revealed two rows of white teeth. She was actually smiling at him.

"Little brother Chu Feng, it seems like you've all witnessed that."

"It's alright. This is a minor issue. Such a torment is nothing for your big sister."

Bai Liluo was smiling very brilliantly as she said those words.

However, Chu Feng was feeling upset. Although she spoke with such ease, although she was deemphasizing the situation, he knew that it was not that simple.

The Black-feathered Specter did not spare her at all. Instead, it had left a curse on her.

That curse would accompany her for the rest of her life, torturing her forever.

"It's alright. You don't have to look so anxious. Although that guy has left a curse on my body, I've also gained benefits from it. Come, sense your big sister's aura."

As Bai Liluo spoke, she released her boundless oppressive might.

“This aura?”

At that moment, all the people present were astonished.

The aura Bai Liluo emitted was that of a rank two Utmost Exalted. She was even stronger than Gu Mingyuan.

After all, she was an actual rank two Utmost Exalted.

“Big sister, is this the power you’ve gained from the Black-feathered Specter?” asked Chu Feng.

“That’s right. It’s not only cultivation; your big sister was only able to become a Dragon Mark Saint-cloak World Spiritist because of it too,” as Bai Liluo spoke, she revealed a proud look.

Hearing her words, Grandmaster Liangqiu and the others looked at each other in dismay. They were all gasping with shock..

They suddenly realized that the Black-feathered Specter was not only a dangerous existence, but it seemed to also be a treasured cultivation resource???

Chapter 3771 - Departure

“Oh, that’s right. Little brother Chu Feng, your big sister will be entering closed-door training for some time. Does your Chu Heavenly Clan have a place your big sister can use for closed-door training?” Bai Liluo asked Chu Feng.

Before Chu Feng could say anything, the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said, “Of course. It is our Chu Heavenly Clan’s honor to be able to provide young lady with a place to undergo closed-door training. We will definitely provide the best location for young lady to use for training.”

“Merely, young lady, when will you need this place?”

“Thank you. I need it right away,” said Bai Liluo.

“Big sister Liluo, you need to enter closed-door training right away?” asked Chu Feng.

“Right. Right away. Immediately. At once,” Bai Liluo said with a beaming smile.

After she finished saying those words, she patted Chu Feng’s shoulder. “Don’t look so worried. Do you not trust your big sister?”

“Even that Black-feathered Specter was nearly refined by your big sister. How could I not be able to handle the curse it has left on my body?”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled and said, “Of course I believe in big sister Liluo.”

Then, Bai Liluo really ended up undergoing closed-door training in the Chu Heavenly Clan.

After Bai Liluo entered closed-door training, the smile on Chu Feng’s face disappeared at once.

Although he believed in Bai Liluo, he had also witnessed how powerful the Black-feathered Specter was.

Thus, Chu Feng was still worried about the curse it had left on her.

Chu Feng did not want Bai Liluo to suffer the torment of the curse for the rest of her life.

“Young friend Chu Feng, it seems like you have an extraordinary relationship with that young lady,” Grandmaster Liangqiu said to Chu Feng after Bai Liluo left for closed-door training.

“I guess we can be said to be close friends that have experienced life and death together,” said Chu Feng.

After hearing those words from Chu Feng, Grandmaster Liangqiu was able to confirm that Bai Liluo held great importance to Chu Feng.

“Curses are things that cannot be handled with ordinary world spirit techniques.”

“However, since a curse can be cast on someone, it can naturally be removed too. There is nothing in the world that cannot be undone.”

“In the past, I ran across a certain individual. Although his capability as a world spiritist was rather limited, he was a master at both casting and removing curses.”

“Merely, as it has been many years since then, I do not know if he’s still around,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

Chu Feng’s expression changed upon hearing those words. He hurriedly asked, “Senior, who is the person you’re talking about? Do you know where he might be located?”

“I’ve actually only met that man once. I only know that he is surnamed Tang but do not know his full name.”

“Furthermore, he is not someone from the Ancestral Martial Starfield. Instead, he’s from the All-heaven Starfield.”

“As for where he is located...”

“He actually left me a location. He told me that the place is his hometown, that he will return to settle there, and told me I could pay him a visit there in the future.”

“That place is located in the All-heaven Starfield’s Reincarnation Upper Realm’s Seven Suns Mountain Range’s Southeastern region. It is called Autumnfall Village,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

“The Reincarnation Upper Realm’s Seven Suns Mountain Range?”

Chu Feng revealed a look of surprise upon hearing those words.

Sensing that Chu Feng’s expression was strange, Grandmaster Liangqiu asked, “Is there an issue, young friend Chu Feng?”

“It’s nothing.” Chu Feng smiled and shook his head.

“That place is indeed a bit dangerous. After all, it’s located in the All-heaven Starfield.”

“However, with your world spirit techniques, I believe that very few people will be able to see through you if you are to disguise yourself,” said Grandmaster Liangqiu.

The Reincarnation Upper Realm was located in the All-heaven Starfield. As for the All-heaven Starfield, it was controlled by the All-heaven Sect.

Because of that, Grandmaster Liangqiu felt that the change in Chu Feng's expression was because he was afraid of the All-heaven Sect.

However, that was actually not the reason.

Instead, Chu Feng was planning to proceed for the All-heaven Starfield from the very start.

Chu Feng needed to proceed to the All-heaven Starfield to seek out the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's friend and break his formation to complete the agreement he had made with his friend.

That said, the location where the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's friend was located was also the All-heaven Starfield's Reincarnation Upper Realm.

That was already a matter of extreme coincidence.

However, what was even more of a coincidence was that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's friend was not only located in the Reincarnation Upper Realm, but his residence also happened to be in the Seven Suns Mountain Range.

It was due to this coincidence that Chu Feng felt so astonished.

"Lord Clan Chief, I will be leaving the Ancestral Martial Starfield for a while," Chu Feng said to the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"You're planning to seek out a method to remove the curse?" asked the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"That's not all. I also need to complete a task senior Daoist gave to me."

"Because of that, I might be away for a while," said Chu Feng.

"Very well."

The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had learned that it was the Ox-nosed Old Daoist that had given Chu Feng the grand protective formation that had nearly eliminated the entire Linghu Heavenly Clan, and his Divine Power.

As such, he knew that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was a great benefactor to Chu Feng and his Chu Heavenly Clan.

Naturally, Chu Feng could not neglect a task given by his benefactor.

Seeing that Chu Feng was truly planning to proceed for the Reincarnation Upper Realm, Grandmaster Liangqiu said, "Chu Feng, I just so happen to have not paid a visit to that friend of mine. How about we travel together?"

"Senior, you don't have to trouble yourself with this matter. It's better that I handle things myself."

Chu Feng knew that Grandmaster Liangqiu did not possess a deep friendship with that friend he spoke of. Otherwise, he wouldn't have not bothered to pay a visit to said friend after so many years.

The reason why Grandmaster Liangqiu made such a suggestion was because he wanted to protect Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng didn't wish to involve Grandmaster Liangqiu. He felt that it would be a show of respect if he were to complete the task from the Ox-nosed Old Daoist on his own.

After making his decision, Chu Feng immediately set off.

As the All-heaven Starfield was the Ancestral Martial Starfield's neighbor, Chu Feng was able to reach the Reincarnation Upper Realm through teleportation formations in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Merely, the distance between starfields was most definitely not something that upper realms could compare to.

Thus, it would naturally take longer to arrive.

So in order to allow Chu Feng to reach his destination sooner, Grandmaster Liangqiu gave Chu Feng his treasure that was able to accelerate his speed inside the teleportation formation.

Normally, a treasure like that would be incomparably precious. Because of that, Chu Feng was reluctant to accept it.

However, Chu Feng wanted to reach the Reincarnation Upper Realm quickly. Thus, he decided that he would borrow Grandmaster Liangqiu's treasure and accept it for the time being.

Gu Mingyuan, Grandmaster Liangqiu, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, Chu Xuanzhengfa and Chu Lingxi were all there to see him off.

After witnessing Chu Feng enter the Ancient Era's teleportation formation and disappear into it, Chu Lingxi turned her gaze to Gu Mingyuan.

"Mother, let's return to the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan."

"Lingxi, why do you suddenly wish to return?"

Gu Mingyuan was surprised. She knew that Chu Lingxi possessed deep affection for the Chu Heavenly Clan. When she was training in the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan, she was complaining about returning to the Chu Heavenly Clan the entire time.

Gu Mingyuan had thought that it would be difficult to have Chu Lingxi return to the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan once she returned to the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Because of that, she was very surprised when Chu Lingxi made the request to return to the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan on her own.

"I must strive to train. Otherwise, I will truly be unable to catch up to that little brother of mine called Chu Feng," Chu Lingxi said to Gu Mingyuan with a smile.

Gu Mingyuan was pleasantly surprised upon hearing those words. In fact, she was unable to contain her smile.

She was truly overjoyed. Very rarely did she smile with such joy.

Seeing the joyous Gu Mingyuan, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, Grandmaster Liangqiu and Chu Xuanzhengfa were all surprised, and even confused.

They did not understand why Gu Mingyuan would be suddenly so happy.

Gu Mingyuan turned to Chu Lingxi and asked with a skeptical tone, "Lingxi, you've truly decided?"

Chapter 3772 - Havoc

“I’ve decided,” Chu Lingxi had a look of determination as she answered Gu Mingyuan.

“Great. This is truly great. My dear daughter, you should’ve made this decision long ago.”

After hearing Chu Lingxi’s answer, Gu Mingyuan became even more joyous. She was smiling like a blooming flower. She was so excited that she actually hugged Chu Lingxi, picked her up and spun her around.

One must know that Gu Mingyuan was a very composed and even cold individual.

From this, one could imagine how astonishing of a thing it was for Chu Xuanzhengfa and the others to see how excited she currently was.

“Lingxi, exactly what did you agree to with your mother?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked curiously.

“Mother, put me down,” Chu Lingxi said to Gu Mingyuan.

Gu Mingyuan actually did as Chu Lingxi said and put her down.

After being put down, Chu Lingxi walked over to Chu Xuanzhengfa. She actually had a difficult look on her face.

“Putt~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Lingxi kneeled on the ground. She then kowtowed to Chu Xuanzhengfa and the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Lingxi, what are you doing?”

The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief hurriedly stepped forward and helped Chu Lingxi back up.

“Lord Clan Chief, I have let down the Chu Heavenly Clan. I am unqualified to be a member of the clan.”

After being helped up, Chu Lingxi started to tremble. She was weeping so much that her face was completely covered in tears.

“Lingxi, exactly what is going on?”

Seeing Chu Lingxi like that, Chu Xuanzhengfa became very worried.

In a panic, Chu Xuanzhengfa turned his gaze to Gu Mingyuan. He was seeking an answer from her.

Compared to the nervous Chu Xuanzhengfa, Gu Mingyuan was extremely calm.

“Lingxi, just tell it as it is. I believe the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and the others will be able to understand too,” Gu Mingyuan said to Chu Lingxi.

Hearing those words, Chu Lingxi began to wipe away her tears and adjust her state of mind.

Then, she began to explain things to Chu Xuanzhengfa and the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

Chu Lingxi had two different bloodline powers -- the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Heavenly Bloodline and the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan’s inherited bloodline.

For the sake of allowing Chu Lingxi to surpass her in the future, Gu Mingyuan had used a secret technique to seal away her Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan’s bloodline power when she was born.

In fact, rather than saying sealed, it would be more accurate to say that her bloodline power was being reforged; being refined.

The reason why Chu Lingxi was able to grasp two different bloodline powers with great proficiency was due to what Gu Mingyuan had done back then.

And now, the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan’s bloodline power within Chu Lingxi’s body was even stronger than that of Gu Mingyuan’s.

However, Chu Lingxi was unable to control that bloodline power. She was only able to unleash a very limited portion of its power.

In fact, she needed to utilize the power of a treasure in order to increase her cultivation by a level.

This was simply an enormous waste of the powerful bloodline power within her.

The reason why this was happening was due to the existence of the Heavenly Bloodline.

Due to the fact that she was controlling two different sorts of bloodline powers and putting a greater focus on her Heavenly Bloodline, it led to Chu Lingxi being unable to fully unleash the power of her Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan's bloodline, even though it was stronger.

Because of that, Gu Mingyuan had proposed to have Chu Lingxi renounce her Heavenly Bloodline.

She wanted Chu Lingxi to suppress her Heavenly Bloodline and put all her focus into the cultivation of her Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan's bloodline.

With that, Chu Lingxi's cultivation speed would accelerate.

However, at the time the proposal was raised, Chu Lingxi refused it.

She would rather her cultivation speed be slower than to suppress her Heavenly Bloodline. To Chu Lingxi, she felt that her Heavenly Bloodline was her true bloodline, her roots.

However, for the sake of catching up to Chu Feng, Chu Lingxi decided to suppress her Heavenly Bloodline and focus wholly on cultivating her Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan's bloodline.

That was why she'd knelt, kowtowed and had cried so hard earlier.

"Foolish girl, you are only suppressing it temporarily, not sealing it forever. There is no need to react like this."

"Besides, even if you decided to permanently seal away your Heavenly Bloodline, if you are able to increase your cultivation by doing that, your father will also support you."

"As long as you're surnamed Chu, you will forever be my daughter, forever be a member of our Chu Heavenly Clan." Chu Xuanzhengfa heaved a sigh of relief upon learning what was going on.

To him, this was a trifling matter.

“Lingxi, what your father said is correct. Go ahead and focus on training.”

“Although familial love and friendships are important in this world, you’ve also witnessed how dangerous the martial cultivation world is. If you want to be able to live your life peacefully in this world, you must have a strong cultivation.”

“Thus, increasing your cultivation quickly is more important than anything else.”

“As for bloodline powers, they are trivial matters,” the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief smiled and comforted Chu Lingxi as well.

Hearing those words from her father and the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, the burden was lifted from Chu Lingxi’s heart.

“Mother, in that case, when shall we set off?” Chu Lingxi looked to Gu Mingyuan.

“When do you want to set off?” asked Gu Mingyuan.

“Right away,” said Chu Lingxi.

.....

Even if two starfields were adjacent to one another, there was still a considerable amount of distance between them.

Traveling from the Ancestral Martial Starfield’s Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm to the All-heaven Starfield’s Reincarnation Upper Realm was destined to be a long journey.

Even though Chu Feng had Grandmaster Liangqiu’s treasure, it still took him over a dozen days to arrive at the Reincarnation Upper Realm.

At the moment Chu Feng stepped out of the Ancient Era’s Teleportation Formation, what appeared before him was a world in another starfield.

That place was the All-heaven Starfield’s Reincarnation Upper Realm.

“This feeling, it’s truly been a long time.”

Chu Feng had a look of excitement on his face. It was an excitement that he had not had for a long time.

Everything there was new to him. The flowers, plants, trees and even the air felt fresh and unfamiliar.

Arriving in an unfamiliar land would always be a journey filled with unknowns.

Everything was so very unfamiliar, and waiting for Chu Feng to explore.

Chu Feng was actually very fond of this sort of feeling.

After all, he was destined to be someone that disliked comfort.

Besides, the All-heaven Starfield was also the territory of the All-heaven Sect.

The All-heaven Sect had attempted to subjugate the Ancestral Martial Starfield to be under their rule, and had nearly succeeded.

As someone from the Ancestral Martial Starfield, Chu Feng felt very displeased by that.

Because of that, Chu Feng had never thought about simply returning to the Ancestral Martial Starfield after arriving there.

Chu Feng had decided to cause havoc in the All-heaven Starfield.

Otherwise, he would not be able to appease his resentment.

Chapter 3773 - Seven Suns Mountain Range

Since Chu Feng was planning to go against the people from the All-heaven Sect from the start, he had disguised himself before he stepped out of the teleportation formation.

Chu Feng currently appeared extremely mediocre. His appearance could even be said to be ordinary to the extreme.

He did not look handsome, yet was not ugly either. He did not appear to be extraordinary in the slightest. However, he did not appear to be excessively unsophisticated either.

Even his outfit was very ordinary. That was Chu Feng's goal. He wanted to become the most unremarkable person in a crowd.

Of course... he had long placed away his Chu Heavenly Clan's title plate.

Chu Feng had disguised himself because he did not want the people from the All-heaven Sect to know who he was.

Naturally, he could not allow his identity to be exposed. For that, he went as far as to create a new name for himself - surname Xiu and given name Luo.

Chu Feng's new name was Asura. [1. Xiu Luo means Asura.]

Chu Feng walked out of the Ancient Era's Teleportation Formation and took a glance at the map. After doing so, he began to proceed directly for the Seven Suns Mountain Range.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist had only given Chu Feng a map that indicated the location where his old friend was.

However, he did not tell Chu Feng his old friend's name.

At the time, Chu Feng was in a rush to leave. Thus, he did not ask much about the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's old friend. Because of that, he could not blame the Ox-nosed Old Daoist for not informing him.

That said, Chu Feng felt that since the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was so powerful, his friend must be extraordinary too. Otherwise, how could he possibly gamble against the Ox-nosed Old Daoist?

Furthermore, they were gambling their disciple's ability.

This meant that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's friend must be someone who possessed great ability.

Since it was someone who possessed great ability, that person would most likely not be unknown. Thus, Chu Feng felt that it should not be difficult for him to find the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's friend.

After Chu Feng arrived at the Seven Suns Mountain Range, he discovered the Seven Suns Mountain Range to be a truly extraordinary place.

The Seven Suns Mountain Range was very large, extremely large. It was composed of an area that surpassed the entire Nine Provinces Continent.

Such a vast mountain range was actually sealed off by a spirit formation.

The vast spirit formation covered the entire vast mountain range. Oh how magnificent of a sight this was.

Chu Feng was unable to tell what level the spirit formation was. He could only sense that it was impregnable.

Since Chu Feng was unable to see through that spirit formation, it meant that the person who had set up the spirit formation had world spirit techniques stronger than his own.

That spirit formation was set up precisely to prevent people from entering the mountain range without permission.

Due to the existence of the spirit formation, one must enter the Seven Suns Mountain Range from a designated location.

However, at that moment, even the only entrance to the mountain range had been sealed off.

Furthermore, there were countless palaces outside the entrance. There were so many that they resembled a bustling city from afar.

However, there just so happened to be many different sorts of banners flying above this city.

Those banners were also completely different from each other.

This meant that many different powers had gathered there. Although the majority of them were relatively weak, there were also some strong powers.

Sending out his spirit power, Chu Feng was able to sense that there were many Exalted-level experts present. In fact, there were also multiple peak Exalted-level experts.

As for Utmost Exalted level experts, Chu Feng did not detect any.

Of course, if an Utmost Exalted-level expert had deliberately concealed his or her aura, not even Chu Feng, a Saint-cloak World Spiritist, would be able to detect them.

After Chu Feng spread out his spirit power, he was able to hear conversations from practically everyone.

Soon, Chu Feng learned about what was happening with the Seven Suns Mountain Range.

An abnormal sign would appear in the Seven Suns Mountain Range every month.

When the abnormal sign appeared, six suns would appear. Adding on the original sun, one would see seven suns hanging in the sky.

That was also how the name Seven Suns Mountain Range came to be.

Whenever the abnormal sign appeared, the natural energies inside the Seven Suns Mountain Range would become particularly abundant.

Because of that, the Seven Suns Mountain Range had become a sacred cultivation ground of the Reincarnation Upper Realm.

In other words, all those powers were gathered there, waiting for the arrival of the abnormal sign of the Seven Suns Mountain Range so that they could enter it to train.

The Seven Suns Mountain Range was not a place without a master. The master of the mountain range was called Yuan Shu.

Yuan Shu was the strongest world spiritist in the All-heaven Starfield.

He had already become a Dragon Mark Saint-cloak World Spiritist over a hundred years before.

He had been in closed-door training in the Seven Suns Mountain Range the entire time. Thus, no one knew how powerful he had become.

Chu Feng felt that Yuan Shu was most likely the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's Old Friend.

After all, when looked at from every aspect, Yuan Shu would be a fit.

The only exception would be that his world spirit techniques were a bit weaker.

Of course, since the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was capable of concealing his strength, Yuan Shu could naturally also be able to do so.

Although the Seven Suns Mountain Range was a place with a master, it would always open its doors and allow the people from the Reincarnation Upper Realm to enter it whenever the abnormal sign appeared.

Once the abnormal sign disappeared, they would drive the people out.

Many people planned to stay in the mountain range and train year-round. Thus, after being driven out, they did not leave, and instead continued to stay outside the mountain range to wait for the next opportunity to enter.

However, these martial cultivators were all arrogant individuals. Thus, they naturally could not allow themselves to spend nights in the open as they waited.

Thus, after obtaining permission from Yuan Shu, they constructed palaces outside the Seven Suns Mountain Range.

Over time, the martial cultivators that stayed and constructed palaces had created the vast city outside the mountain's foot.

Currently, the next abnormal sign would appear in five days.

During this period of time, Chu Feng would not be able to ascend the mountain either.

However, Chu Feng was not in a rush, as he could use these five days to do his other task.

He was planning to find Grandmaster Liangqiu's friend who had meticulously studied curses.

Thus, Chu Feng began to proceed for the Autumnfall Village located southeast of the mountain range.

"Mn?"

As he was flying, Chu Feng's expression suddenly changed.

He felt a dangerous aura.

The dangerous aura came from the spirit formation, and from below.

Chu Feng looked down, and discovered that there were two people, one old and one young.

The old person was an white-haired old man.

The old man was dressed in gorgeous clothes. He emitted an extraordinary air, and possessed the cultivation of a rank four Exalted.

As for the young individual, she was a young woman.

The woman looked rather good. Furthermore, her cultivation was rather strong too. She was a rank one Martial Immortal.

Although her cultivation was incomparable to Chu Feng's, it was already very strong for a person of the younger generation.

After all, the great majority of the genius-level younger generations in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm were only True Immortals.

Even Heavenly Immortal was an insurmountable mountain for the younger generations of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. As for the Martial Immortal realm, it was simply something that they'd never imagined.

Although this woman was close to a hundred years old, she was still a person of the younger generation. Thus, for her to be able to become a Martial Immortal at her age fully illustrated how talented she was.

If she was in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, she would definitely be deemed a demon-level genius.

At that moment, the old man and the young woman were attempting to breach a spirit formation.

The dangerous aura came from that spirit formation.

Chu Feng felt that spirit formation to be very dangerous. If they failed to control it and allowed its power to be released, that woman would be drawn into it and killed.

Although Chu Feng did not know them, that woman was still a life. He could not ignore her and let her die. Besides, he felt that it was a trifling matter for him.

Thus, Chu Feng descended from the sky and landed behind the old man and the young woman.

“I’d urge the two of you to stop what you’re doing right away,” Chu Feng said to them.

However, Chu Feng’s words were immediately met with alert gazes.

The old man and the young woman both looked at Chu Feng with killing intent in their eyes.

Chapter 3774 - Surnamed Xiu, Named Luo

The old man and the young woman were on total alert toward Chu Feng.

They went as far as to unleash their killing intent towards him.

That said, Chu Feng was capable of understanding why they reacted in such a manner. After all, the spirit formation they were trying to breach was a protective formation. Likely, what the protective formation protected was a treasure.

That said, it was not Chu Feng’s fault for suddenly appearing before them either. After all, they had not set up a concealment formation or a protective formation whilst they were breaching the spirit formation.

It was not only Chu Feng who was able to see them; others would also be able to see them as they passed by.

They were simply too careless.

Of course, with Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques, even if they’d set up a concealment formation and a protective formation, they would still not be able to stop him from appearing before them.

“Don’t fret, I hold no malice,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“If you have no malice, then scram immediately!” the woman snarled with a cold voice. Her attitude was very fierce.

However, Chu Feng was not angered by her attitude. He had seen a lot of people like her. Besides, he was also able to understand why she was so on guard.

Although he was not angered, he decided to sit on a stone nearby.

He muttered, "Little girl, you will have to be responsible for your actions and words. What you've said earlier might push away a chance to save yourself."

After hearing those words, the woman had a look of contempt. She even started to laugh mockingly.

However, that old man's expression changed.

He discovered that Chu Feng was very calm and composed. Although he had a mediocre appearance, he was... unable to see through Chu Feng's cultivation.

On top of that, this place was the Seven Suns Mountain Range, the place where many powers were gathered. It was a place that contained many hidden dragons and crouching tigers.

Because of that, he did not dare to act disrespectfully towards Chu Feng.

Thus, not only did he retrieve his alert gaze, but he even revealed a good-natured smile on his face.

"Mister, may I know your distinguished name?" asked the old man.

"My surname is Xiu and my name is Luo," said Chu Feng. [1. Xiu Luo means Asura.]

"So it's actually Mister Asura," the old man said with a smile. He was acting as if he had heard of Chu Feng's name before.

However, that woman actually burst into laughter.

"Asura? Hah... Why don't you add two more words to your name and call yourself Asura World Spiritist instead? Asura? In that case, I'm called Demon," the woman laughed mockingly.

“Shenshen, don’t be rude!” The old man took a glance at the woman. Then, he looked to Chu Feng, “Mister Asura, did you manage to determine something?”

“You cannot act so recklessly with that spirit formation. If you are to attempt to breach it in that manner, you will definitely be met with a mishap. With your cultivation, you will be able to live. However, she will be drawn into the spirit formation. At that time, not even you will be able to save her,” said Chu Feng.

“Mister Asura, in that case, how do you think we are supposed to breach the spirit formation?” asked the old man.

“It’s actually very simple. Retrieve your world spirit techniques and do not use any martial power either. You merely need to breach it manually. Follow the sequence I am about to tell you. Push once, pull three times, push twice, pull four times, push five times, pull eight times, push nine times, pull seven times, pull once, push four times...”

In one breath, Chu Feng declared hundreds of steps. They were the sequence to breach the spirit formation.

The spirit formation the old man and the young woman were attempting to breach came from a treasure.

That treasure was filled with traps. However, if one were to follow Chu Feng’s sequence, one would not encounter any trap.

“Mister Asura, if we are to follow your sequence, it would mean that this old man alone will suffice?”

“But, that treasure clearly needs the cooperation of two people in order to obtain it no?” asked the old man.

“Did the person who told you that you need two people to cooperate to obtain the treasure tell you how to safely breach the spirit formation?” asked Chu Feng.

“That...” The old man began to ponder. Then, he walked over to the spirit formation again and pulled the woman behind him. “Shenshen, you step aside first.”

“Grandfather, you’re really listening to him?”

Seeing that the old man was really planning to listen to Chu Feng's proposal, the young woman had a look of confusion.

However, the old man ignored the woman and began to actually breach the spirit formation around the treasure according to Chu Feng's sequence.

Following Chu Feng's sequence, the power of the spirit formation began to dissipate after he had only finished half of the sequence.

The dangerous aura had also disappeared.

Seeing that, the old man was immediately overjoyed. Even that woman revealed a shocked expression.

Thus, the old man continued with the sequence. When he reached the final sequence, a snap was heard, and the box-like object actually opened up.

After the box opened, a scroll was revealed.

"Success. After all these years, I've finally succeeded in opening it."

"Mister Asura, truly thank y..."

"Mister Asura?"

Upon successfully opening the treasure box, the old man was overjoyed. He turned around and wanted to express his thanks to Chu Feng.

However, after turning around, he discovered that Chu Feng was nowhere to be found.

"Grandmaster, that senior from earlier was truly powerful."

Even the woman who had looked down on Chu Feng earlier had a look of admiration and shock in her eyes. She was unable to keep herself from praising Chu Feng.

She knew very well how difficult it was to open that treasure. They had attempted many different methods throughout the years. There were even people from their sect that had ended up losing their lives attempting to open the treasure.

The reason why she and her grandfather had not setup a concealment formation whilst they attempted to breach the spirit formation around the treasure was because they were hoping that, should they fail in their attempt and the protective formation set off an enormous commotion, an expert might notice and come to their rescue.

Although they knew that it was extremely unlikely that an expert would come to their rescue, they had no other choice.

For the sake of preventing another mishap, that was all they could do.

Of course, if they had wanted to protect themselves, they could very well attempt to open the treasure in a place with a lot of people.

The reason why they did not do so was because the treasure was invaluable. They were afraid that someone might rob the treasure from them.

Otherwise, they would not be on such high alert, and reveal killing intent in their eyes when Chu Feng suddenly appeared whilst they were attempting to breach the formation.

In short, opening the treasure box was a very conflicting matter for them.

They wanted to open it, yet they were afraid of the associated dangers.

They were unwilling to refrain from attempting to open the treasure box, as they deeply desired the Immortal Technique contained within.

That said, one thing was certain -- opening the treasure box was a very dangerous and difficult thing for them.

However, such a dangerous and difficult treasure was actually easily solved following Chu Feng's guidance.

If they hadn't experienced it themselves, they would truly not believe that the spirit formation could be so easily undone.

That said, they'd never heard of this method, even though it seemed very simple, compared to the methods from before. Because of that, they were certain that Chu Feng was a master world spiritist.

After all, only master world spiritists that possessed extremely powerful world spirit techniques would be able to see through the method to unravel a treasure in an instant.

As for world spiritists of that caliber, they definitely wouldn't be unknown individuals.

Chapter 3775 - Old Freak Tang

"Grandfather, do you know who exactly that senior Asura from earlier was?" the young woman asked her grandfather.

She was now filled with admiration and even slight adoration for Chu Feng. Thus, she wanted to know who he was.

However, the old man shook his head at the young woman's question.

Seeing that her grandfather actually did not know who Chu Feng was, the young woman felt that it was truly a pity.

"Mister Asura is most likely a hidden expert."

"To him, providing guidance to us was merely a trivial matter."

"However, it is a long-cherished wish of mine; of this Shuijing Dongtian, to obtain this Immortal Technique."

"Thus, no matter what, I must find Mister Asura and properly express my thanks," the old man said with a look of gratitude.

.....

Meanwhile. Chu Feng had arrived at Autumnfall Village.

Although Autumnfall Village was located at the foot of the Seven Suns Mountain Range, it was not a paradise of a place. Instead, it appeared extremely ordinary, and even slightly impoverished.

Even the villagers appeared to be rather poverty-stricken. This village was simply a place where ordinary people lived. Although all the villagers were martial cultivators, their cultivations were simply too weak.

That said, Chu Feng was not surprised by how impoverished the village was.

According to Grandmaster Liangqiu, this place should be the hometown of that Mister Tang.

Thus, it was most likely not because he was fond of the place's scenery that Mister Tang decided to enter closed-door training there. Rather, it would be because the place gave him the feeling of being in one's hometown.

After Chu Feng arrived at the village, he began to make inquiries, and learned that there were three families in the village with the surname Tang.

After filtering through the three families, Chu Feng focused his attention on an old man.

The other two families with the surname Tang had been residing in the village for a very long time. They had practically never left the village, and did not resemble the person Chu Feng was searching for.

The only difference would be an old man that was surnamed Tang.

That old man was an outsider. He was not someone from the village.

He arrived at the village over two hundred years ago. He was a world spiritist, and would spend his days concocting medicinal pellets or creating weapons to sell.

Due to the fact that the old man had an eccentric temperament, the people in the village all addressed him as Old Freak Tang.

“Cough, cough, cough~~~”

Chu Feng arrived at Old Freak Tang's residence.

Upon arrival, Chu Feng heard a series of violent coughs.

Out of respect for Old Freak Tang, Chu Feng did not conceal his cultivation.

In fact, he even removed his disguise to reveal his actual appearance.

Naturally, he also did not use any special methods to observe the situation inside.

Thus, Chu Feng did not know what the conditions inside were like, and what Old Freak Tang looked like. However, from the intense coughing, Chu Feng determined that Old Freak Tang seemed to be in bad health. n)(0vE1bIn

“Senior Tang, please excuse me for disturbing you.”

“This junior is named Chu Feng. I was asked to pay senior Tang a visit by Grandmaster Liangqiu,” Chu Feng spoke with his fist clasped as he stood outside the entrance.

“Creak~~~”

The shabby entrance door was pushed open and an aged old man appeared before Chu Feng.

That person was as thin as a match. His eye sockets were sunken and he was so old that he only had a few gray hairs on his head. It would be one thing if he were completely bald. Yet, the few strands of hair on his near-bald head just made him appear very messy, and slightly ugly.

Most importantly, that Old Freak Tang not only had a crafty look, but his eyes were also very ominous-looking. At first glance, he seemed like a humanoid monster.

Fortunately, Chu Feng was a person who had experienced a lot. If it were a child that had seen Old Freak Tang, they would likely burst into tears out of fear.

“What did you mutter earlier?”

Not only did the old man have a vicious look, but his tone was also very vicious.

“Senior, are you senior Tang?” Chu Feng asked with his fist clasped.

“Can you not see that word?”

The old man pointed to the crude board above the entrance. Written on it was ‘Tang’s Smithy.’

“This junior was impolite, I hope senior Tang will not take offense.” Chu Feng clasped his fist respectfully in an apologetic manner.

“Enough with the senior this and senior that. Do not speak so weirdly to me. Go ahead and tell me what you want. Do you want to forge a weapon, or do you want to concoct a medicinal pellet?” Old Freak Tang spoke with great impatience.

“Senior, this junior is not looking to concoct a medicinal pellet or forge a weapon,” said Chu Feng.

“Then why did you come here? Get the hell out.” Old Freak Tang glared at Chu Feng with great annoyance. He planned to close the door.

“Paa~~~”

However, before the door could close, Chu Feng grabbed it.

Old Freak Tang tried to forcibly fling the door shut, only to discover that the door had turned as heavy as a boulder, and he was unable to move it at all.

At that moment, panic appeared on his previously fierce and vicious face.

“You... who are you?!” Old Freak Tang asked Chu Feng.

“Senior, let us talk inside.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he entered the house and closed the door behind him.

After entering the house, Chu Feng discovered that the house was very messy. The great majority of the things in the house were related to world spirit techniques. They were either for forging weaponry or concocting medicinal pellets. However, they were all very rudimentary items.

As for things relating to curses, Chu Feng was unable to detect any.

“Mi-Milord, this old man was in the wrong earlier. I have eyes, but failed to recognize Mount Tai.”

“Milord, please don’t take offense. Please don’t lower yourself to this lowly one’s level.”

After entering the house, Old Freak Tang immediately started pleading. He not only did not possess his previous arrogant attitude, but he instead became extremely courteous, and was even stuttering as he spoke.

This made Chu Feng realize that Old Freak Tang was actually a paper tiger.

But, this shouldn't be the case...

Grandmaster Liangqiu's friend shouldn't be such an ordinary person.

“Senior, do you still remember Grandmaster Liangqiu from the Ancestral Martial Starfield?”

Chu Feng did not directly mention his purpose in coming. Instead, he began to question this Old Freak Tang.

He wanted to confirm if he had mistaken him for Grandmaster Liangqiu's friend.

“Ancestral Martial Starfield? Milord, you must've mistaken me for someone else.”

“I'm only an ordinary commoner. I've never even been out of the Reincarnation Upper Realm, how could I possibly know someone from the Ancestral Martial Starfield?” said Old Man Tang.

Chu Feng's focus was fixed onto Old Freak Tang as he spoke. He discovered that even though Old Freak Tang had a look of fear on his face and appeared completely flustered, he did not appear to be lying.

“Senior, my apologies. I disturbed you.”

Chu Feng clasped his fist. After saying those words, he left.

Chu Feng felt that he had likely found the wrong person. However, he was unwilling to give up.

Thus, he appeared like he had left the village, but actually stayed outside the village to monitor the entire village.

He changed his appearance back to that of Asura. Furthermore, he was using his Heaven's Eyes to observe that Old Freak Tang.

To Chu Feng's delight, that Old Freak Tang was indeed not as simple as he appeared to be.

Chapter 3776 - His Secret

Earlier, Chu Feng had not observed things with his Heaven's Eyes, or sensed with his spirit power.

However, after using his Heaven's Eyes to observe that Old Freak Tang, Chu Feng discovered many suspicious things.

Firstly, although Old Freak Tang seemed to be a commoner, his smithy actually had a layer of spirit formations around it. It was a protective formation that was capable of hiding things.

Furthermore, that spirit formation was the work of a Dragon Mark Exalted-cloak World Spiritist.

It was obvious that a world spiritist of that level did not live in Autumnfall Village.

Thus, that spirit formation served as sufficient proof that Old Freak Tang was an extraordinary individual.

Besides the spirit formation around his smithy, Old Freak Tang himself was also acting very strangely.

If he were truly afraid of Chu Feng, he would likely be feeling lingering fear from his encounter with him. Even after Chu Feng had left, it should take him a while to calm down.

However, he did not appear to be feeling any lingering fear at all. After Chu Feng left, the terrified appearance disappeared completely.

This meant that the fear he had displayed toward Chu Feng earlier was nothing more than a disguise.

All of this brought joy to Chu Feng.

He was now practically certain that Old Freak Tang was the person he was searching for.

However, for some unknown reason, Old Freak Tang was trying to conceal his identity, and was unwilling to admit who he was to Chu Feng.

That said, Chu Feng would naturally not be willing to easily give up.

After Chu Feng left, that Old Freak Tang returned to his bedroom and sat down cross-legged.

He began to release his spirit power, which soon covered the entire village.

After his spirit power was released, Chu Feng was able to tell that Old Freak Tang was a rather extraordinary world spiritist. He was a Dragon Mark Exalted-cloak World Spiritist.

This served to explain that he was actually the one who had set up the spirit formation around his smithy.

Furthermore, although Old Freak Tang's spirit power had enveloped the entire village, it was ultimately fixed on a single family.

It turned out that Old Freak Tang was monitoring a single person.

The person he was monitoring was an old lady.

Although she was an old lady, she was actually not excessively old for a martial cultivator, being merely over a thousand years old.

Many cultivators would be able to maintain their appearances well at such an age.

This was especially true for women. Many of them kept their middle-aged appearances. In fact, there were a lot of women that kept their youthful appearances too.

However, that old lady looked extremely old. Furthermore, her health was extremely weak.

She seemed like she would not be able to live for much longer.

“Why is Old Freak Tang monitoring that old lady?”

This question flashed through Chu Feng's mind. After all, that old lady simply appeared too ordinary.

She did not possess any looks, nor did she possess a high cultivation. She also did not resemble someone with secrets.

In fact, Chu Feng felt that the old lady would die soon.

Old Freak Tang continued to monitor the old lady until nightfall. Only then did he retrieve his spirit power, stand up and walk out of his smithy.

Seeing that Old Freak Tang was leaving his smithy, Chu Feng immediately and secretly followed him.

Old Freak Tang was extremely fast. He was so fast that Chu Feng was unable to catch up to him even when he went all-out to chase after him.

Chu Feng felt that even though Old Freak Tang's world spirit techniques were only those of a Dragon Mark Exalted-cloak World Spiritist and was weaker than his, his cultivation far surpassed that of his own.

It was very possible for Old Freak Tang to be an Utmost Exalted-level expert.

After all, if Chu Feng were to go all-out, his battle power would be on par with a peak Exalted.

Yet, even with that being the case, he still found it very difficult to keep up with Old Freak Tang. With that, it seemed obvious that Old Freak Tang's cultivation should be that of an Utmost Exalted.

Although Chu Feng could not keep up with Old Freak Tang in terms of speed, he still had his Heaven's Eyes, which could see very far.

Furthermore, the place where Old Freak Tang was heading was not far from Autumnfall Village.

Thus, in the end, Chu Feng managed to catch up to Old Freak Tang.

The place where Old Freak Tang had arrived was a sect by the name of Void Cleanse Monastery.

This Void Cleanse Monastery would actually be considered to be a small sect in the Reincarnation Upper Realm.

Although it had hundreds of thousands of people, the strongest person in the sect only possessed the cultivation of a Martial Immortal.

The great majority of the people in the sect were Heavenly Immortals and True Immortals. As for the disciples, they were even weaker.

Not to mention Old Freak Tang, even Chu Feng would be able to enter and leave a sect like that completely unhindered, completely undetected.

That said, as Old Freak Tang was very powerful, Chu Feng did not dare to approach him, and had to observe the situation from afar.

With Old Freak Tang's cultivation, even if Chu Feng had concealed himself with his Saint-cloak World Spiritist ability, he would still be detected should he follow Old Freak Tang too closely.

As it turned out, Old Freak Tang had arrived at the Void Cleanse Monastery to secretly monitor another individual.

The person he was monitoring was a woman. Judging from her appearance, she should be an elder of the Void Cleanse Monastery.

That woman had a fair appearance and a tall figure. She could be said to be a beauty. Although she was not a beauty so devastatingly beautiful that she could cause the downfall of a city or state, she was very charming to the eyes.

Furthermore, that woman had a decent cultivation.

She was a rank one Heavenly Immortal.

"Could it be... Old Freak Tang is married to that old lady?" Suddenly, this thought came to Chu Feng's mind.

The reason why he thought that way was because of the appearance of the woman Old Freak Tang was monitoring.

The woman was rather good-looking. Her appearance could be said to be from a completely different world from the ugly Old Freak Tang and the ordinary-looking old lady.

However, it just so happened that Chu Feng was able to detect traces of resemblance to Old Freak Tang and the old lady on that woman.

It could be said that all of the small amounts of good features Old Freak Tang and the old lady possessed were inherited by that woman.

Since that woman possessed the features of both Old Freak Tang and that old lady, it meant that it was possible that she was their daughter.

Furthermore, Old Freak Tang was looking at the woman with eyes filled with affection. Those eyes greatly resembled the eyes of a father looking at his daughter.

If that woman was indeed Old Freak Tang's daughter, his seemingly strange behavior could be explained.

After this idea came to his mind, Chu Feng immediately began to secretly investigate the woman and the old lady.

After investigating them, Chu Feng discovered that the woman was called Song Ge, and she was indeed that old lady's daughter.

Merely, no one knew who Song Ge's father was. Her mother had also never mentioned who her father was either.

Thus, Song Ge had actually taken her mother's surname.

After this investigation, Chu Feng became even more certain that his guess was correct.

This Song Ge must be Old Freak Tang and that old lady's daughter. *no ve-
lb(In*

Merely, due to some reason, Old Freak Tang was unable to recognize Song Ge as his daughter. He was also unable to see Song Ge's mother. Thus, he could only monitor the two of them from afar.

.....

Early in the morning of the next day, Old Freak Tang returned to his smithy in Autumnfall Village.

Chu Feng decided to lay his cards out with him. Thus, he went to pay him a visit again.

"Cough, cough, cough..."

However, before Chu Feng even approached the smithy, he was able to hear Old Freak Tang's intense and painful coughing.

Actually, Old Freak Tang had coughed countless times in the night that Chu Feng had observed him. Furthermore, every time he coughed, he would cough up blood, and start panting afterwards.

Chu Feng felt that Old Freak Tang must be seriously ill.

That said, the coughing session this time around was particularly intense and painful.

Thus, Chu Feng directly pushed the door open and released his spirit power to envelop Old Freak Tang and began to treat him..

“You?!”

After Old Freak Tang saw Chu Feng, he immediately revealed a look of surprise.

His surprise was not from Chu Feng’s sudden appearance. Instead, he was surprised by Chu Feng’s spirit power being Saint level.

“Senior, please don’t say anything for now. Allow this junior to diagnose your condition first.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he began to use his spirit power to diagnose Old Freak Tang’s condition.

However, after doing so, Chu Feng started to frown.

Old Freak Tang was suffering from an incurable disease. Furthermore, he had reached the terminal stage.

Frankly, Old Freak Tang would not be able to live for much longer. Even Chu Feng’s hands were tied.

He could only alleviate his suffering, and was incapable of saving his life.

Chapter 3777 - Cursed

“Mi... Milord, thank you.”

“Truly, thank you.”

Old Freak Tang was able to tell that Chu Feng was treating his illness. Thus, he immediately started thanking him.

“Senior, please don’t mention it. This is what this junior should do.”

“After all, you’re Grandmaster Liangqiu’s friend.”

“Besides, this junior came here because I had something that I need senior’s help with,” said Chu Feng.

“Milord, this lowly one truly does not know any Grandmaster Liangqiu. You truly must’ve mistaken me for someone else.” Old Freak Tang was still trying to conceal the matter.

“Senior, you don’t have to try concealing this matter from junior anymore. I already know that you’re the person I’m searching for.”

“Although I do not know why senior is hiding his identity, this junior truly has no choice but to trouble senior.”

“This junior has a friend who is currently cursed, and might be in fatal danger.”

“This junior has heard from Grandmaster Liangqiu that senior is proficient in curses, and the ability to remove them. That is why this junior came to seek senior’s guidance,” said Chu Feng.

“You’ve truly mistaken me for someone else,” said Old Freak Tang.

“Senior, this junior knows that this will be very difficult for you. However, this matter concerns a life. This junior does not wish to offend senior; as long as senior is willing to help me, I am willing to accept any condition,” said Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Old Freak Tang shouted, “Leave!”

At that moment, Chu Feng grew tense.

The reason for that was because Old Freak Tang was no longer speaking with a lowly and terrified tone. Instead, he spoke with great impatience. Most importantly, he had released his oppressive might.

Rank one Utmost Exalted. Sure enough, it was as Chu Feng had expected, he was a rank one Utmost Exalted.

After Old Freak Tang unleashed his oppressive might, Chu Feng realized that he was truly angered. If Chu Feng continued to nag him, he might not simply shout at him again.

“Leave immediately. Do not appear before me again,” said Old Freak Tang. He took a glance at Chu Feng as he said those words. In that glance, his eyes were brimming with threat.

Old Freak Tang knew that he could not hide from Chu Feng anymore, so decided to threaten him.

Chu Feng felt that Old Freak Tang was not simply trying to scare him. Instead, if he were to continue to tangle with Old Freak Tang, he would really end up attacking him.

Thus, Chu Feng could only leave for the time being.

“Please excuse my disturbance.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he left the smithy and Autumnfall Village.

However, he stopped upon leaving Autumnfall Village. Chu Feng still wouldn't give up.

As that moment, Chu Feng changed his appearance back that of Asura and sat on the branch of a giant tree. He looked to the flowing river below and started to ponder.

“It would appear that I can only find a way through this situation through his daughter.”

Chu Feng felt that Old Freak Tang and Song Ge's mother would both die soon.

Thus, their only worry would be Song Ge.

As such, Song Ge would be the way for Chu Feng to breach the impasse.

“Wuu~~~”

Suddenly, a stinging pain came from Chu Feng's chest.

Chu Feng lowered his head, and discovered that a cobweb-like black scar had appeared on his chest.

That stinging pain came from the black scar.

“This is... a curse?”

Chu Feng narrowed his brows. He was able to tell that the black scar on his chest was not a simple poison. The aura it emitted was similar to Bai Liluo’s aura when her curse had flared up.

Although the aura emitted by the scar was much weaker compared to Bai Liluo’s curse, Chu Feng still determined that it was very likely a curse.

“When was I cursed? Earlier?”

It shouldn’t be possible for Chu Feng to be cursed without any cause. He felt that it must have been done by that Old Freak Tang.

Thinking back on it, when Chu Feng was treating Old Freak Tang’s injury, his hand had indeed touched his chest.

At that time, Chu Feng did not pay much attention to it, and also did not notice anything strange. Never would he have suspected that he’d actually been cursed by Old Freak Tang at that time.

“Why did he curse me? Is it to serve as a warning?”

As Chu Feng pondered, the curse began to spread throughout his body. Even though he was trying his hardest to resist the spreading of the curse with his world spirit techniques, he was unable to stop it at all.

This sort of stinging pain was completely tolerable for Chu Feng.

What worried him was that whilst the stinging pain was tolerable, his consciousness was starting to become fuzzy. Even his body was becoming numb. In a daze, Chu Feng felt his body fall from the tree and into the river below, and he began to drift with the flow of the river.

At the same time, Chu Feng felt that someone was speaking nonstop by his ears. Chu Feng was clearly unable to tell what that person was saying, but his mouth started to uncontrollable converse with that person.

Strangest of all, Chu Feng was unable to hear and unable to tell what he was saying.

Everything appeared so very strange.

This continued for a long time before the voice finally dissipated. However, Chu Feng was still unconscious.

Later on, Chu Feng felt that someone had dragged him out from the river.

After many hours had passed, Chu Feng finally regained consciousness.

After he regained consciousness, Chu Feng discovered that he was lying in a bed.

The room he was in was very gorgeous and spacious. He felt that he must be inside a palace.

Chu Feng knew that this should be the residence of the person who had fished him out of the river.

At that moment, Chu Feng looked at his chest, and discovered that the scar had disappeared.

No matter how he examined his chest, he was unable to find any trace of it.

“Did that curse disappear or... is Old Freak Tang’s ability truly so powerful that I am unable to detect it unless it flares up?”

“I should go and apologize to him. No, forget it, I should go find his daughter first.”

Chu Feng felt that the curse was not too much of a hindrance to him. He felt that Old Freak Tang was most likely giving him a warning. Thus, he felt that it would be better for him to not seek him out.

After all, he had said everything he needed to say. Even if he sought out Old Freak Tang again, he would not be able to persuade him. Instead, he might end up angering him. Thus, Chu Feng felt that it would be better to seek out his daughter first.

After making his decision, Chu Feng got up and began walking towards the exit.

After walking out of the palace, Chu Feng discovered that he was in a village.

Although the buildings in the village were not straw huts, they were still very simple and plain.

Because of that, the sumptuous palace he had just walked out of appeared rather incompatible with the village.

Although the martial cultivators and world spiritists in the village appeared extremely weak by an Upper Realm's standards, they would all be considered to be top experts in the Lower Realms.

With their strength, they were all capable of constructing luxurious palaces.

Yet, they had not done so. There was naturally a reason why they didn't.

The reason was that they were not allowed to.

Martial cultivators were separated into different tiers. The different tiers of martial cultivators all lived different sorts of lives.

Villagers like them, based on their cultivation, would be the weakest existence in that Upper Realm.

Because of that, they; based on the secular way of looking at things, felt that they should live plainly, and even be impoverished.

If they insisted on living a life that surpassed their means, they would not only court displeasure from others, but they might even be erased by those more powerful than them.

It could be said that the people of the martial cultivation world were forcibly separated into different tiers.

Even if they possessed the ability to live better lives, they were not permitted to do so in the world that they lived in. That just so happened to be the truth that those villagers had silently accepted.

Thinking about it, it was lamentable.

In the past, he had even wondered if those people would still be willing to stay in the Upper Realms if they had known that they would be considered to be very powerful and could live a cut above others in the Lower Realms.

However, in the end, the conclusion Chu Feng came to was that whilst a small portion of them might be willing to leave for the Lower Realms, the great majority would still choose to stay in the Upper Realms.

The reason for that was all because they belonged to an Upper Realm. Being in an Upper Realm was in itself a different status.

Martial cultivators cared greatly about this sort of thing.

Thus, to them, not to mention the Lower Realms, they would not even be willing to leave for Ordinary Realms.

In their eyes, Lower Realms and Ordinary Realms were simply not places for martial cultivators to live. They were places where trash resided.

Even though they lived the most inferior lives in the Upper Realms and received supercilious looks from countless others, they still felt superior when they encountered people from an Ordinary Realm or Lower Realm.

Perhaps this was human nature -- the vanity of the heart.

Chapter 3778 - A Sheep's Threat

It was precisely because of that unwritten rule that Chu Feng came to the conclusion that the person who had saved him was most likely not an ordinary villager.

Instead, that person must be a villager with a certain amount of strength. Otherwise, that person couldn't possibly construct such a sumptuous palace in such a plain and simple village without any opposition.

"Young man, you've awakened?"

As Chu Feng was lost in thought, an extremely kind-sounding voice sounded from behind him.

Turning around, Chu Feng discovered that a middle-aged lady was looking at him. That middle-aged lady was about the same age as Song Ge's mother, only over a thousand years old.

However, that middle-aged lady appeared much younger than Song Ge's mother. She had a rosy complexion, and there were very few wrinkles on her face.

It could be seen that the middle-aged lady not only enjoyed a decent life, but her body was also in very good health.

"Senior, were you the one who saved me?" asked Chu Feng.

"What's with the senior? I couldn't possibly assume such an honor. You can address me as Auntie Liu, that's what all the villagers here call me," Auntie Liu said with a beaming smile.

"Thank you for saving me, Auntie Liu." Chu Feng clasped his fist respectfully as a sign of gratitude.

Although he knew that he would have been fine even if Auntie Liu hadn't saved him, not everyone would be willing to save a stranger.

The fact that Auntie Liu was willing to save him served to show that she was a very kind-hearted person.

"Are you leaving already? How about staying for a meal before leaving?" suggested Auntie Liu.

"Auntie Liu, there's no need for that. I still have something that I need to do," said Chu Feng.

"If what you're planning to do is not urgent, stay for the meal. I've prepared the meal especially for you," Auntie Liu spoke with great enthusiasm.

Hearing the word 'especially,' Chu Feng felt emotionally moved.

Thus, he agreed to stay.

Shortly after entering the palace again, Chu Feng could smell a fragrant aroma.

It was an aroma that he had not felt in a very long time.

After reaching Chu Feng's cultivation, eating, drinking and sleeping were all no longer important.

Unless it was due to some special circumstances, they would not feel hungry, thirsty or sleepy.

Eating was no longer essential for cultivators like Chu Feng. Even if they decided to eat, it would only be because they felt like sampling the food. They would only take several bites, and not fill their stomachs.

At that moment, Chu Feng actually felt a craving for the food.

The reason for that was because the aroma of Aunty Liu's food was very distinctive.

It was the aroma of home. It was a smell that Chu Feng was only able to smell back in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm's Nine Provinces Continent's Chu Family.

After being seated, Chu Feng discovered that Aunty Liu had truly exerted a great amount of effort.

She had actually made eight different dishes. There was chicken, duck, fish and beef.

This touched Chu Feng even more. They were merely strangers who had come across one another by chance. Yet, Aunty Liu was willing to treat him so well. This was truly a rare occurrence.

Whilst eating, Chu Feng began to chat with Aunty Liu.

Chu Feng learned from her that even though she was an ordinary villager, her daughter was not.

Her daughter was named Wang Lian.

Not long after Wang Lian was born, her father died after being implicated by the energy ripples of a battle between martial cultivators that he was observing.

Thus, Wang Lian was raised by Aunty Liu alone.

Fortunately, Wang Lian did not fail to live up to Aunty Liu's expectations. She had an outstanding talent for martial cultivation, and was already a peak True Immortal-level expert at the young age of three hundred and thirteen. Furthermore, she was now an elder of the Void Cleanse Monastery.

Although her achievements were nothing to be proud of for someone like Chu Feng, Wang Lian was a top genius in the eyes of the villagers, and even the Void Cleanse Monastery.

In fact, if Wang Lian were placed in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, she would still be deemed as a genius with her cultivation at her age.

Unfortunately, this place was the Reincarnation Upper Realm...

Out of filial piety, Wang Lian had wanted to bring Aunt Li over to where she lived.

However, Aunt Li insisted on staying in the village, and told Wang Lian that she was already used to staying there.

Because of that, Wang Lian decided to construct a palace for Aunt Li to live in.

Originally, Aunt Li was against it. However, after Wang Lian insisted, Aunt Li decided to agree to it.

Aunt Li did not wish to show off because she was afraid that the other villagers would hold grudges against her. However, to her surprise, not a single villager dared to voice any complaint.

As Aunt Li told Chu Feng these things, she revealed a bitter smile.

Seeing that bitter smile, Chu Feng knew that the villagers were definitely not good people that felt happy for her.

In the past, they must've definitely bullied her.

Why would no one dare to say anything about Aunt Li after such an extravagant palace was constructed for her in the village?

Naturally, it would be because Aunt Li's daughter Wang Lian was an elder of the Void Cleanse Monastery. They were afraid of Wang Lian, and thus did not dare to anger Aunt Li.

"Mother, I've returned."

As Chu Feng and Aunt Li chatted, a voice sounded from outside the palace.

Chu Feng turned toward the voice and saw that several people were walking in.

Those people were all from the Void Cleanse Monastery.

The person leading them was a young woman. Although her looks were rather ordinary, she had a slightly extraordinary air, and the cultivation of a peak True Immortal.

She was most definitely Auntie Liu's daughter, Wang Lian.

As for the others, they all wore the same outfit. They were all disciples of the Void Cleanse Monastery.

They were currently carrying several large chests. Chu Feng was able to tell that the chests were filled with medicinal pellets and herbs that assisted with one's cultivation.

Although they were not precious, they were definitely effective for someone of Auntie Liu's level of cultivation.

They were likely resources Wang Lian wanted to give to Auntie Liu.

"Who is this?"

Wang Lian had arrived at the dinner table. Upon seeing Chu Feng, she immediately displayed a look of displeasure.

"I am Asura, it is my pleasure to meet you."

Chu Feng immediately got up and bowed respectfully towards Wang Lian.

However, Wang Lian did not even bother to pay attention to Chu Feng. With slight complaint, she looked to Auntie Liu.

"Mother, how many times do I have to tell you? Don't just bring any random person home."

"Our Void Cleanse Monastery has very strict rules. I definitely will not break the rules and bring those trash into our monastery. When even the villagers here are a no-go, it's definitely impossible for outsiders," said Wang Lian.

“Lian’er, don’t speak nonsense. This young man here did not come here seeking your help.”

Aunty Liu explained how she had encountered Chu Feng to Wang Lian.

“Humph, are people all this despicable nowadays? You actually deliberately made yourself appear like you were injured so that you could ‘accidentally’ encounter my mother and approach her.” Wang Lian looked to Chu Feng with contempt.

She actually thought Chu Feng to be a despicable person, and felt that he had deliberately approached her mother with the intention of seeking her help.

Chu Feng truly did not know whether to laugh or cry at Wang Lian’s train of thought.

“Miss Wang, you’ve truly mistaken me,” he said with a smile.

However, Chu Feng’s courtesy was actually met with Wang Lian’s angry roar, “A despicable vile man like yourself is unqualified to speak with this young lady!”

“Scram immediately! Otherwise, don’t blame me for being impolite!”

Had it been before, Chu Feng would definitely teach such an arrogant woman a slight lesson.

However, Aunty Liu was simply too kind-hearted of a person. Taking her into consideration, Chu Feng did not get angry.

“Aunty Liu, in that case, I will take my leave,” Chu Feng bid his farewell to Aunty Liu. Then, he left the palace.

“Do not let me see you again! If I see you again, I’ll cut off your legs!”

Right after Chu Feng left the palace, Wang Lian’s threatening voice sounded from inside.

Chu Feng smiled and shook his head.

How could a lion possibly take the threat of a sheep to heart?

Chapter 3779 - Could He Save Me?

Chu Feng arrived at the Void Cleanse Monastery, and discovered that Old Freak Tang's daughter Song Ge was not in the monastery.

It turned out that the people from the Void Cleanse Monastery had left for an Ancient Era's remnant.

That remnant was not far from the monastery.

Thus, Chu Feng decided to proceed there.

Sure enough, Chu Feng not only found the people from the Void Cleanse Monastery, but he also found Song Ge.

The Ancient Era's remnant was located deep underground. It was very complicated, like a maze. Furthermore, it posed a certain amount of danger.

The people from the Void Cleanse Monastery had decided to split off to examine the monastery. Because of that, Song Ge ended up entering a hidden tunnel by herself.

Seeing that, Chu Feng decided to secretly follow her. He did not reveal himself to directly converse with her.

The reason for that was because a thought had come to Chu Feng's mind.

He felt that it was very possible that Song Ge would encounter danger. If he were to save her when she encountered danger, she would definitely feel grateful toward him.

With that, Song Ge would lower her guard against him. In turn, which would make it easier to communicate with her.

It would not be too late for him to think of a way to bring up the matter regarding Old Freak Tang after growing familiar with Song Ge.

Although Chu Feng's scheme might be a bit despicable, he had no other alternative. After all, Old Freak Tang's curse techniques were simply too important for him.

Besides, Old Freak Tang would not be able to live for much longer.

If Chu Feng ended up missing this opportunity, he might never be able to learn the way to remove curses.

However, Chu Feng had underestimated Song Ge. While it was true that she encountered many hurdles on her way, she managed to breach all of them without needing his assistance.

After surmounting all the difficulties in her path, she finally arrived before a palace hall.

After entering the palace hall, one would notice that there were many entrances to the palace hall.

The path Song Ge took was merely one of the many entrances. However... that was not what was important.

“There’s something inside the palace hall.”

Chu Feng was able to determine with a single glance that there was something inside the palace hall. He was also able to tell what that something was.

It was a secret skill, a conscious and masterless secret skill.

Although the secret skill was not a high-level one, it would still be rather difficult to handle for Song Ge.

“Roar~~~”

Sure enough, a roar sounded in the palace hall not long after Song Ge entered it.

Then, the palace hall started to tremble violently. Jade-green gaseous flames began to flow out from all around the palace hall. In the end, they gathered together and formed a giant beast over three hundred meters tall.

The giant beast floated in midair, and appeared very majestic. It seemed like a ruler overlooking mortals.

Seeing that giant beast, Song Ge stepped back repeatedly in fear.

“This Exalted One is the secret skill, Jade Heavenly Beast.”

“I am here awaiting a fated individual.”

“However, if you wish to obtain this Exalted One’s power, you will first have to prove yourself,” the secret skill said to Song Ge.

“Senior, what must this junior do in order to obtain your power?” Song Ge asked very courteously.

“Another one came?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s expression changed. He discovered... another aura emerging from another entrance. Furthermore, that person was rapidly approaching.

“Never would I have expected that someone actually arrived sooner than me.”

Sure enough, a man soon entered from another hidden path.

That man was about the same age as Song Ge. Even his cultivation was the same as hers; he was also a rank one Heavenly Immortal.

Furthermore, that man was very handsome. However, judging from his outfit, he was not someone from the Void Cleanse Monastery.

“Who are you?”

Song Ge did not know who that man was and she immediately raised her guard.

“Young lady, there’s no need to be so tense. Although I’ve also come for the secret skill, since young lady has arrived before me, the secret skill will naturally belong to you.” The man revealed a brilliant smile.

“You’re really planning to me have it?”

Evidently, Song Ge did not expect the man to be willing to yield the secret skill to her.

“Of course. I, Ma Liang, never lie.”

“Especially towards a beautiful young lady like yourself,” said that man who proclaimed himself to be Ma Liang.

Hearing those words, Song Ge’s face reddened slightly. However, she didn’t say anything in response.

“Brat, what did you take this Exalted One to be? Did you think that anyone could receive this Exalted One’s power?”

Song Ge and Ma Liang’s conversation ended up angering the secret skill.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Ma Liang waved his arm, and a body of light rushed towards the secret skill.

“Clash~~~”

“Roar~~~”

As that body of light struck the giant beast, it immediately let out a pained roar.

At the same time, the giant beast of a secret skill started to emit white steam.

That was a spirit formation, a spirit formation capable of restraining the power of the giant secret skill beast.

“Bastard! I’ll kill you!”

Struck by the spirit formation, the giant secret skill giant beast was completely enraged by Ma Liang. However, its power had been greatly weakened by the spirit formation. Even its body became very illusory.

It no longer possessed the imposing air it had emitted when it first appeared.

“Clank, clank, clank~~~”

Being prepared, Ma Liang took out his weapon and rushed towards the secret skill, colliding with it.

Already furious, the secret skill would naturally not hold back against him.

However, Ma Liang was not one to be reckoned with either. He possessed some ability as well.

As the two of them fought, they actually ended up in a stalemate.

“Young lady, please assist me. After subduing this secret skill, it shall be yours.”

Seeing that he was unable to defeat the secret skill on his own, Ma Liang turned to ask for Song Ge’s assistance.

Hearing Ma Liang, Song Ge immediately took out her weapon and rushed towards the giant secret skill beast.

With their joint efforts, the secret skill was immediately put in a disadvantaged state. Even though it was still resisting tenaciously, Chu Feng knew that the secret skill had already lost, and would sooner or later be subdued by the two of them.

Seeing that scene, Chu Feng couldn’t keep himself from remembering his time in the Nine Provinces Continent.

Chu Feng was unable to keep himself from remember that year...

That year, he was still a disciple of the Azure Dragon Sect.

Inside a remnant, he had encountered the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique and Zi Ling.

At that time, Chu Feng and Zi Ling were strangers. For the sake of obtaining the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, Chu Feng had started fighting Zi Ling.

It could be said that he had made an enemy out of Zi Ling at that time.

However, who would’ve thought that Zi Ling would end up becoming his fiancée, his lover?

Recalling his own experience and seeing Song Ge and Ma Liang, Chu Feng felt that they were a rather ideal couple.

He felt that two more people would end up together because of a secret skill.

At the very least, that Ma Liang was much more magnanimous than he was back then. After all, Ma Liang was planning to give the secret skill to Song Ge.

“Rooarr~~~”

A scream was heard. The giant beast secret skill was defeated by Ma Liang and Song Ge.

At the same time, Ma Liang used a treasure to subdue the secret skill.

“Young lady, this is yours.”

Ma Liang handed the subdued secret skill to Song Ge.

“Young master, are you really giving that to me?”

Although Song Ge wanted the secret skill a lot, she still felt very apologetic.

“First come first served. Young lady, there’s no need to be so courteous,” Ma Liang said with a smile.

“In that case, thank you young master.”

Although Song Ge felt apologetic, she truly wanted the secret skill too much. Thus, she accepted the secret skill.

“Bang~~~”

However, to her surprise, Ma Liang suddenly attacked her with a palm strike to her dantian the instant she accepted the secret skill from him.

Caught completely off-guard, Song Ge was struck wholly by the palm strike.

She was sent flying several meters before smashing ruthlessly into a wall.

When she fell, blood was flowing from the corners of her mouth, and her aura had become extremely weak. She had practically lost the ability to continue fighting.

That said, compared to her pained expression, Song Ge’s eyes were filled with innocence.

“Young master, why did you do that?” Song Ge asked in confusion.

“Hahaha. Young lady, are you really unable to tell?”

“From the very start, I never planned to give this to you.”

As Ma Liang spoke, he picked up the secret skill and directly assimilated it with himself.

“You... you’re shameless and despicable!”

Song Ge’s face turned deathly pale with anger. In too much rage, her mouth opened, and she ended up spraying out a mouthful of blood. At that moment, Song Ge became even weaker.

“Void Cleanse Monastery. I never would’ve imagined the Void Cleanse Monastery would possess such a beauty like yourself.”

Ma Liang looked to the weak Song Ge. A cold smile appeared on his face.

As he spoke, he actually began to take off his clothes.

“You... what are you planning to do?!”

Seeing Ma Liang taking off his clothes and walking towards her, the anger on Song Ge’s face was immediately replaced by endless fear.

“Didn’t you call me despicable and shameless? Naturally, I’ll have to act despicable and shameless.”

“Since you will definitely die here today, why don’t you let your daddy I enjoy himself before your death? Your daddy will also allow you to have a taste of what a man is.”

“Speaking of it, your daddy has yet to toy with a female elder of the Void Cleanse Monastery.”

Ma Liang acted extremely wickedly.

“You...”

Song Ge was completely stunned after hearing those words.

Soon, a look of determination appeared in her eyes.

Song Ge raised her hand and gathered all of her martial power into her hand.

However, the palm strike that she gathered all of her power for was not aimed at Ma Liang.

She knew that she would not be able to fight Ma Liang, being seriously injured.

Thus, her palm was meant for herself.

She was planning to commit suicide!!!

Even if it meant death, she was unwilling to allow herself to be stained by Ma Liang.

“Paa~~~”

To Song Ge’s surprise, right after she raised her hand, before she could attack herself, a powerful hand grabbed her wrist.

Not only that, but all of her gathered martial power instantly dispersed. n-(o)-
V-(e/-L//b-.l))n

This situation caused Song Ge to nearly collapse with despair.

She was unable to escape and unable to kill herself. What could she possibly do in such a situation?

Must she resign herself to fate and allow herself to be tarnished by Ma Liang before death?

“Who are you?!”

Suddenly, an embarrassed yet angry shout was heard.

That shout jolted Song Ge awake. She discovered that the shameless and despicable Ma Liang still hadn’t reached her yet.

It turned out that it was another person that had grabbed her wrist.

That person looked very ordinary. His looks were nowhere near comparable to the handsome Ma Liang.

However, the appearance of that ordinary-looking individual gave Song Ge a ray of hope.

At the very least, that person did not appear to be Ma Liang’s accomplice.

Perhaps that person would save her.

That said, at the same time as this thought came to Song Ge's mind, another thought also came into her mind.

She wondered... 'Will this person really be able to save me?'

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3780 - The Frightened Song Ge - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3780 - The Frightened Song Ge

Chapter 3780 - The Frightened Song Ge

"I had originally thought this to be a fated encounter between lovers. Never would I have imagined that you'd be such scum. You've truly disappointed me," Chu Feng said to Ma Liang.

"Motherfucker! Who did you think you are? You dare spoil the fun of your daddy Ma Liang?! You're truly courting death!"

Without even putting on his clothes, Ma Liang rushed towards Chu Feng.

His speed was very fast. He arrived before Chu Feng in the blink of an eye.

He raised his hand and shot a punch towards Chu Feng's dantian.

He was trying to cripple Chu Feng's cultivation.

However, Chu Feng did not even attempt to avoid Ma Liang's attack. Just like that, he allowed Ma Liang's attack to reach him.

Seeing that, the hopeful Song Ge was immediately discouraged.

Although her battle power was greatly affected by her injury, she still had her perceptive ability.

Thus, she was able to clearly witness the scene of Ma Liang rushing towards Chu Feng. Yet, to her surprise, Chu Feng did not react to it in the slightest.

She felt that Chu Feng was simply too weak, and unable to defeat Ma Liang. With that, how could he possibly save her?

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, a muffled echo was heard. Ma Liang’s fist landed. However, Chu Feng was completely unharmed. It was instead Ma Liang’s fist that ended up being injured. He took several steps back, grimaced, and started screaming in pain.

Song Ge was originally confused as to why Ma Liang suddenly reacted like that.

It was only when she looked closely that she noticed that Ma Liang’s fist was completely drenched with blood and was completely mutilated.

She then looked to Chu Feng, and discovered that he was completely uninjured.

“This...”

At that moment, Song Ge began to carefully size up the mediocre-looking man standing beside her. Upon doing so, extreme shock appeared in her eyes.

Even though she had thought that the man standing beside her might be able to save her, she actually didn’t place too much hope in being saved.

This was especially true earlier as she gave up on the small hope she’d had.

It was precisely because she didn’t put much hope in the man beside her being able to save her that she was especially stunned by the situation before her.

“You... who are you?”

Ma Liang had managed to calm down. With a serious look on his face, he stared at Chu Feng.

Chu Feng’s body shifted and appeared before Ma Liang. He grabbed his head and forced him onto his knees.

Chu Feng did not answer Ma Liang’s question. Instead, with a cold voice, he said, “Do you know what forcibly depriving someone of a secret skill will do?”

“Milord, I was wrong. I was wrong.”

“Milord, please give me another chance. I am a disciple of Cloud Paradise. My master is Cloud Paradise’s Supreme Elder, Zhang Tao.”

“As long as you spare my life, my master will be willing to give you anything. My master has many secret skills.”

Ma Liang was completely terrified. He knew that if the secret skill was forcibly stripped from him, he would end up being killed in the process.

“Humph.”

Chu Feng let out a cold snort at Ma Liang’s proposal.

Then, power appeared in Chu Feng’s palm. With that, Ma Liang began to shake uncontrollably.

Ma Liang had a sinister look on his face. One could see that he was in extreme pain. However, he was unable to utter a single word, unable to even scream.

Such a situation lasted but a split second before Ma Liang fell to the ground with a ‘putt.’

Ma Liang had turned into a corpse. He had died.

Looking over to Chu Feng, one could see that there was a body of light in his hand. That was the secret skill from earlier.

Song Ge stood there completely dumbfounded and terrified.

She never imagined that Chu Feng would kill Ma Liang just like that.

He was simply too decisive with his actions.

“Young lady, don’t be afraid. This man needed to be killed.”

“If he was allowed to live, who knows how many more people he would end up harming.”

Seeing that Song Ge looked slightly frightened, Chu Feng immediately started comforting her.

“Thank you for saving me, senior.”

Slowly, Song Ge managed to calm herself. She immediately kneeled before Chu Feng and bowed respectfully to him.

Even though she didn't understand him and didn't know who he was, she guessed from his words that it was possible that he had killed Ma Liang to save her. Because of this, she felt particularly grateful toward him.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng flicked his finger, and the secret skill he was holding earlier was sent into Song Ge's body.

Song Ge's body grew stiff. She knew that the secret skill had assimilated with her, and that she had gained its power.

“Senior, why did you...”

Song Ge was confused. Chu Feng had already saved her and showed her enormous grace.

Yet, he actually ended up giving the secret skill to her too? Whilst she felt extremely grateful towards him for doing that, she was also completely confused by it.

She was unable to understand why Chu Feng would possibly give a secret skill to her, a stranger.

“That secret skill is useless to me. However, it's useful to you. It's better than being wasted,” Chu Feng said to Song Ge.

This simple sentence from Chu Feng erased the confusion in Song Ge's heart.

Indeed. Whilst that secret skill might be of considerable value for someone like Song Ge, it would be completely worthless to true experts.

She was the one lacking in experience.

“Song Ge will forever remember senior's grace and kindness.”

Song Ge kneeled to Chu Feng again.

However, this time around, Chu Feng grabbed her arm before she could kneel and pulled her back up.

“You’re injured. Take this medicine.” Chu Feng handed Song Ge a medicinal pellet.

Song Ge looked at the medicinal pellet. Then, without hesitation, she swallowed it.

It wasn’t that she wasn’t wary of Chu Feng. After experiencing what had happened with Ma Liang, she was afraid that Chu Feng’s medicinal pellet might have some sort of issue.

However, upon thinking about what Chu Feng had done earlier and how powerful he was, she decided to believe him.

After swallowing the medicinal pellet, the many injuries that covered Song Ge began to rapidly improve.

As a martial cultivator, it was normal for Song Ge to be injured. For the level of injury she had sustained earlier, it would generally require medicinal pellets combined with healing formations to cure. Furthermore, it would be impossible to cure that level of injury in a short period of time.

However, now, she was actually completely cured by a single medicinal pellet. With this, Song Ge had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng.

“Senior, that medicinal pellet of yours is simply too powerful. It is simply the work of gods,” Song Ge praised.

“Don’t address me as senior. I’m actually younger than you,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Senior, you’re younger than me?”

“But you...”

Song Ge felt completely surprised.

She was considered to be a genius in the Void Cleanse Monastery.

She could be said to be showered with praises the entire time, from being a disciple all the way to becoming an elder.

Thus, when she encountered someone as powerful as Chu Feng, the very first thought that came to her mind was that Chu Feng was a senior expert who must be much older than her.

Yet, he actually told her that he was younger than her. Naturally, Song Ge felt very surprised by that.

After all, if that was indeed the case, it would mean that Song Ge had encountered a genius even more powerful than her.

Furthermore, Chu Feng seemed to be much more powerful than her.

Would this mean that the person standing before her was an exceptional genius?

Chapter 3781 - Meeting Old Freak Tang Again

“Senior, how should I address you?” asked Song Ge.

“Don’t address me as senior. You can call me Asura,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Asura?” Song Ge was startled upon hearing that name. She then said, “That name is truly distinctive.”

“Do you also want to say that I should add the words ‘World Spiritist’ behind my name?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“Someone said that?” asked Song Ge.

“Of course,” said Chu Feng.

“Senior, please don’t take offense. I had no intention of mocking senior’s name. Merely, the name Asura will inevitably make one think about Asura World Spiritists,” said Song Ge.

“That’s fine. However... can you stop addressing me as senior? I’ve already told you... I’m younger than you,” said Chu Feng.

“My apologies senior. I was... no, no, I mean Asura.” Song Ge started to panic.

Seeing the difficult appearance that Song Ge had, Chu Feng smiled and waved his hand, "Do as you wish. You can address me however you prefer."

"In that case, it'll be Senior Asura."

"Although Senior Asura is younger than me, you are the person who saved my life. If I am to address Senior Asura by name just because you're younger than me, I feel that would be very disrespectful."

"That said, Senior Asura, that Ma Liang had a remarkable identity. That Cloud Paradise is the strongest sect in our region. The headmaster of Cloud Paradise has even reached a cultivation of rank four Exalted."

"Furthermore, Cloud Paradise has always ruled by tyranny. Even Watermirror Paradise does not dare to provoke them."

"If the matter of you killing Ma Liang is known to others, it will definitely cause trouble for you," said Song Ge.

"It's nothing. After all, I don't fear them in the slightest," Chu Feng said with a look of indifference.

Hearing that, Song Ge's expression changed. From Chu Feng's one sentence, she realized that he seemed to be even more powerful than she had imagined him to be.

After all, Cloud Paradise was a colossal power that could not be provoked in Song Ge's eyes.

"Senior Asura seems to be unconcerned about Cloud Paradise. But, I still think that it is better that Senior Asura not be bothered by needless trouble. Thus, it is better that we get rid of this corpse. Senior, what do you think about that?" said Song Ge.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized that even though Song Ge appeared to be a very sweet lady, she was actually a ruthless person too.

"I actually had that thought before too. However, seeing how terrified you were earlier, I decided not to proceed further. Seeing that you're also in favor of getting rid of the body, let's do that."

As Chu Feng spoke, he waved his sleeve and dust immediately rose into the air.

Song Ge immediately revealed a look of fear.

She discovered that the flying dust was no ordinary dust. Instead, the dust was what Ma Liang's body had turned into.

With merely a wave of his hand, Chu Feng had managed to destroy Ma Liang's body completely.

Song Ge was not terrified because of how powerful Chu Feng was. Instead, she was terrified by how his expression remained completely unchanged. She realized that Chu Feng was someone who had experienced a lot of things, and was very decisive in killing others.

Afterwards, Chu Feng and Song Ge chatted for a long time.

With Chu Feng leading the conversation, Song Ge was no longer as restrained as before.

She no longer addressed Chu Feng as senior this senior that with a look of reverence all over her face.

She began to converse with Chu Feng like a friend of similar age.

She also began to address him by his name, Asura.

Chu Feng only revealed to Song Ge that he was not someone from the All-heaven Starfield, and was only there because of some matters.

Chu Feng knew that Song Ge had been raised by her mother, and didn't know who her father was.

Song Ge revealed that she deeply hoped to be able to meet her father one day.

She did not have any hatred for her father for abandoning her and her mother.

In fact, Song Ge even said that she had some weird feelings lately, and kept feeling that someone was watching her.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled and said, "Perhaps that isn't a misperception of yours. Instead, your father is secretly watching over you."

"My father? How could that be possible? If my father is truly still alive and willing to recognize me as his daughter, why is he unwilling to meet me?" Song Ge revealed a wry smile and shook her head.

She felt that her feeling was nothing more than a misperception, that it was impossible for her father to be watching over her.

"Perhaps your father has his own hidden difficulties?" Chu Feng proposed.

"If I am truly being watched by my father, it would truly be great," said Song Ge.

"Song Ge, if your father is willing to meet you, will you blame him?" asked Chu Feng.

"Of course not. I was birthed by my parents. They are the ones who brought me into this world. What they've shown me is the greatest grace ever. How could I blame my father? Could it be that I need to blame him for not accompanying me; not bringing me up?" said Song Ge.

"It would truly be great if everyone thought that way. Song Ge, have you said those words to your mother before?" asked Chu Feng.

"I haven't. My mother is unwilling to mention my father."

"My mother deeply detests my father. Thus..."

"...I've never mentioned my father to her. I also wouldn't dare tell her that I really want to meet my father," said Song Ge.

"So that's the case." Hearing those words, Chu Feng came to an understanding of the situation.

Chu Feng felt that there must be some sort of hidden difficulty as to why Old Freak Tang had abandoned Song Ge.

However, Old Freak Tang must deeply want to recognize her as his daughter. Merely, he was afraid that Song Ge wouldn't accept him, afraid that she would blame him.

However, since Song Ge had revealed that she would not blame Old Freak Tang, it meant that Old Freak Tang could appear before her and reveal his identity to her.

Of course, this was merely Chu Feng's personal guess. It could be possible that Old Freak Tang had some other sort of hidden difficulty that made him unable to recognize her as his daughter.

That said, Chu Feng felt that there was a need for him to reveal those matters to Old Freak Tang. At the very least, he should let her know that his daughter was waiting for his appearance.

After all, Old Freak Tang would not be able to live for much longer. If he still didn't meet his daughter, he might never again have the opportunity to do so.

As for whether Old Freak Tang was willing to recognize Song Ge as his daughter, it would all depend on him.

Chu Feng and Song Ge chatted a bit more. Then, he brought her back to a safe location and left.

Before leaving, Chu Feng told Song Ge to not mention to anyone that she had met him.

Song Ge naturally agreed to it.

After departing from Song Ge, Chu Feng went to seek out Old Freak Tang.

Chu Feng felt that this would be a good thing to reveal to him. He felt that Old Freak Tang would likely not make things difficult for him again.

"Come on in."

Right after Chu Feng arrived before the entrance of Old Freak Tang's smithy, before he could even say anything, Old Freak Tang's voice was heard from within the smithy.

This surprised Chu Feng.

With Old Freak Tang's cultivation, it was normal for him to know that Chu Feng had arrived.

However, his tone had changed enormously.

Not only was his tone not furious, but it was also extremely gentle. It seemed like he had been waiting for him.

After Chu Feng stepped into the smithy, he was met with even more surprises.

He discovered that Old Freak Tang had prepared a table of food and wine. He had also prepared two bowls and two pairs of chopsticks. The two bowls were full to the brim with wine.

“Sit down and drink.” Old Freak Tang gestured at Chu Feng with his hand.

Chu Feng sat down in response.

As matters stood, Chu Feng was certain that Old Freak Tang had been waiting for him.

Although he didn't know why Old Freak Tang had changed like that all of a sudden, he knew that he must want to mention something to him.

Chapter 3782 - The Past

“Senior, allow this junior to down this cup of wine as a show of respect.” Chu Feng raised his cup of wine and drained it in one gulp.

“Are you not afraid that I might place another curse on you?” Old Freak Tang asked with a strange smile.

“If senior wished to kill me, this junior would not be able to live.” said Chu Feng.

“What do you think of my daughter?” asked Old Freak Tang.

“Ah?” Chu Feng was startled to hear those words.

Then, he asked, “Senior, you know what I've done?”

“Mn, I saw everything that happened inside the remnant.” Old Freak Tang said with a smile..

Hearing those words, Chu Feng came to the realization that Old Freak Tang was actually secretly tailing him whilst he was secretly tailing Song Ge.

Chu Feng laughed in embarrassment. He had not managed to detect Old Freak Tang secretly following him at all.

That said, it was understandable too. If someone of Old Freak Tang's cultivation wanted to tail Chu Feng, even if Chu Feng were a Saint-cloak World Spiritist, he would still not be able to detect him. After all, Old Freak Tang was an Utmost Exalted.

The reason why Chu Feng was able to successfully tail Old Freak Tang the first time around was because he had been careless.

As matters stood, Chu Feng already knew why Old Freak Tang would prepare a meal for him.

He had already guessed that he would seek him out.

"Since senior already knows, this junior will not beat around the bush."

"Senior, your daughter misses you greatly. She wants to see you. Why are you unwilling to meet her?" asked Chu Feng.

"It's not that I don't want to meet her. It's simply that I am too ashamed to meet her."

Old Freak Tang drank his cup of wine and revealed an ashamed look.

Then, he began to tell Chu Feng what had happened in the past.

Back then, Old Freak Tang was an all-powerful individual in the All-heaven Starfield. Later on, he became disgusted with the mutual deception martial cultivators lived in, and decided to live as a commoner.

He decided to return to his hometown, Autumnfall Village.

Although he had decided to return to his hometown to live as a commoner, Old Freak Tang was accustomed to living alone after being in the martial cultivation world for many years. Because of that, he was very wary against others.

Because of that, even though he had returned to Autumnfall Village for many years, he was not familiar with the villagers. Furthermore, as he had a strange temperament, no one was willing to befriend him either.

Getting together with Song Ge's mother was purely an accident.

Old Freak Tang actually did not like Song Ge's mother. He had merely lost control of himself back then.

After Old Freak Tang learned that Song Ge's mother was pregnant with a child, he had originally wanted to snatch the child away.

Old Freak Tang did not wish to have any burdens. He did not want a wife, much less children. He only wanted to be alone. He did not seek comfort and ease, but to be unrestrained.

However, Song Ge's mother threatened Old Freak Tang with her life. She declared that she would kill herself should he take away the child.

Originally, Old Freak Tang did not care about the life and death of Song Ge's mother. However, for some unknown reason, he was very worried about her mother killing herself at that time.

Feeling helpless, Old Freak Tang reached terms with Song Ge's mother, and allowed her to give birth to the child.

However, he told her that she was not allowed to tell anyone that the child was his. Otherwise, he would personally kill both her and Song Ge.

Song Ge's mother really ended up not telling anyone about Old Freak Tang.

A woman who was single for over a thousand years had actually borne a child. Furthermore, no one knew who the father of the child was.

Unavoidably, countless malicious rumors began to form. The people of the village all began to roll their eyes at Song Ge's mother.

One could very well imagine how difficult things were for her back then.

Had it been someone else, they would most likely have chosen to leave and settle anew somewhere else after all the rumors and slander.

However, Song Ge's mother insisted on bearing everything to continue staying in the village.

Of course, as Song Ge grew older and her talent gradually revealed itself, no one dared to bully her and her mother anymore.

Instead, they all began trying to gain a connection with Song Ge's mother.

Moreover, Song Ge was a very filial child. Thus, Song Ge's mother's later years were rather good.

That said, Song Ge's mother had never said another word to Old Freak Tang. She hated him bitterly.

She didn't know that the heartless Old Freak Tang from back then had changed after Song Ge was born.

In the end, Song Ge was Old Freak Tang's daughter, someone who he had a blood relationship with.

Originally, Old Freak Tang thought that he would never be fond of children, including his own children.

However, as he saw Song Ge growing up day by day, his affection for her started to slowly germinate unbeknownst to him. By the time he realized his affection for his child, it was already too late for him to break free from his emotions.

Old Freak Tang began to pay close attention to Song Ge. He was afraid that she would be bullied by others. In fact, he even went as far to secretly aid and protect her.

Merely, he never revealed himself to her. He felt that he was not qualified to do so.

After all, if her mother hadn't threatened him with her life, Song Ge would've been killed by Old Freak Tang before she was even born.

Thus, even though Old Freak Tang deeply wanted to reveal to Song Ge that he was her father, he did not dare to do so.

At the same time, he felt that he was unqualified to let her know that he was her father.

"Senior, you need to know that Song Ge actually also wants to meet you."

"Are you planning to have her not know who her father is for the rest of her life?" Chu Feng asked after learning what had happened.

“Let me think about it. me” Old Freak Tang forced a smile and shook his head. His eyes were brimming with helplessness and sadness.

“Cough, cough, cough...”

Suddenly, Old Freak Tang started to cough violently. His coughing session this time around was much more intense than before. His entire body started to wobble violently.

Even though he had covered his mouth with his hand, Chu Feng was still able to see a vast amount of blood flowing out from between his fingers.

The blood was actually black.

After the black blood was coughed out, Old Freak Tang immediately aged a lot, and his health became especially weak.

He looked like someone on the verge of dying, and was unable to even sit stably.

“Senior, you...”

Seeing Old Freak Tang like that, Chu Feng started feeling slightly sad.

Chu Feng was able to tell that Old Freak Tang would not be able to live for much longer. He might die in the coming days.

“Chu Feng, in two days, bring Song Ge to the Void Cleanse Monastery’s Fate-changing Bell and wait for me.” said Old Freak Tang.

Chu Feng had wanted to alleviate Old Freak Tang’s condition. However, he was refused.

Old Freak Tang told Chu Feng to directly seek out his daughter, Song Ge.

Chu Feng suspected that Old Freak Tang was worried for her. Apart from monitoring her mother, Old Freak Tang had been monitoring and protecting her as well.

And now, his illness had grown more serious. It had made him unable to secretly protect her. Because of that, he wanted Chu Feng to protect Song Ge on his behalf.

However, Old Freak Tang was still Old Freak Tang. Although that was what was on his mind, he did not explicitly say so to Chu Feng.

Knowing what Old Freak Tang really wanted him to do, Chu Feng decided to comply with his request to seek out Song Ge.

Chapter 3783 - Coincidental Encounter?

Void Cleanse Monastery. Their exploration of the remnant was rather laid-back. Because of that, the elders were allowed to leave at will.

After Chu Feng left, Song Ge also left the Ancient Era's remnant.

That said, Song Ge could be considered to be a celebrity in the Void Cleanse Monastery.

As such, it was very easy for Chu Feng to ask where Song Ge went.

There was a city near the Seven Suns Mountain Range. Song Ge was currently inside that city.

Although the area around the Seven Suns Mountain Range was very vast, the vastness differed according to the individual. With Chu Feng's cultivation, he would be able to reach the Seven Suns Mountain Range in a very short period of time.

Thus, in merely an instant, Chu Feng had arrived at the city after leaving the remnant.

Although the city was vast, it was unable to escape Chu Feng's discerning eyes, and Chu Feng soon discovered Song Ge.

Chu Feng was able to see that she was currently with a young woman. That woman was also a female elder of the Void Cleanse Monastery. Coincidentally, Chu Feng happened to know that woman too.

She was Aunty Liu's daughter, Wang Lian.

Song Ge and Wang Lian were not the only people present. There were also other people with them.

There were of both genders. Most of them were men. Furthermore, they all wore gorgeous clothes. It seemed like they were all from wealthy families.

Those people were not from the Void Cleanse Monastery. Instead, they were from a different sect.

Those people must've encountered Song Ge accidentally. Several of the men from that group revealed extraordinarily favorable impressions towards Song Ge.

Those people were currently inviting her to enjoy some tea at a teahouse. However, Song Ge didn't want to enjoy tea with them.

Although she was uninterested, Wang Lian revealed deep interest, and was trying hard to urge Song Ge to go.

From the expression in Wang Lian's eyes, Chu Feng was able to tell that she was not at all interested in enjoying tea in the teahouse. Instead, she was interested in the men.

Although those men were completely worthless in terms of strength and status for someone like Chu Feng, they were optimal spouse candidates for someone like Wang Lian.

In fact, if Wang Lian was able to get together with any one of those men, she would be climbing the social ladder.

Although Wang Lian had acted extremely arrogant and proud when she met Chu Feng previously, she was extremely eager and attentive toward those men.

Although Song Ge was very cold towards those men, she found it difficult to refuse Wang Lian.

At that moment, Song Ge had entered a very difficult predicament.

Chu Feng knew that it was time for him to step onto the stage. ~~novel~~**(LB)**In

Thus, he walked out of the shadows and deliberately walked past Song Ge, pretending it was an accidental encounter.

"Asura?"

Sure enough, with Chu Feng's deliberation, Song Ge soon discovered him.

After all, Chu Feng was Song Ge's savior.

On top of that, he had chatted with her about many things after saving her. Thus, Song Ge, who felt extremely grateful towards Chu Feng to begin with, had a much more favorable impression of him.

After seeing Chu Feng, Song Ge was not only beaming with happiness, but she even took several rapid steps and ran over to him.

“What a coincidence. Never would I have imagined that I’d meet you here,” Song Ge said whilst smiling like a blooming flower after seeing Chu Feng.

“It is indeed a coincidence.” Chu Feng revealed a pleasantly surprised look.

“Who is that person?”

When those men who were fond of Song Ge saw Chu Feng, they all started frowning. Displeasure was clearly visible in their eyes.

They’d been trying so hard to befriend Song Ge earlier. Yet, they were only met with her contempt.

However, when she saw Chu Feng, she immediately turned into a completely different person. This caused them great envy and displeasure.

“Why would it be him?”

At the moment when the men were sizing Chu Feng up, Wang Lian also turned her gaze to Chu Feng.

She didn’t have to examine him, because she recognized who he was the instant she saw him.

“Elder Wang Lian, you know that person?” Those men asked Wang Lian.

“I wouldn’t say that I know him.”

In Wang Lian’s eyes, Chu Feng was a shameless and despicable person. However, that was not what was important. Most importantly, she felt that Chu Feng was nothing more than trash.

Because of that, she felt that he was unqualified to even know her.

Thus, she found it beneath her to tell others that she knew him.

Although she was unwilling to admit that she knew Chu Feng, she was very curious as to how he and Song Ge knew one another.

Thus, she arrived before them.

“Song Ge, how do you know him?” Wang Lian asked Song Ge.

“Wang Lian, that would be a long story. I will tell you when there’s time,” Song Ge said to Wang Lian.

After hearing Song Ge’s words, Wang Lian glared fiercely at Chu Feng. Then, she pulled Song Ge behind her and pointed her finger at Chu Feng. With a threatening tone, she said, “Let me tell you this! From today on, keep your distance from Song Ge! Otherwise, don’t blame me for becoming impolite with you!”

“Wang Lian, what are you doing?” Seeing that Wang Lian was actually speaking to her benefactor in such a manner, Song Ge felt displeased.

“Song Ge, I’ve met that person before. He is not a good individual. Don’t be deceived by him,” Wang Lian said to Song Ge.

“What nonsense are you spouting?” Song Ge was completely baffled.

In her impression, Chu Feng was her benefactor, and an exceptional genius.

How could he be a swindler?

“Elder Song Ge, Elder Wang Lian, is something the matter?”

Right at that moment, those men and women all gathered around.

Among them, the few men with the highest cultivations and greatest interest in Song Ge began to size up Chu Feng with extremely ill-intended gazes.

“There’s no issue. He’s my friend,” Song Ge hurriedly explained.

“Friend? Elder Song Ge’s friend must not be an ordinary individual. Brother, may I know which sect’s elder you might be?”

The men looked to Chu Feng strangely.

“I belong to no sect. My name is Asura,” said Chu Feng.

“What? Asura? Hahaha...”

“What’s this, you’re an Asura World Spiritist? If I’m not mistaken, brother Asura must be an Asura World Spiritist, right?”

“Otherwise, why would you be named Asura?”

“Everyone, am I not right? Hahaha...”

“Right, right, right. Hahaha...”

Suddenly, the crowd started laughing heartily. Even Wang Lian laughed with them.

Seeing that, Chu Feng revealed a faint smile.

Those people were laughing because they were ridiculing him.

Chu Feng was smiling because he was also ridiculing them for how ignorant they were.

“Well then, Elder Song Ge, it’s a rare encounter for us to meet. It’s better that we go to the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse to enjoy some tea together.”

“Right. I’ve heard that the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse has introduced several rare teas recently. Those teas are all the best of the best.”

“Furthermore, they’ve found an extremely beautiful Natural Oddity. It would be great for us to go there and check it out.”

“Elder Song Ge, you should know about the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse, no? The shopkeeper of the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse is a Martial Immortal-level expert. His teahouse is renowned for its unique performances.”

“Enjoying tea in the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse is not something that just anyone can do.”

“This is especially true today. The Cyan Bamboo Teahouse has hired an extremely marvelous Natural Oddity to sing and dance there. Because of that, it’s completely packed, and extremely difficult to get a seat.”

The men began to persuade Song Ge once again.

However, Song Ge showed absolutely no interest.

It was instead Chu Feng who asked, "If it's that difficult to enter the teahouse, how are we supposed to enter it?"

Chu Feng deliberately asked that question. After all, the words spoken by those men earlier served merely as a setup so that they could show off to Song Ge.

Unfortunately, Song Ge did not react the way they hoped because she was uninterested.

Chu Feng, on the other hand, was feeling mischievous. He wanted to see how they were planning to show off.

Chapter 3784 - Play With Them

Sure enough, after Chu Feng asked that question, the several men immediately revealed joyous looks.

Finally, someone had given them an opportunity to show off.

"Brother Asura, it seems that you're very interested in the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse. Truth be told, someone of your status will not be able to enter the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse in your entire life."

"That said, you are very fortunate to have encountered us, and our brother Luo Zhi."

"Brother Luo Zhi's father is the best friend of the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse's owner. Whilst others will not be able to enter the teahouse, our brother Luo Zhi is able to enter the teahouse at will. Furthermore, he will be seated at the best seat in the teahouse," those men said in a very proud manner.

"That amazing?"

Chu Feng revealed a look of admiration as he looked to that man by the name of Luo Zhi.

As for that man by the name of Luo Zhi, he did not even bother to look at Chu Feng. Proudly, he said, "I only bring my close friends to the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse."

His unspoken implication was that he would not bring Chu Feng to the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse.

“Young master Asura, are you very interested in the show at the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse?” Song Ge asked Chu Feng.

“I am indeed slightly interested. However, this young master Luo Zhi has already stated that he will only bring his close friends into the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse. Since I do not know him, I am evidently unable to enter.”

“Song Ge, it’s better that we find some random little teahouse to enjoy some tea instead,” said Chu Feng.

“Sure,” Song Ge not only agreed to it immediately, but she even had a look of expectation on her face.

She reacted as if she was very delighted to be able to enjoy tea in a small teahouse with Chu Feng.

Chu Feng did not hesitate. He turned around and began to walk away. Song Ge immediately and eagerly followed him.

Seeing that, Wang Lian immediately tried to persuade Song Ge. However, her attempt was completely ignored.

Wang Lian was very surprised by that. Earlier, Song Ge would hesitate after listening to her persuasions. Why did she decide to completely disregard her now?

She was unable to understand exactly what sort of magical ability Chu Feng possessed to actually attract Song Ge like that.

One must know that she and Song Ge were close friends. She knew Song Ge and the matters regarding her very well.

It was not only outsiders that were eyeing Song Ge; people inside the Void Cleanse Monastery were also eyeing her like wolves.

However, regardless of who they might be, Song Ge would still show them indifference.

In the past, Wang Lian had even wondered if Song Ge didn’t like men.

Song Ge told her that it wasn't that she didn't like men, instead, her criterion for a spouse was extremely high. Not only must the man be handsome, but he must also possess a certain amount of strength and imposing will.

At the very least, his cultivation could not be weaker than hers.

Most importantly, Song Ge was someone who believed in romance.

She hoped that the man of her dreams would be able to save her like a hero saving a beauty when she was in danger.

However, how could there be such a perfect thing in this world? How could things all happen according to the vision of a single person?

Thus, Wang Lian felt that Song Ge would never be able to find a man to her liking with her standards.

However, the behavior Song Ge showed towards Chu Feng was extremely abnormal.

Wang Lian was unable to understand why Song Ge was acting like that. After all, Chu Feng seemed to possess, neither a cultivation nor an appearance up to Song Ge's standards.

Seeing that Song Ge was truly leaving with Chu Feng, Luo Zhi immediately ran before Chu Feng and stopped him.

"Brother Asura, please wait. Since brother Asura is interested in the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse, I think we should go there and enjoy some time."

Luo Zhi had changed his previously prideful attitude and actually invited Chu Feng to enjoy tea in the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse of his own accord.

"Truly? Is it not going to make things difficult for you?" asked Chu Feng.

"Of course not, of course not. Since brother Asura is Elder Song Ge's friend, brother Asura will also be my friend. Since we are all friends, how could things be difficult?" Luo Zhi said with a smile. Merely, that smile of his was extremely fake.

"Since that's the case, let's go and check out the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse," Chu Feng said to Song Ge.

“Sure.” Song Ge nodded gladly.

Seeing that, the crowd began to rage with anger.

Earlier, they had attempted to persuade Song Ge to go to the teahouse with them for so long, only to be refused by her.

Yet, a single sentence from Chu Feng had actually managed to change her mind. This made them feel very upset and very displeased.

Although displeased, it remained that Song Ge had finally agreed to accompany them. Thus, they also felt joyous.

After all, as long as they reached the teahouse, they would be able to enjoy tea and refreshments. They would also be able to tamper with the tea.

Thinking of that, the men glanced at each other and wicked smiles appeared on their faces.

That said, although they were delighted that Song Ge had decided to go, they were not fond of the fact that Chu Feng was accompanying them too.

“Brother Luo Zhi, are you really planning to bring that guy to the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse?”

“Look at him, country bumpkin and all. If he is to accompany us to the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse, others will ridicule us.”

“We should think of a way to drive him away. If all else fails, let’s threaten him.”

The men began to send voice transmissions to Luo Zhi.

They hoped that they would be able to drive Chu Feng away so that he would not ruin their plans.

“Rest assured, the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse is my territory. Once we reach the teahouse, he will suffer.”

“Isn’t it better that we enjoy some appetizers before we enjoy the main course that is Song Ge?”

Luo Zhi spoke with a very despicable tone.

Hearing those words, the men all realized his intention.

Thus, all of them also revealed looks of anticipation in their eyes.

However, what they didn't know was that even though they were sending voice transmissions to each other, all their conversations were overheard by Chu Feng.

Chu Feng and the others soon arrived at the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse.

Although it was named a teahouse, it was extremely large.

Merely the lounge could contain hundreds of millions of people. Apart from the lounge, there were over ten thousand private rooms. Each of those private rooms was extremely spacious, and could contain over ten thousand people at once.

Of course, only people with sufficient strength were capable of entering those private rooms. Generally, they would only come in groups of three or four, and never over ten thousand.

The decorations of the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse could be said to be quite stylish too.

The Cyan Bamboo Teahouse used young bamboos as the main source of decoration, and other plants to complement them. There were no paintings in the teahouse, but it still appeared simple and elegant. The inside of the teahouse resembled an indoor forest.

Led by Luo Zhi, Chu Feng and the others were given a private room.

This private room was actually made of world spirit techniques. One could not see anything happening inside the room from the outside. However, one could see the entire lounge from inside the room.

Not long after they were seated, people immediately came with tea.

It must be said that the tea there was the work of a tea master.

Not only was there a large variety of teas, but they were also very fragrant, rich, clear and sweet.

In addition to the ambiance of the place, enjoying tea was truly comfortable.

This was especially true for the lounge. The lounge was different from the private rooms. There were many small tables in the lounge, with many people enjoying tea. Rather than calling the place a teahouse, it would be more accurate to call it an enormous restaurant.

The entire teahouse bustled with noise and excitement. Chu Feng was very fond of such a feeling.

Martial cultivators sought unsurpassed cultivation and unsurpassed status.

For many people, they lived their lives like Immortals. After enjoying their paramount status for many years, they would even forget that they were people.

Although this teahouse was also filled with cultivators, it was filled with liveliness too.

Being there, one would feel like one had returned to one's most ordinary, most simple form of living.

Chu Feng enjoyed this sort of environment greatly. He drank tea, watched the performance, and chatted with Song Ge leisurely.

Chapter 3785 - Drain The Cup In One Gulp

"Song Ge, I've heard that there's a place in your Void Cleanse Monastery called the Fate-changing Bell?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

He was curious because Old Freak Tang wanted to meet Song Ge there. Thus, he wanted to know if that was a random place he had selected, or if it was an extraordinary place.

"Indeed, we do possess a Fate-changing Bell, how did you know about it?" asked Song Ge.

"Occasionally, I would hear others mention it. That's why I'm curious," said Chu Feng.

"Speaking of the Fate-changing Bell, there's a story behind it."

"Did you know that even though our Void Cleanse Monastery is not very large, we've existed for over thirty thousand years, and have had a total of eleven headmasters?"

“Our third headmaster is also the legend of our Void Cleanse Monastery. That’s because... she was the only female headmaster in the history of our Void Cleanse Monastery,” said Song Ge.

“Is that so? She’s the only one?” Chu Feng reacted with greater interest.

“That’s right. She’s the only one. Furthermore, our third headmaster was also someone who worked very hard.”

“However, you should also know that cultivation relies more on talent than hard work. No matter how hard one works, it would be very difficult to change that fact.”

“Because of that, our third headmaster, due to her mediocre talent in her youth, was frequently bullied and humiliated by others.”

“Even though she continued to work hard without complaint and never once refuted anyone, she was still unable to change the opinion others had of her.”

“One time, our third generation’s headmaster was wrongly accused, and sentenced to be executed.”

“At that time, the Fate-changing Bell was the location where people were executed.”

“The Fate-changing Bell used to be called the Fate-seizing Bell. Once the bell sounded, a decapitated head would fall to the ground.”

“However, when the bell sounded, our third headmaster did not die. The reason for that was because someone had appeared before her.”

“That person was not someone from our Void Cleanse Monastery. However, he was very powerful. He was a peak Exalted-level expert.”

“One should know that peak Exalted is a level of strength stronger than all the headmasters in the history of our Void Cleanse Monastery.”

“Because of that, when that expert appeared, the entire Void Cleanse Monastery felt great respect and veneration for him.”

“Even our second headmaster went out of his way to personally welcome that expert.”

“However, to everyone’s surprise, the peak Exalted-level expert actually turned out to be our third headmaster’s father.”

“It turned out that our third headmaster had a very powerful father. However, she had never mentioned the fact that she was being bullied in the Void Cleanse Monastery to her father. She didn’t even mention that she had been wrongly accused.”

“If her father hadn’t learned of her being falsely accused and set to be executed, if her father hadn’t rushed over in time, the third headmaster would’ve truly been executed,” said Song Ge.

“Thus, her father cleansed her of the injustice she had received, and beheaded all those that had wrongly accused her?” asked Chu Feng.

“Not only that, the third headmaster’s father proclaimed before everyone that his daughter was absolutely not someone with mediocre talent. On the contrary, she was a genius martial cultivator. Merely, the people in their clan were all people that became geniuses later on in their lives.”

“Sure enough, after several years had passed, the third headmaster transformed into a completely different person. She was able to learn everything rapidly. Her cultivation began to advance by leaps and bounds. Later on, she even became our Void Cleanse Monastery’s third headmaster.”

“Because of that story, the Fate-seizing Bell stopped being the place where criminals were executed. Instead, it was renamed the Fate-changing Bell.” Song Ge had a look of envy on her face as she explained everything.

Chu Feng naturally knew what she was envious about. Song Ge had never seen her father her entire life. However, she deeply longed to meet him.

To long for someone and be unable to see them, this was a feeling that Chu Feng knew very well. He had felt the same way back when he hadn’t met his father. He was still able to deeply understand this sort of feeling.

After all, even now, he still hadn’t met his mother, and did not know what she looked like.

Thus, after seeing how Song Ge was envious of the third headmaster, and how she had a father that protected her like that, Chu Feng seemed to

understand why Old Freak Tang told him to bring Song Ge to the Fate-changing Bell in two days.

It would appear that Old Freak Tang had made his decision. He was planning to recognize Song Ge as his daughter. n))OveL&1n

At the same time, he was planning to change Song Ge's fate like the father of the Void Cleanse Monastery's third headmaster had changed her fate.

"Young master Luo, those two have been chatting nonstop like two sweethearts. They are simply paying no attention to us at all."

Chu Feng and Song Ge's conversations were met with looks of contempt from the men.

After all, they believed Song Ge to be their plaything.

To see their plaything not being toyed around with by them, and instead chatting nonstop with someone else, they naturally felt very displeased.

"Don't fret. For someone like him, we must plan meticulously. He will soon regret following us here," Luo Zhi spoke with a ruthless tone.

They were naturally saying everything through voice transmissions.

However, without any exceptions, all their voice transmissions were intercepted by Chu Feng.

Unfortunately for them, their cultivations were simply too weak. Although they were deemed to be geniuses in the eyes of many, they were akin to ants before Chu Feng.

He was accompanying them purely to amuse himself by toying with them. Since he needed to accompany Song Ge anyways, he felt that it would be enjoyable to toy with the trash beside her.

It could be said that he was cleaning up the trash through special means.

Not long afterward, someone walked in carrying a pot of tea.

The person that brought in the tea took a secret glance at Luo Zhi. Luo Zhi then turned his gaze to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng knew that this pot of tea must be what Luo Zhi had meticulously prepared for him.

Sure enough, after being directed by Luo Zhi, the man walked over to Chu Feng.

“Young master, this is our Cyan Bamboo Teahouse’s best tea.”

“Please have a sample.”

As that attendant spoke, he poured the tea into Chu Feng’s teacup.

However, right after the teacup was filled, Song Ge suddenly said, “Wait.”

“How come that tea of yours smells a bit strange?” asked Song Ge.

“Strange? That shouldn’t be.” The attendant immediately shook his head.

“The teas from your teahouse are all brimming with the aroma of tea. It is only that tea that has a very faint aroma, so faint that it’s like water. Is this truly the best tea your teahouse possesses?” Song Ge was skeptical.

She was no fool. She was not fond of being associated with those people because she knew that all of them were up to no good.

That was the reason why she was afraid that they would attempt to poison Chu Feng.

As for the tea, Song Ge felt it to be abnormal.

It was not only the tea; the expression of the attendant was also strange.

“This...” The attendant didn’t know how to respond. Panic appeared on his face. After all, he knew that he was doing something bad.

Seeing that things were about to be exposed, Luo Zhi immediately stood up.

“Elder Song Ge, you might not know about this. This tea is famed for its unique characteristic.”

“To explain things simply, this tea is a treasure of the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse.”

“That said, not just anyone can enjoy this treasure of a tea. However, I feel that brother Asura is a person of talent. I can tell that he’s no ordinary person from a single glance. Thus, brother Asura must be able to enjoy this tea. That is why I deliberately ordered them to prepare this tea for him.”

“Brother Asura, you couldn’t possibly be undaring to enjoy the tea, right?”

Luo Zhi looked to Chu Feng with a mocking gaze. He was trying to incite Chu Feng into drinking the tea.

However, before Chu Feng could say anything, Song Ge waved her hand at the attendant.

“There is no need for Asura to try out that sort of tea. Take it back.”

“Don’t. How could we waste such a good tea?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

As Chu Feng spoke, he raised the teacup before him.

“Asura, do not drink that tea.”

Song Ge had already realized that Luo Zhi was deliberately making things difficult for Chu Feng. Thus, she wanted to stop Chu Feng from drinking the tea.

However, she was met with a smile from Chu Feng, “This is a rarely available great tea, I must drink it.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng drank the entire cup of tea in a single gulp.

Chapter 3786 - Utter Humiliation

Luo Zhi and the others became very delighted upon seeing Chu Feng drinking the cup of tea.

Many among them even stood up and stared at Chu Feng. They were waiting for his embarrassing reaction to the poison.

“Ahh~~~”

However, not only did Chu Feng not behave in the manner that they were hoping to see, but he took a deep and delightful sigh.

“This sure is good tea. This tea had a sweet aftertaste, and was heavily fragrant. It is truly delicious and satisfying. After drinking this tea, I feel that I am much more clear-headed. It seems as if my cultivation has also increased slightly.”

Chu Feng praised the tea nonstop.

“This guy, what sort of nonsense is he spouting?”

Luo Zhi and the others were completely bewildered by Chu Feng’s praises.

They even felt that he was simply spouting rubbish.

That tea was clearly poisoned. Not only would one vomit non stop after drinking the tea, but one would also immediately crap one’s pants and fart uncontrollably.

Unless one had the antidote, this state would last for ten consecutive days.

Furthermore, its aroma was as Song Ge had said and the tea also tasted like water. There was simply no taste to the tea at all.

Thus, why would Chu Feng be praising the tea like it was some sort of sacred tea?

“Asura, how come you’re emitting a faint light?”

“That light is actually growing more and more intense. Not only is the light filled with martial power, but it is also emitting an aroma of tea. Could this be caused by that tea?” Song Ge looked to Chu Feng with a look of surprise.

Song Ge was not the only one surprised; the others were also surprised. The light Chu Feng was emitting from his body was truly extraordinary.

Not only was it filled with concentrated martial power, but it was also emitting an intense tea aroma.

Seeing all this, the crowd were unable to help themselves from associating these things with the tea that Chu Feng had drunk.

“That tea is actually that good?”

At that moment, even Song Ge looked at the pot of tea with curiosity.

She was already filled with a desire to try the tea.

“Of course it’s good tea, come, you should have a cup too,” as Chu Feng spoke, he poured a cup of tea for Song Ge.

“Elder Song Ge, you mustn’t drink that tea.”

Seeing that, Luo Zhi and the others rushed to stop her from drinking the tea.

They had prepared a different sort of poisoned tea for her so that they could enjoy her later.

If she were to drink that tea and ended up vomiting and a case of massive diarrhea, how were they supposed to enjoy her?

As such, they would naturally be unwilling to have her drink that tea.

“Why aren’t you allowing Elder Song Ge to drink this cup of tea? Could it be that you think that she is unable to handle it?” Chu Feng asked Luo Zhi and the others.

“That... that is naturally not what we are implying,” Luo Zhi hurriedly explained.

At that moment, Song Ge had received the cup of tea from Chu Feng. She raised both hands and drained it in a single gulp.

“Crap!”

Luo Zhi and the others cried out ‘oh no’ in their hearts upon seeing that Song Ge had really drank the tea.

“This sure is good tea. Never have I ever had tea this tasty.”

“Although I am ignorant of the tea ceremony, this tea is most definitely a treasure among top quality teas.”

To Luo Zhi and the others’ surprise, Song Ge actually also started praising the tea nonstop after drinking it. Following that, she also began to emit the same sort of light as Chu Feng.

“Song Ge, is that tea truly so mystical?” Wang Lian arrived beside Song Ge and asked in a serious manner.

She was still skeptical of Chu Feng. However, she believed Song Ge without any doubt.

“Of course. When have I ever lied to you? Not only is this tea extremely tasty, but it is also able to brighten one’s spirit and increase one’s power.”

“This simply cannot be considered to be tea at all. Instead, it’s a treasured cultivation resource. Wang Lian, you should have a cup,” Song Ge said to Wang Lian.

After hearing what Song Ge said, Wang Lian immediately walked over to the teapot with the intention of tasting the tea.

She did not care what the tea might taste like. However, after Song Ge and Chu Feng said that the tea was able to increase their cultivation, she was very interested in trying it out.

However, right after she approached, and before she could even touch the teapot, Chu Feng grabbed the teapot and lifted it up.

“This teapot is too small. A single pot only holds three cups of tea.”

“There’s one cup left. Attendant, I thank you for preparing such good tea for us. This final cup shall be rewarded to you.” Chu Feng poured the final cup of tea and handed it to the attendant.

“This bastard!”

Wang Lian started gnashing her teeth angrily after seeing Chu Feng bestowing the final cup of tea to the attendant, of all people.

After all, she had expressed her desire to drink the tea already. Yet, Chu Feng actually handed the final cup of tea to someone else.

It was clear that he was deliberately not allowing her to drink the final cup of tea.

“Come, attendant. Why are you still standing there? You’re most likely unable to enjoy such good tea normally, no? I’m rewarding you with this cup of tea today, why are you not accepting and drinking it still?”

Holding the cup of tea, Chu Feng walked over to the attendant.

“This... this... this...”

The attendant had a look of fear on his face.

Although Chu Feng and Song Ge appeared to have benefitted from drinking the tea, something that people would yearn to experience for themselves, the attendant knew very well that the tea had been messed with, that it was poisoned, and not some sort of sacred tea.

“What’s this? You’re not willing to drink this tea? Could it be that you’ve poisoned it?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of-of-of course not.” The attendant shook his head repeatedly.

“Then what are you afraid of? Drink it.”

Chu Feng grabbed the attendant, grabbed his mouth and forced the tea down his throat.

At that moment, Luo Zhi and the others were all staring at the attendant.

As matters stood, they were skeptical of whether the tea was poisoned, or if it was some sort of sacred tea.

If the attendant also reacted in the same manner Chu Feng and Song Ge had after drinking the tea, it would definitely be a sacred tea.

If it was a sacred tea, they would naturally not be willing to miss out on it.

As martial cultivators themselves, how could they possibly be willing to miss out on an opportunity to increase their cultivation?

After the attendant was force-fed the tea, he fell powerlessly onto his butt and started crying.

He was extremely worried and afraid, so much so that he did not even manage to catch the flavor of the tea.

At that moment, he felt that he was doomed, and would soon vomit and defecate before the crowd, utterly humiliating himself.

Seeing that the attendant was actually crying, Luo Zhi and the others all shook their heads.

They felt that they'd been deceived, and the tea was not sacred tea at all. Instead, it was poisoned tea.

However, to their surprise, a smile suddenly appeared on that attendant's tear filled face.

The attendant suddenly stood up and became extremely excited.

At the same time, he also started emitting a tea aroma, and light from his body.

"This tea really has a miraculous effect!"

"Heavens! I feel that the martial power within me has increased by over ten times!"

The attendant was wild with joy. After he stood up, he began to thank Chu Feng repeatedly.

"That tea really has such a miraculous effect?!"

Seeing the reaction of the attendant, the eyes of Luo Zhi and the others immediately started shining.

Originally, they had thought that they were exposed, and Chu Feng was deliberately trying to deceive them.

However, when even the attendant received such a miraculous effect after drinking the tea, it meant that the tea was truly a sacred tea.

"Quickly! Attendant, go and prepare another pot of tea! No, not another pot, bring many pots of tea over!"

"Bring all of them over! Bring as many pots of tea as you have. This great master is going to purchase all this tea from your teahouse!"

Even Luo Zhi was unable to contain himself. He hadn't even tasted the miraculous tea yet.

"Milord, you want the same tea?" asked the attendant.

"That's right. I want this tea, I want it exactly the same." said Luo Zhi.

Although Luo Zhi felt somewhat displeased at failing to humiliate Chu Feng, he had discovered such a miraculous sacred tea by a freak combination of factors. Because of that, he was wild with joy.

Not long afterward, the attendant returned with three pots of tea.

“I said bring as many pots of tea as you have. Why did you only bring over three pots?”

Seeing that the attendant only brought over three pots of tea, Luo Zhi, who was looking forward to enjoying the tea, was immediately displeased.

“Milord, our materials are limited. We only have these three pots of tea.”

The attendant had a look of grievance. He thought to himself, ‘These are poisoned teas, they’re all for poisoning others. Furthermore, a single pot would suffice. Besides, very few people use this tea to poison others. We’re only able to put it to use several times in a year. How could we possibly expect that someone would order so many pots in a single day?’

“Truly useless!”

Luo Zhi walked over furiously.

The attendant walked back in fear. He thought that Luo Zhi was planning to beat him.

However, to his surprise, Luo Zhi did not beat him. Instead, he picked up a teapot and began pouring the tea directly into his mouth

Seeing that there was an insufficient amount of tea, Luo Zhi decided to not share the tea with anyone, and instead drank it all himself.

Seeing Luo Zhi acting like that, two other men immediately rushed forward. Each of them grabbed a pot of tea and started pouring it down their throats.

Those two men were Luo Zhi’s close friends. As the saying goes, birds of a feather flock together.

The moral characters of Luo Zhi and his close friends were laid completely bare.

“Hey! Leave some for me! Leave some for me!”

Seeing that Luo Zhi and his two close friends were drinking all the tea in such a manner, the others present started feeling displeased.

They all rushed forward, wanting to drink some tea themselves.

There were even those among them that started fighting for the tea.

Wang Lian was not familiar with them, and thus did not dare to join the scramble. However, her eyes were filled with thirst and desire.

It could be seen that she also wanted to drink that sacred tea.

Seeing those people scrambling over the tea, Chu Feng had a smile on his face.

His smile was one of pure mockery.

The reason for that was because he knew that what they were scrambling over was poisoned tea.

Earlier, Chu Feng had secretly altered the tea with his world spirit techniques. Not only did he remove the poison from within the tea, but he even bestowed the tea with special medicinal properties. That was why the tea had such an unusual effect.

However, the miraculous effect was only there because Chu Feng had altered the tea.

The tea that Luo Zhi and the others drank was the unaltered, poisoned tea.

“Aouu~~~”

Sure enough, not long afterward, Luo Zhi opened his mouth and started spraying out vomit.

Luo Zhi was not the only one who reacted that way. His two close friends also started vomiting.

Seeing that, the confused crowd thought something had happened to Luo Zhi, and immediately rushed out to support him.

They even intended to treat his injuries.

However, soon, a strong stink could be smelled from the three men.

“What sort of smell is that? Why is it so stinky?”

The people that had approached them were all pinching their noses and frowning.

“That’s the smell of feces! Brother Luo Zhi, what’s going on with you all? Why would you decide to publicly defecate?!” Chu Feng shouted as he looked at Luo Zhi and his two close friends.

Fearing that others might not be able to hear him, Chu Feng shouted particularly loudly.

“What? Feces?”

Hearing Chu Feng’s words, the people that were supporting Luo Zhi and the two others immediately dropped them and moved far away.

Someone even set up a spirit formation to seal the three of them and prevent the smell from coming out.

Luo Zhi and his two close friends were feeling extremely wronged.

Not only did they publicly vomit, but they actually even ended up defecating before so many people. Furthermore, they’d shit their pants.

They naturally knew how humiliated they were.

However, due to the effects of the poison, they were unable to even move., they were no longer able to move. It was impossible for them to escape from this situation. They could only continue to vomit and shit their pants before all those people.

At that moment, they were utterly humiliated.

Chapter 3787 - Serves You Right

“In such a public place with so many people, they’re actually really defecating. Have they gone mad?”

“I can’t anymore. This is simply too disgusting. I’m going out to get some air.”

A woman felt completely disgusted by Luo Zhi and his two close buddies. She held her mouth and ran outside.

Although the others did not directly run away like that woman, they all stood far away from the three, and were looking at them with looks of disgust.

Of course, there were also people looking at them with enjoyment.

From this, it could be seen the bunch were truly a gang of scoundrels.

Luo Zhi and his two close friends were clearly suffering. Yet, not only were they not helping them, but they instead sealed them away using a spirit formation, and then mocked and ridiculed them from the sidelines.

It was said that even though married couples were birds of the same forest, they would flee their own separate ways when a great catastrophe befell them.

Never did Chu Feng expect that a gang of scoundrels would also behave in the same manner.

At the moment when Luo Zhi's friends decided to abandon them... it was the attendant who ran out in a hurry.

"What's happening?" Song Ge had a look of confusion.

"It seems like they're unable to withstand the tea. Didn't Luo Zhi himself say that ordinary people will not be able to withstand the tea?" said Chu Feng.

"In that case, wouldn't that mean that you and I are not ordinary people?" Song Ge looked to Chu Feng with her large eyes blinking.

"Of course," said Chu Feng.

"Then... what about that attendant?" asked Song Ge.

"I don't know about that attendant. However, he's at least stronger than Luo Zhi and his two buddies," Chu Feng said with a smile.

Hearing those words, the smile on Song Ge's face became even wider.

She did not have any sympathy for Luo Zhi and his friends. The reason for that was because she knew that they were not good people to begin with.

If it wasn't for Chu Feng wanting to go to the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse to enjoy tea, she never would've accompanied them there.

"Your name is Asura, right?"

Right at the moment when Chu Feng and Song Ge were chatting, a sharp and harsh voice transmission suddenly entered Chu Feng's ears.

It came from the woman beside Song Ge, Wang Lian.

"You need something?" Chu Feng asked using voice transmission.

"I do not care what method you used to approach Song Ge, but Song Ge is my good sister. Thus, I'd urge you to keep your distance from her," Wang Lian said to Chu Feng.

"And what if I don't?" asked Chu Feng.

"If you dare to refuse to listen to my advice, I will take your little life," said Wang Lian. Her attitude was extremely unyielding.

Chu Feng revealed a cold grin at Wang Lian's threat. His grin was full of contempt and mockery.

In Wang Lian's eyes, Chu Feng was nothing more than trash. Yet, at that moment, that trash was taunting her like that. Wang Lian was so angered by Chu Feng that even her heart started trembling with rage.

"You should take a mirror and look at yourself. Someone like you dares to think about getting with our Song Ge? You are simply a toad that wants to eat swan meat!"

"You and her, one belongs to the heavens, and the other belongs to the dirt. You will never be able to be together with her."

Furious, Wang Lian began to curse Chu Feng out.

However, Chu Feng was not angered by Wang Lian's curses. He replied, "Impossible? I might as well tell you this: as long as I wish for it, I could get with anyone."

"What? Someone like you actually dares make such a boastful claim?" Wang Lian felt completely astonished.

"This is called knowing one's own worth," Chu Feng spoke with a confident expression.

"You... you are most definitely the most shameless person I've ever met. How could there be someone as shameless as you in this world?"

"Listen carefully! Should you not leave Song Ge's sight today, I will rip off your skin! I shall see exactly how thick-skinned you are!"

Wang Lian was not only cursing Chu Feng out, but she was even threatening him.

Chu Feng only replied with, "You should be grateful that you have a good mother."

"What are you implying by that?" Wang Lian asked in confusion.

"You will understand in the future," said Chu Feng.

"Are you threatening me?"

"Haha. What a joke! Someone like you dares to threaten me?!"

"You should go and check yourself out in a mirror. See for yourself how useless you are," Wang Lian continued to curse out Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng no longer bothered to pay any attention to Wang Lian's curses.

Chu Feng would not be enraged because of curses from someone like Wang Lian. After all, he had seen too many people like her.

Truth be told, her defects of being vain, self-interested and exploiting of her friend were all things that he disliked greatly.

Had it been before, Chu Feng would've taught someone like her a lesson.

However, taking Aunt Liu into consideration, Chu Feng had decided to spare her and not bicker with her.

"Coming! Coming! The antidote is coming!"

"Quickly, remove the spirit formation!"

Soon, the attendant ran back.

After the spirit formation was removed, the attendant immediately fed Luo Zhi and the others the antidote.

With the help of the antidote, Luo Zhi and his two friends were finally able to return to normal.

Luo Zhi immediately set up a spirit formation to hide himself and his friends.

When the spirit formation opened again, they had all changed into new clothes. Not only did they no longer have a disgusting smell, but they were instead emitting a faint aroma.

However, their complexions were still ugly. After all, they'd completely humiliated themselves earlier.

"Milords, fortunately I've acted quickly," the attendant said with a smile.

He was actually seeking a reward for his actions. After all, if he hadn't rushed to return with the antidote, Luo Zhi and his two friends would have had to continue vomiting and defecating for ten days straight.

"Scram!"

Suddenly, Luo Zhi waved his sleeve, and a burst of wind swept forth. The attendant was sent flying out.

"Wuuahh~~~"

After landing, the attendant was seriously injured and unable to even stand up.

He did not receive the reward he sought. Instead, he received a beating.

"To dare harm us with poisoned tea, we are already being extremely benevolent by not killing you!"

"Go and fetch your manager! If you fail to provide me with a proper explanation today, I will smash apart your Cyan Bamboo Teahouse!"

Luo Zhi had aimed all the anger in his heart at the attendant.

He had no choice but to do so. After all, he needed to find a way out of their embarrassing situation.

He couldn't possibly say that he knew that it was poisoned tea, but thought it to be a sacred tea after witnessing the miraculous effect it had on Chu Feng and Song Ge, and then decided to drink it, only to screw himself?

If he said that, he would be deemed an utter fool.

Because of that, he could only say that he had no idea, and that the attendant was the one who had deliberately poisoned him.

Only that would provide an excuse for what had happened.

Thus, the innocent attendant became the person to shoulder all the blame.

However, Chu Feng did not have any sympathy for the attendant.

The attendant had worked with Luo Zhi and his friends to screw him over. He was not a good person to begin with. Thus, it could only be said that the attendant deserved what had happened to him.

Chapter 3788 - Watermirror Paradise

The attendant was carried away by the other workers of the teahouse. Luo Zhi took his seat again.

The others all stepped forward and began to urge Luo Zhi to not be angry.

From time to time, Luo Zhi would glance at Chu Feng.

As matters stood, he knew that none of this was the attendant's fault. Instead, it was all due to Chu Feng.

Luo Zhi did not bother to think about how Chu Feng had managed to accomplish it. He merely knew that Chu Feng was the person who had screwed him over and made him humiliate himself in such a manner before all those people.

Thus, he was looking at Chu Feng with killing intent in his eyes.

As for Chu Feng, he completely disregarded Luo Zhi's killing-intent-filled gaze.

In his eyes, Luo Zhi was despicable and shameless, someone who had committed all sorts of evil.

Of course, as there were too many evil people in the world, he had no intention to take care of all of them.

Thus, for people like Luo Zhi, if their evildoings were not encountered by him, Chu Feng would not have bothered to pay any attention to them.

However, if they dared to direct their evildoings at him, he would have them know what was meant by 'there's no pill for regret'.

“What’s going on?”

“Young master Luo, what happened earlier?”

Not long afterward, a very fat middle-aged man walked in.

That man wore gorgeous clothes, and was completely bedecked in jewelry. He looked exactly like a wealthy local landlord.

Hearing the conversation, Chu Feng learned that the fat middle-aged man was actually the manager of the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse.

Seeing the middle-aged fatty, and then seeing the somewhat stylish teahouse, Chu Feng suddenly realized that the design of the teahouse was most likely unrelated to the fat manager. Chu Feng felt that the fat manager would not have the aesthetic taste to create such a design.

“Senior, that attendant of yours actually poisoned us with poisoned tea. You must uphold justice for us in this matter.”

Seeing the manager, the previously arrogant Luo Zhi grew much gentler.

He was nothing more than a person who feared the strong and bullied the weak.

He had bullied the attendant, and shouted about smashing the teahouse to the attendant.

However, when faced with the Martial Immortal-level manager, he immediately addressed him as 'senior' and spoke very respectfully.

“You don’t have to worry about this matter. I will definitely provide a proper explanation for you.”

“That said, is that Peace Gauze Monastery’s elder with you all?” asked the manager.

“Who?” asked Luo Zhi.

“That woman who’s very tall and thin, with very light skin and a black ponytail,” said the teahouse’s manager.

“That would be Li Chuchu. Now that you mention it, where’s Li Chuchu?” Luo Zhi turned his gaze to the crowd present.

“You were stinking too much earlier, and Li Chuchu is obsessed with cleanliness. Thus, she ran out,” said someone.

“Oh, then it would be her. What’s wrong, senior? Did she get into some sort of trouble?” asked Luo Zhi.

“She didn’t cause any trouble. However, I’ve heard from an attendant that she was captured and brought into a private room by some people. Furthermore, it seemed like she was rather unwilling to enter the room. That’s why I came over to ask you all about it,” said the manager.

“What?! Someone dared to mess with my friend?! They’re simply courting death!”

Luo Zhi and the others were immediately enraged upon hearing those words. They asked, “Senior, which private room is it?”

“Men, lead the way for young master Luo,” said the manager.

Soon, an attendant arrived and began to lead the way for Luo Zhi and the others.

Furiously, Luo Zhi and the others followed the attendant to the private room.

However, no one noticed that the manager revealed a cold smile on his face after Luo Zhi and the others had left.

Seeing that cold smile, Chu Feng knew that the manager had done this on purpose.

Likely, the manager harbored ill feelings for Luo Zhi after he beat up that attendant earlier.

That was why he had deliberately set them up. If Chu Feng guessed correctly, the people in the other private room were most definitely people that Luo Zhi and his friends could not afford to offend.

“Asura, let us go and have a look too,” Song Ge said to Chu Feng with a quiet voice.

“You don’t seem like someone fond of watching a show,” said Chu Feng.

“I’m not going to watch a show. It’s just that Li Chuchu is someone that I know too.”

“She’s a woman, and has been captured by a bunch of people and been taken into a private room. I do not know what might happen to her. That’s why I’m worried about her,” said Song Ge.

“Very well. Then let us follow them too,” as Chu Feng spoke, he began to lead Song Ge.

Luo Zhi and the others had arrived before the entrance of that private room angrily.

“Bang!” Luo Zhi smashed through the entrance door with a kick.

“Motherfuckers! Which eyeless bastard dared touch the friend of this Luo Zhi?!”

“Today, I shall break all of your legs!!!”

Luo Zhi cursed out angrily after smashing through the gate. As he cursed, he brought his men and rushed inside.

The lackeys behind Luo Zhi rushed into the door with confidence and impressive demeanors.

However, upon rushing inside, the fierceness on their faces disappeared. They all stood there as if they were petrified.

Replacing the fierceness that was previously present on their face was endless panic and fear.

“Crap! It’s trouble! Song Ge, we must leave immediately!”

Chu Feng noticed that Wang Lian was pulling Song Ge away and urging her to quickly leave through voice transmission.

At the same time, Chu Feng noticed the situation inside.

That private room was not only much larger than the one Luo Zhi and his friends had been in, but it was also much more meticulously decorated. Evidently, it was a higher quality private room.

Earlier, Luo Zhi had declared that the private room they were in was the highest quality one. Evidently, he had been boasting.

Of course, that wasn’t what was important. What was important was what could possibly bring such fear to Luo Zhi and the others.

Naturally, that would be the people.

Besides Luo Zhi and his friends, there were over a dozen people inside the private room. *novE-lb(1n*

They all wore the same type of outfit. Evidently, they belonged to the same power.

Speaking of it, it was quite a coincidence. Chu Feng recognized their outfit.

The reason for that was because the old man and young woman he had encountered in the vicinity of the Seven Suns Mountain Range had also worn that outfit.

Through the title plates on their waists, Chu Feng knew who those people were.

They were disciples from Watermirror Paradise.

Chu Feng was able to sense that the strongest among those Watermirror Paradise disciples were only rank one Heavenly Immortals.

Ignoring Song Ge, there were many in Luo Zhi’s group that possessed the cultivation of rank one Heavenly Immortal. As for Luo Zhi himself, his cultivation was that of a rank two Heavenly Immortal.

That said, Luo Zhi possessing his level of cultivation was actually very normal.

Although Luo Zhi lived a very carefree and loose life, he was actually over a thousand years old. Although he was trying to get Song Ge, he was actually as old as her mother.

That said, that was not what was important. What was important was that Luo Zhi, even though he clearly possessed the cultivation of a rank two Heavenly Immortal, was scared witless by a bunch of rank one Heavenly Immortals.

Evidently, he was not afraid of them because of their strength. Rather, it was because of their identity.

The identity of those people brought fear deep fear to Luo Zhi.

“Where did this bunch of shits come from?! You dared to kick through this young master’s door?!” said a man who seemed to be the leader of the group. His tone was very cold.

The woman by the name of Li Chuchu was currently being held by that man.

It could be seen that she wanted to resist him. Yet, she was both powerless and scared of resisting.

Chapter 3789 - Do You Know Who I Am?

“Young Master Miao, I truly didn’t know that this private room belonged to you. If I knew, even if I was given ten times the nerve, I would not have dared to kick through your door.”

“It’s just that I heard my friend had been captured and brought into this private room. Because of that, I was in a rush to save her. That is why I kicked through the door.”

“Young Master Miao, please don’t take offense to my actions.”

Luo Zhi was speaking like a grandson, an utter disgrace. His voice was even trembling. It would appear that he was truly terrified.

However, to everyone’s surprise, even though Luo Zhi was clearly giving in and apologizing, that Watermirror Paradise’s young master Miao refused to give him any face.

“Enough of your bullshit. Cripple your cultivations, and I will spare your lives,” he said.

“Ah?”

Hearing those words, Luo Zhi and the others immediately turned ashen.

Unable to contain herself, Song Ge asked, “Young master Luo, no matter what, you’re a rank two Heavenly Immortal. Why are you so afraid of him?”

“I... I... this...” Luo Zhi didn’t know how to respond.

“Song Ge, do you have a deathwish? Do you not know who that person is?”

“He is Miao Yu. His grandfather is a Supreme Elder of the Watermirror Paradise!”

“As for the Watermirror Paradise, don’t you know what sort of place it is? It’s one of the strongest local powers in the Seven Suns Mountain Range region.”

“Before the Watermirror Paradise, our Void Cleanse Monastery is nothing more than a low-level power. Any random elder from the Watermirror Paradise is capable of extinguishing our Void Cleanse Monastery!”

“Even if it’s Luo Zhi and his friends, they would still only be able to admit defeat towards people like them. Quickly, leave this place with me. We cannot afford to involve ourselves in this mess.”

Wang Lian pulled Song Ge and sent her voice transmissions urging her to leave.

“Mn?”

Right at that moment, that young master Miao noticed Song Ge and Wang Lian.

When he saw Song Ge, his eyes immediately started shining.

“These two ladies are also with you?” he asked Luo Zhi.

“Eh... yes, that’s correct,” said Luo Zhi.

"How about this: leave those two ladies behind, and the rest of you scram," said young master Miao.

"Yes, yes, yes."

Surprisingly, Luo Zhi immediately agreed to young master Miao's rude request. He immediately turned around with the intention to leave.

"Yes, my ass."

However, when he walked past Chu Feng, Chu Feng waved his arm and gave a ruthless slap to Luo Zhi's face.

Luo Zhi was sent to the ground by Chu Feng's slap. Half his face started swelling explosively.

"You... you dared hit me?!"

Holding his face, Luo Zhi looked to Chu Feng with disbelief.

He had truly never expected for a bumpkin like Chu Feng to dare hit him!!!

Chu Feng completely ignored Luo Zhi.

He walked to the center of the room and sat down in a chair.

"You have quite some nerve. You dare to touch anyone?" Chu Feng said to that young master Miao.

"What is that guy doing?"

It was not only Luo Zhi; Wang Lian and the others were also astonished. Even young master Miao and other disciples of the Watermirror Paradise were completely bewildered.

After all, practically no one dared to act so arrogant before them.

"Why are you still there? Are you enjoying being held by him?"

Chu Feng looked to Li Chuchu, who was being held in young master Miao's bosom.

"Ah."

Li Chuchu abruptly reacted to Chu Feng's words. As young master Miao was stunned by Chu Feng's actions, he was no longer holding onto her. Thus, she immediately took the opportunity to run out the door.

"Where do you think you're running to?! Get back here!"

Seeing that Li Chuchu was fleeing, one of young master Miao's lackeys immediately ran after her with the intention of capturing her and bringing her back.

"Scram!!!"

Chu Feng raised his leg and kicked that man flying.

When that man landed on the ground, he was bleeding from his nose and mouth. He was nearly paralyzed.

Chu Feng's kick was much stronger than the slap he had given Luo Zhi. n)-∅.-V)(e)(l)-B.-1.)n

After Chu Feng kicked the man, Wang Lian, Luo Zhi and the others were even more stunned.

It was one thing for Chu Feng to kick Luo Zhi. However... he actually also dared to kick someone from the Watermirror Paradise?

That was the Watermirror Paradise, one of the strongest powers in the Seven Suns Mountain Range!!!

"Motherfucker! Who are you?! You dare to attack my men?!"

Young master Miao was completely enraged. Not only did he stand up abruptly, but he also released his rank one Heavenly Immortal oppressive might.

His oppressive might rushed towards Chu Feng like a myriad of ferocious beasts.

"You dare attempt to attack me?"

"Behave yourself and lie there!"

Chu Feng waved his arm.

“Paa!” That young master Miao, who had just gotten up, was immediately smashed to the ground.

Like Luo Zhi’s face, his face also started swelling explosively.

Furthermore, a bloody handprint was present on his swollen face.

It was Chu Feng’s handprint.

“Madness! Madness!!!”

Wang Lian and the others were not astonished by Chu Feng’s cultivation after witnessing that he actually dared to attack young master Miao. Instead, they were astonished by his actions.

They felt that his actions were simply akin to courting death. He was seeking his own doom. His behavior was something that only a madman would do.

“Young Master Miao, I don’t know this person. He has absolutely no relationship with us.”

“Young Master Miao, if you want revenge, please take your revenge against him. Please don’t implicate us.”

Suddenly, someone knelt and began to kowtow to young master Miao.

That person was actually Luo Zhi’s close friend.

Following that person, there were immediately others that began to declare that they had no relationship with Chu Feng.

Even Wang Lian declared that she didn’t know him.

They were all extremely afraid that young master Miao would implicate them when he took his revenge against Chu Feng.

“You all have truly broadened my horizons.”

Seeing those people kneeling and kowtowing to young master Miao just so that they could distance themselves from him, Chu Feng revealed a wry smile.

While he had witnessed cowardly good-for-nothings, he had never witnessed it to such extent.

He, Chu Feng, was the one that had beat up young master Miao. The matter had nothing to do with them to begin with.

Yet, they were actually scared completely witless, frightened to the extreme.

“All of you, shut up!”

Suddenly, a furious shout was heard. It was young master Miao.

At that moment, young master Miao was gnashing his teeth angrily. He seemed like he was about to explode.

“Motherfucker! You dare hit me?! Do you know who I am?! Do you fucking know who your daddy is?!” young master Miao asked Chu Feng angrily.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3790 - Finding Help - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3790 - Finding Help

Chapter 3790 - Finding Help

“Your name is Miao Yu. Your grandfather is a Supreme Elder of the Watermirror Paradise.”

“As for the Watermirror Paradise, it is one of the strongest local powers in the Seven Suns Mountain Range region.”

After Chu Feng finished saying that, he looked to Wang Lian. “What I said is correct, isn’t that right, Wang Lian?”

“!!!”

Hearing those words, Wang Lian’s expression changed enormously.

She noticed that what Chu Feng had said seemed to be the exact words she had said to Song Ge earlier.

Could it be that that guy had managed to hear the voice transmission between her and Song Ge?

Thinking of that, Wang Lian’s heart immediately tensed up.

It was only at that moment that she realized this fellow by the name of Asura seemed to not just be some trash. On the contrary... he had a certain amount of ability.

His ability far surpassed her own.

“Motherfucker! You know who I am, yet still dared to hit me?! Have you truly gotten tired of living?”

“You should go and investigate who in the Seven Suns Mountain Range region would dare hit me, Miao Yu!” shouted Miao Yu.

“Go to the entrance of the Seven Suns Mountain Range and say what you just said again.”

“Do you dare do that?” asked Chu Feng.

“You!!!” Miao Yu’s face turned red with embarrassment.

Although the Watermirror Paradise was a top power in the Seven Suns Mountain Range region, it was only so among the local powers.

What sort of place was the entrance of the Seven Suns Mountain Range?

Gathered there were formidable powers from all over the Reincarnation Upper Realm. There were even powers from outside the Reincarnation Upper Realm there.

There were countless Exalted-level experts gathered there. Not to mention Miao Yu, even his Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster would be completely ignored and looked down on there.

Go there and ask who would dare to hit him?

If he were to say those words, he would immediately be killed there. Furthermore, he would not even know who it was that had killed him.

“Humph, trash that only dares to bully the weak and fears the strong.”

“It’s no wonder Song Ge looks down on you all.”

Chu Feng was not only saying those words to Miao Yu. He deliberately took a glance at Luo Zhi, who was still lying on the ground, and the crowd that were kneeling nearby.

“You...”

Chu Feng’s gaze was filled with mockery.

Although the crowd felt furious after being insulted in such a manner, they were unable to refute him.

After all, Chu Feng had dared to attack even young master Miao. They were all afraid that they would end up angering him, and receive a vicious beating from him.

In their eyes, Chu Feng was simply a madman.

“Motherfucker! You’d best stop playing dumb with me here!”

“If you truly have the balls, then stay here and do not leave!” young master Miao said as he pointed at Chu Feng.

“You’re calling for backup?”

“Very well. You’d best do it quickly, since I, your granddaddy do not have that much time to wait for you,” said Chu Feng.

“Just you wait!”

As young master Miao spoke, he left with the others from the Watermirror Paradise.

“Go! Quickly!”

After young master Miao left, Luo Zhi and the others immediately rushed out of the private room too.

Only Song Ge did not leave the room. Instead, she walked over to Chu Feng and sat down.

“Song Ge, we must quickly leave this place. Once the people from the Watermirror Palace arrive, we will end up suffering,” Wang Lian urged upon seeing that Song Ge was not leaving.

“This matter was caused by me. I cannot walk away from it,” said Song Ge.

“But you represent our Void Cleanse Monastery!”

“Are you not afraid that the Watermirror Paradise will find trouble with our Void Cleanse Monastery?” said Wang Lian.

Hearing those words, Song Ge put away the title plate of the Void Cleanse Monastery on her waist.

“Right now, I only represent myself,” said Song Ge.

“I truly don’t understand what’s wrong with you. Why would you disregard your life for someone like him?”

“Forget about it. Do as you wish. I’m not going to bother with you.”

Wang Lian had a look of helplessness on her face. She took a meaningful glance at Chu Feng, and then turned around and left.

Although those people had all left, Chu Feng was actually able to sense their every action.

They had not left the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse at all.

They had hidden themselves in another private room and were observing Chu Feng’s movements from the shadows.

They wanted to watch him embarrass himself. This was especially true for Luo Zhi and his lackeys. They felt deep hatred for Chu Feng, and wanted to personally dismember him into ten thousand pieces.

Naturally, they did not wish to miss out on witnessing Chu Feng being taught a lesson by the people from the Watermirror Paradise.

As for that young master Miao, he kept his word, and really went searching for his grandfather to stand up for him.

He knew where his grandfather currently was.

However, when he found his grandfather, he was surprised.

The reason for that was because there were two other people present in addition to his grandfather. They were their Watermirror Paradise's Lord Headmaster and his granddaughter, Yang Shenshen.

Seeing Miao Yu with half his face swollen, Yang Shenshen mocked and ridiculed him, "Miao Yu, what's wrong? You've courted trouble outside, ended up being bullied, and returned to find your grandfather to stand up for you again?"

She deeply looked down on Miao Yu. She felt that he was the scum of their Watermirror Paradise.

However, taking Miao Yu's grandfather into consideration, she did not make things difficult for him, and would only make cutting remarks at him whenever she saw him.

"What's with you? Did you not know how to treat yourself first before returning? Are you thinking that you're not enough of a disgrace still?" Miao Yu's grandfather asked angrily.

He actually had quite a headache with his grandson causing trouble all over the place.

Although he was a Supreme Elder of the Watermirror Paradise, he used to be a candidate for headmaster.

He was defeated by the current headmaster and reduced to being only a Supreme Elder. At that time, he felt that since he'd failed to become the headmaster, he must allow his descendants to surpass him.

He'd nurtured several sons. Yet, they'd all failed to live up to his expectations.

After reaching his grandson's generation, they were all even worse than his sons.

This was especially true in regards to Miao Yu. He was absolute trash.

His old rival, the current headmaster of the Watermirror Paradise, on the other hand, had not only managed to nurture a good generation of sons, but his grandchildren were even more exceptional.

This was especially true in regards to Yang Shenshen, who was a rare genius. She had already become a Martial Immortal at such a young age.

He looked to his grandson. He was much older than Yang Shenshen. Yet, he had only barely become a rank one Heavenly Immortal.

He also knew very well how much effort he had placed into helping his grandson obtain the cultivation of rank one Heavenly Immortal.

Seeing the high-spirited Yang Shenshen and then seeing his swollen-faced grandson, he started gnashing his teeth with rage. He wanted to immediately stand up and kick Miao Yu.

“Grandfather, I truly didn’t cause any trouble this time around.”

“I was enjoying tea with my close friends in the Cyan Bamboo Teahouse when someone charged in and asked if I was from the Watermirror Paradise. I told that person I was, and then, without saying anything, that person beat me up.”

“After beating me up, he declared that he would come to our Watermirror Paradise in the coming days and personally wipe us out.”

Miao Yu was afraid that his grandfather would not help him, and decided to lie and exaggerate things.

However, it just so happened that his lies ended up working effectively on his grandfather every single time.

Chapter 3791 - Senior, You’re Also Here?

“Who dared to act so arrogant?”

Hearing those words, Yang Shenshen’s expression became ugly.

Yang Shenshen was also someone with a fiery temper. Although she did not stir up trouble like Miao Yu, she refused to allow anyone to insult their Watermirror Paradise.

“I don’t know who he is. However, that man is truly arrogant.”

“That said, judging from his appearance, he is not someone from Cloud Paradise. I don’t know who gave him the nerve to dare challenge our Watermirror Paradise.”

Miao Yu had a look of grievance on his face as he said those words.

“Miao Yu, is what you said the truth?”

“If you dare to lie to me, don’t blame me for using the sect’s rules to punish you,” the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster said.

“Lord Headmaster, this junior would not dare lie to you. He indeed said those things,” Miao Yu said.

“Humph. What utter nerve! That man actually dares to challenge our Watermirror Paradise?!”

“Miao Yu, where is that person? Lead the way. We don’t have to wait for him to come to our Watermirror Paradise. I will personally go and face him,” the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster said as he stood up.

“Yes, yes, yes. Lord Headmaster, I will guide you to him right away.”

Seeing that their Lord Headmaster was actually planning to personally take care of the matter, Miao Yu felt overjoyed, and immediately began leading the way.

Miao Yu felt that he would gain great honor should it be known that he had managed to move the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster to stand up for him. With that, who would possibly dare provoke him again?

Even though he had already brought his backing to find Chu Feng, the journey back was still going to take some time.

This worried Luo Zhi and the others that were waiting to see Chu Feng suffer.

“Why aren’t they here yet? Could it be that they don’t dare to come?” someone muttered quietly.

“That’s impossible. Miao Yu is the grandson of a Watermirror Paradise’s Supreme Elder.”

“How could he possibly fear that madman?”

“It must either be that his grandfather is in closed-door training, or he has encountered some other sort of issue. However, being afraid of that madman is definitely not the case,” said Luo Zhi.

“If it’s as young master Luo Zhi has said, wouldn’t that Asura be done for?”

Suddenly, a voice was heard. It was Wang Lian.

It turned out that Wang Lian also hadn’t left. Not only that, but she had stealthily found Luo Zhi and the others.

“Oh my, if it isn’t Elder Wang Lian. Why aren’t you with Song Ge accompanying that madman?” Luo Zhi’s friends asked mockingly after seeing her.

“Young master Luo Zhi, Song Ge is foolish, but I, Wang Lian, am not foolish like her.”

“That Asura is nothing more than a madman. How could I dance around a madman like him?” said Wang Lian.

“Seems like you have a discerning eye, and know how to distinguish right from wrong.”

After hearing what Wang Lian had said, Luo Zhi’s friends nodded in satisfaction.

“Look! They’ve come!”

Suddenly, someone discovered that the people from the Watermirror Paradise had appeared in the longue.

“Such grand characters came too? That madman is definitely doomed.”

Seeing the people that had entered the longue, Luo Zhi became extremely excited.

“What’s going on? Brother Luo Zhi, who are those people?” someone behind Luo Zhi asked.

“I knew you all wouldn’t know them. Here, let me introduce them to you.”

“That person over there is Miao Yu’s grandfather, one of the Watermirror Paradise’s Supreme Elders.”

“As for that young woman, she is the granddaughter of the Watermirror Paradise’s current headmaster. She is also the strongest genius of the Watermirror Paradise, Yang Shenshen,” Luo Zhi explained to the crowd.

“So she’s Yang Shenshen? I’ve heard that Yang Shenshen is a Martial Immortal-level expert.”

Upon learning that the young woman was Yang Shenshen, their eyes all started shining.

After all, Yang Shenshen was a famous genius in their Seven Suns Mountain Range region.

“Don’t be in a rush to be so excited just yet. Look carefully. See that old man behind Yang Shenshen?”

“That person is Yang Shenshen’s grandfather, the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster.”

“He is a top expert with a cultivation of rank four Exalted,” said Luo Zhi.

“Even the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster came?!”

“It would appear that that fellow by the name of Asura is truly screwed this time around.”

Like Luo Zhi, the others had also become especially excited.

They had believed that the Watermirror Paradise’s Supreme Elder was already a major existence.

As for the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster, he was simply an existence so powerful that he was akin to a legend.

No matter how talented Asura might be, he would still suffer facing those grand existences.

Miao Yu was actually also thinking the same thing.

Thus, aggressively, Miao Yu brought the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster and the others to the room Chu Feng was in.

When he saw that Chu Feng and Song Ge were actually still in the room, he was immediately overjoyed.

He was originally afraid that his effort to bring the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster over would be a waste if Chu Feng had fled.

Never did he expect that Chu Feng was actually still here.

"Brat, seems like you possess courage."

"However, you must still pay for your actions!" Miao Yu said to Chu Feng.

"Senior?"

Yang Shenshen walked into the room. When she saw Chu Feng, she was immediately stunned.

"What? Senior?"

Upon hearing that Yang Shenshen actually addressed Chu Feng as Senior, Miao Yu was immediately petrified. As for Luo Zhi, Wang Lian and the others observing from the shadows using special techniques, they were also stunned.

What was happening?

Why would the majestic granddaughter of the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster, the Watermirror Paradise's strongest genius, Yang Shenshen, address that madman as senior?

Could it be that they'd misheard her? **no***VE-L*3.1n

"Senior Asura, why are you also here?"

At the moment when they were confused, the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster also walked in.

When he saw Chu Feng, he was pleasantly surprised. In fact, he even revealed more excitement than Yang Shenshen.

"This... What's going on here?"

It was no longer only Miao Yu, Luo Zhi, Wang Lian and the others that were stunned. Even Song Ge, who was beside Chu Feng, was completely shocked.

Even though she knew that he was unfathomable and an expert among experts, she had never imagined Chu Feng to be so powerful that even the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster would address Chu Feng as 'senior' upon seeing him.

At that moment, she finally realized why Chu Feng had not shown any concern after finding out that Ma Liang was the Cloud Paradise's Supreme Elder's disciple.

It turned out that Chu Feng was truly powerful enough to show no concern for it.

Chapter 3792 - Hateful Gaze

"What a coincidence. Never would I have expected to encounter you two here," said Chu Feng.

"That's right senior. This is truly a coincidence. I have been searching for you. However, never would I have expected that I would come across you here."

"Oh, that's right. Senior, why are you here?" the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster asked.

"That fellow told me to stay here and wait for him. He said that he'd get his grandfather to teach me a lesson." Chu Feng pointed to the shivering Miao Yu, who stood behind him.

"Could it be that you're his grandfather?" Chu Feng asked the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster.

"Insolent disgrace!"

Suddenly, the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster let out a furious shout.

Then, he pointed to Miao Yu and asked angrily, "Miao Yu, are you saying that the person who beat you up is senior Asura?!"

"I... I... I..." nove-**LB**)In

Miao Yu started to stutter in fear. At that moment, he was unable to even create a sentence.

“Lord Headmaster, what is going on here?”

“Exactly who is this person?”

As matters stood, Miao Yu’s grandfather had realized that his grandson might have offended someone that he should not have, and courted a major disaster.

Even though he knew that his grandson was trash and useless scum, it remained that he was his grandson.

Thus, he wanted to defend his grandson if he could.

“Supreme Elder, this person is that senior Asura my grandfather and I encountered. It is this senior who helped us breach that spirit formation, allowing us to obtain that Immortal Technique,” Yang Shenshen said to Miao Yu’s grandfather.

“It’s actually this person?!”

Hearing those words, Miao Yu’s grandfather realized that the situation was very bad.

Before Miao Yu had sought him out, the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster had been mentioning their encounter with Chu Feng to him.

From the way the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster praised Chu Feng, he knew that senior Asura was a peak expert. At the very least, his world spirit techniques were extremely powerful.

An expert of that caliber would be someone that anyone would want to entice. How could they possibly offend him instead?

However, his useless grandson had decided to offend exactly one such expert.

At that moment, Miao Yu’s grandfather was truly furious. He was in such a rage that he wanted to whip his useless grandson to death.

Unfortunately, he was unable to do so. After all, he loved Miao Yu dearly.

No matter how useless he might be, no matter how much of a scum he was, he still loved him dearly.

If he hadn't pampered Miao Yu so excessively, Miao Yu would not have become so arrogant and despotic, stirring up trouble everywhere.

"So you were senior Asura."

"Senior Asura, exactly what happened here? Could there be some sort of misunderstanding?" Miao Yu's grandfather arrived before Chu Feng and asked with a very mild and even slightly subservient manner.

Seeing the grandfather that he had always relied on being so courteous towards Chu Feng, Miao Yu fell powerlessly onto his butt.

He knew that he was done for. Completely done for.

Throughout the years, he was only able to be so arrogant and fearless because his grandfather had backed him up.

Never would he have imagined that he would actually end up provoking someone that could cause fear to even his grandfather.

He knew that he had truly kicked a plate of iron.

"He must be your grandson, right?" Chu Feng cast a glance at Miao Yu, who sat paralyzed on the ground.

"That's correct. That good-for-nothing is my grandson."

"May I know what he has done to have provoked senior? Senior, please tell me, and I will properly discipline him," said Miao Yu's grandfather.

"It's actually nothing serious. It's just that your grandson decided to forcibly drag my friend into his private room with the intention of seizing her body."

"Because of that, I decided to stand up for my friend, and gave your grandson a slap to the face. After that, your grandson threatened me, saying that you're his grandfather."

"He said that since you're his grandfather, practically no one in the entire Seven Suns Mountain Range region would dare to provoke him. Since I've provoked him today, I've committed a capital offense."

“After that, he told me to wait for him here while he went and called you over to teach me a lesson.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng looked to the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster with a beaming smile.

“Never would I have imagined that this fellow who commits all sorts of crimes and misdeeds is not only backed by his grandfather, but he’s actually also backed by the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster.”

“Today, I, Asura, have truly broadened my horizons.”

Hearing those words, Miao Yu turned completely ashen. In fact, even his grandfather’s face turned ashen.

Although all the things Chu Feng had said were all true, he made it sound like Miao Yu’s wicked deeds were things that could not be tolerated by the heavens. Furthermore, he also denounced the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster to be an accomplice of the evildoer Miao Yu.

“Since you’ve all come, there’s no need to continue standing there. Come, teach me a lesson.”

Chu Feng said to Miao Yu’s grandfather and the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster.

“Senior Asura, this is a misunderstanding, a total misunderstanding. Things are truly not as you think.”

The Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster started to panic. He did not wish to leave such a bad impression on Chu Feng, and began to hurriedly explain things.

“Misunderstanding. This is truly a misunderstanding.”

Miao Yu’s grandfather started sweating cold sweat from fear. Even his voice was no longer clear.

“This is a misunderstanding? In that case, what is actually happening? Why don’t you tell me?” asked Chu Feng.

“I... this... this...”

The Watermirror Paradise's headmaster was at a loss as to how to justify things, and landed himself in a dilemma.

After all, they had indeed made their way here with the intention of backing up Miao Yu. Merely, never had he ever imagined that the person they'd planned to take care of was Chu Feng.

Suddenly, the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster exploded with anger. He pointed to Miao Yu's grandfather and asked furiously, "Look at that good grandson you've nurtured!"

"Of everyone that he could offend, he actually offended senior Asura! Senior Asura is the great benefactor of our Watermirror Paradise!"

"Tell me, what are we to do about what happened here today?!"

"Lord Headmaster, I... I..."

Miao Yu's grandfather found himself at a loss as to how to reply.

"Exactly who is that guy?"

Seeing both the Watermirror Paradise's Supreme Elder and headmaster being so terrified of Chu Feng, Luo Zhi and the others that were hiding and observing the situation all shivered in fear.

It was only at that moment that they realized that Chu Feng was a powerful individual.

They'd finally realized why Song Ge would stick to Chu Feng the way she did.

It turned out that it wasn't that Song Ge was blind.

On the contrary, Song Ge knew that Chu Feng was powerful, and had decided to stick to him because of it.

Song Ge was much smarter than they were.

The foolish person was not Song Ge. Instead, they were the fools.

"Damned Song Ge. I've considered you to be my friend in vain. If you knew this Asura to be so powerful, why didn't you inform me sooner?"

Wang Lian looked to Song Ge with complaint and even hatred in her eyes. She not only hated Song Ge, but she also hated herself.

Not only had she driven Chu Feng out of her home, but she had even mocked, ridiculed and cursed him out earlier. She had most definitely completely offended him.

She had actually offended such a powerful individual. Just thinking about it brought her lingering fear.

How could she not be afraid?

Chapter 3793 - The Strongest Power?

After offending such an existence, it was already a miracle that Wang Lian was still alive.

Indeed, it was truly a miracle.

She was actually able to still live??

Suddenly, Wang Lian recalled something Chu Feng had said to her.

‘You should be grateful that you have a good mother.’

Upon recalling those words, Wang Lian came to a realization. It seemed that it wasn't that she was lucky. Instead, Chu Feng had decided to spare her after taking her mother into consideration.

But, if Song Ge had told her how powerful Chu Feng was and allowed her to know that he was not an ordinary individual sooner, she would not have made such a foolish and fatal mistake.

She might have even been able to get close to him like Song Ge had.

If that had happened, her future would have been smooth sailing, and her cultivation would have increased rapidly.

It would have brought her a completely different life, a completely different ending.

However, Song Ge had not told her about Chu Feng, and this had caused her to gradually make an irredeemable blunder.

Because of that, she was filled with hatred. She not only hated herself, but she also hated Song Ge bitterly. She felt that Song Ge was the one that had purposely harmed her.

“What’s wrong? You still haven’t finished thinking about how to handle this man?”

“Does your Watermirror Paradise not have any rules or regulations?”

“If you don’t know how to handle him, why don’t I, Asura, take care of him for you?”

Seeing that the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster and Supreme Elder were still not punishing Miao Yu, Chu Feng spoke with a slight tone of displeasure.

“You utter disgrace! It is useless to keep you alive!!”

Suddenly, a look of determination appeared in the eyes of Miao Yu’s grandfather.

Then, he picked Miao Yu up single-handedly.

His other hand formed a blade and he thrust it into Miao Yu’s dantian.

Miao Yu’s grandfather had actually crippled Miao Yu’s cultivation.

After doing so, Miao Yu’s grandfather suddenly knelt before Chu Feng.

“Senior Asura, my grandson is a failure. He provoked you. I know that crippling his cultivation is too light of a punishment.”

“But senior, he is still my grandson. I hope that senior can give me face and spare his life.”

“I guarantee senior that I will imprison him in the Watermirror Paradise from now on, and never allow him to come out to cause harm to others anymore.”

Miao Yu’s grandfather kowtowed to Chu Feng.

He was truly disregarding his own face and self-respect for the sake of saving his grandson.

“The wrongdoings he has done should not be assumed by you.”

“This is settled.” Chu Feng waved his hand.

“Thank you senior. Thank you senior.”

Miao Yu’s grandfather was endlessly grateful.

He felt that it was already extremely fortunate that Miao Yu was able to remain alive.

.....

At the moment when the crowd were thinking that the matter would end like that, another group of people walked in majestically.

The appearance of this group of people caught the attention of everyone in the entire Cyan Bamboo Teahouse.

“There’s a show to watch now.”

Seeing the appearance of this group of people, Luo Zhi and his hiding buddies all revealed smiles of people taking joy and delight in the calamity of others.

Compared to Luo Zhi and others’ delight, the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster and Yang Shenshen started frowning.

The reason for that was because this group of people were no ordinary people.

If the Watermirror Paradise was one of the strongest local powers in the Seven Suns Mountain Range region, then the group of people that had appeared belonged to the fully-deserving strongest power in the Seven Suns Mountain Range region.

They were people from the Cloud Paradise.

If it were only people from the Cloud Paradise that had appeared, the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster would definitely not start frowning like that.

The reason he was frowning was because many of the Supreme Elders from the Cloud Paradise were all present. In fact, even their headmaster, Daoist Yun Lie, was present.

[1. Yun Lie means Fierce Cloud]

Although Daoist Yun Lie was also a rank four Exalted-level expert like the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster, the two of them had fought at the beginning of the year, and it was Daoist Yun Lie who had won.

It was due to that battle that the Cloud Paradise became the strongest power in the Seven Suns Mountain Range region.

As for the Watermirror Paradise, they were reduced to the second strongest.

Furthermore, after that match, the Cloud Paradise's headmaster would always think of a way to deliberately make things difficult for the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster whenever he encountered him.

Every single time, he would utterly disgrace the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster.

At that moment, he had definitely not come with good intentions.

"Humph. Old man Yang, I've gone through quite the effort to find you."

"Never would I have expected to encounter you here," said the Cloud Paradise's headmaster.

"Headmaster Yun, why are you seeking me out?" asked the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster.

A Supreme Elder from the Cloud Paradise stood forth and asked, "Why? My disciple Ma Liang has disappeared. Did your people from the Watermirror Paradise capture him?"

Hearing those words, Song Ge's heart tensed and panic appeared on her face.

Even though she didn't know that Cloud Paradise's Supreme Elder, she knew who he was from the words he had said earlier.

He was Ma Liang's master, Zhang Tao.

As for why that Ma Liang had disappeared, Song Ge knew the reason perfectly well.

After all, Ma Liang was the person who had fought her over the secret skill in the remnant, and had attempted to rape her.

He had then been killed by Chu Feng.

“What are you talking about? Your disciple disappeared? What does that have to do with my Watermirror Paradise?”

Compared to Song Ge, the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster had no idea what had happened.

He felt that the Cloud Paradise was simply looking for trouble.

Merely, their excuse was simply too absurd.

In fact, Zhang Tao had no idea his disciple Ma Liang had already died.

He was indeed only using Ma Liang’s disappearance as an excuse to cause trouble for the Watermirror Paradise.

As for why they came to cause trouble for the Watermirror Paradise, it was actually very simple.

Even though their Cloud Paradise now stood above the Watermirror Paradise, it remained that their headmasters both possessed the same cultivation.

The two powers were rivals that had fought for many years.

Who knew when the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster’s cultivation might surpass that of their Cloud Paradise’s headmaster?

As such, the Cloud Paradise viewed the Watermirror Paradise as a thorn. They were itching to eliminate them whilst they were still able to suppress them.

“Your Watermirror Paradise has been going against our Cloud Paradise the entire time.”

“Whenever people from our Cloud Paradise have disappeared, they’ve all died by your Watermirror Paradise’s hands, have they not?” Zhang Tao said coldly.

“You’d best not make such irresponsible remarks. Never has our Watermirror Paradise harmed anyone from your Cloud Paradise,” said the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster.

“Humph, you know very well as to whether you have or not.”

The people from the Cloud Paradise were unwilling to back off. At that moment, the two sides began to quarrel ceaselessly.

Chapter 3794 - Kneeling And Begging For Forgiveness

“Soon. Soon. Every time they meet, they fight like this.”

“Once they’re furious from the arguments, they’ll start fighting.”

“Haha. This is truly enjoyable. Never would I have expected that I’d be able to see such a show.”

“The Watermirror Paradise actually stood alongside that Asura, and even went as far as to cripple their own Supreme Elder’s grandson’s cultivation for the sake of appeasing that Asura.”

“Let’s see how you all are going to handle this situation now! Facing the Cloud Paradise, what can you possibly do?”

“There’s also that Asura. Wasn’t he a benefactor of the Watermirror Paradise? Wasn’t he extremely arrogant? The way I see it, he’s going to suffer alongside them.”

Luo Zhi and others that were hiding in the shadows were all itching for the two sides to fight.

They also hoped for the people from the Watermirror Paradise to suffer in the battle.

The reason for their behavior was naturally because the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster was extremely respectful toward Chu Feng.

Because of that, Luo Zhi felt great displeasure towards the people from the Watermirror Paradise.

“Enough! All of you, shut up!”

Suddenly, a loud, resounding and furious shout exploded.

Upon hearing this voice, the crowd were all stunned.

The reason for that was because the person who had shouted belonged to neither the Watermirror Paradise nor the Cloud Paradise.

The person who had spoken was Chu Feng.

“Who are you?” Zhang Tao of the Cloud Paradise pointed at Chu Feng.

“Who I am is none of your concern. I will only ask you this: was that Ma Liang your disciple?”

Chu Feng stood up and asked Zhang Tao.

“Ma Liang is my disciple. What about it?” Zhang Tao asked in a very displeased manner.

“All I need to know is that he’s your disciple. Your disciple tried to sneak attack me, and was killed by me,” said Chu Feng.

“What?”

Chu Feng’s words shocked everyone present.

“Bastard! Who the hell are you?! You dare to blabber such nonsense here?!” Zhang Tao narrowed his brows and spoke coldly.

The reason why he reacted in such a manner was because he believed his disciple Ma Liang to still be alive.

Earlier, he had only used Ma Liang as an excuse to cause trouble for the Watermirror Paradise.

That was why he thought Chu Feng was babbling nonsense.

As for the others, they were completely confused.

What was Chu Feng doing? Could he be provoking that Cloud Paradise’s Supreme Elder?

Luo Zhi and the others were completely confused as to what he was planning to do.

“This belonged to your disciple, no?”

As Chu Feng spoke, he took out a Cosmos Sack and tossed it to Zhang Tao.

Turned out, Chu Feng had collected Ma Liang’s Cosmos Sack when he’d destroyed his corpse.

At that time, Chu Feng merely didn’t want to waste the items in the Cosmos Sack. Furthermore, it was unsuitable for him to give them to Song Ge. He feared that he would cause trouble for her should he give her Ma Liang’s possessions. Thus, he’d kept them himself.

Never did he expect to encounter Ma Liang’s master.

Ma Liang’s possessions suddenly had a different use. Chu Feng was able to use them to prove to Ma Liang’s master that he was truly killed by him.

“This... this indeed belongs to my disciple.”

“Why would you have it?! Speak immediately, what did you do to my disciple?!”

After Zhang Tao confirmed that the Cosmos Sack belonged to Ma Liang, his expression became one of nervousness.

He was surprised to discover that the man before him was not spouting nonsense.

With that, it was very possible that his disciple had met with some sort of mishap.

“I’ve already told you that your disciple has been killed by me,” said Chu Feng.

“You... you actually really killed my disciple?! You damned bastard! I’ll kill you!”

Upon learning that his disciple was really killed, Zhang Tao burst into a rage. As he spoke, he unleashed his oppressive might with the intention to attack Chu Feng.

“Wuuahh~~~”

In the next instant, Zhang Tao let out a scream. Like a dying dog, he was crushed to the ground.

“How could this be?”

The crowd were all puzzled by this scene.

“Strange. This oppressive might?”

Suddenly, the crowd were astonished to discover that an even more powerful oppressive might had appeared.

That oppressive might was so powerful that even the Watermirror Paradise and Cloud Paradise’s headmasters were suppressed by it.

The reason for that was because that oppressive might was that of a rank five Exalted.

“You want to attack me?”

“It would appear that you, the master, are not up to much either.”

“Like disciple like master. Your disciple did all sorts of unimaginable misdeeds. You, as the master, are responsible for your disciple’s actions. Since that’s the case, you might as well join him.”

At the moment when the crowd were still confused, Chu Feng spoke again. Then, he sent forth a palm strike.

“Bang!” While lying on the ground, Zhang Tao’s body exploded. He was utterly destroyed by Chu Feng.

He was unable to even let out a scream before his death.

At that moment, everyone present were stupefied.

It turned out that the rank five Exalted-level oppressive might had come from Chu Feng.

Even though the Watermirror Palace's headmaster and Yang Shenshen already knew that Chu Feng was very powerful, they had only thought that he was powerful in terms of world spirit techniques.

They had never imagined that his cultivation would actually be so strong too.

As for the Cloud Paradise's headmaster, he was completely stunned.

He had come with the intention of causing trouble for the Watermirror Paradise.

Never had he expected to encounter such a malignant star.

"You're the Cloud Paradise's headmaster?"

At that moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the Cloud Paradise's headmaster.

"This... this... regarding this..."

The previously arrogant Cloud Paradise's headmaster was stuttering, unable to form a sentence.

It wasn't that he was unable to answer Chu Feng's question. It was that he did not dare to answer.

After he witnessed Zhang Tao being killed by Chu Feng with a single palm strike, his heart was filled with panic.

He was truly afraid that Chu Feng might take displeasure to his response, and decide to smack him to death too.

"I'm asking you a question, are you mute or what?" Chu Feng asked coldly.

"Right, right, right..."

"This lowly one is indeed the Cloud Paradise's headmaster." *noVe(lB)In*

"That said, senior, I truly had no idea that Zhang Tao's disciple had committed all sorts of evil deeds."

“If I knew, I would’ve taken care of him already. Zhang Tao’s disciple would not have angered senior. Because of that, allow me to apologize to senior here.”

The Cloud Paradise’s headmaster was shivering with fear.

“From the way you were behaving earlier, you seem to not be someone to be trifled with either, no?” asked Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, the Cloud Paradise’s headmaster’s heart tensed up. With a ‘putt,’ he got on his knees.

“Milord, I came here to seek justice from the Watermirror Paradise. I did not come here to cause trouble for you, Milord,” the Cloud Paradise’s headmaster explained.

Chapter 3795 - Chu Feng’s Friend?

“Weren’t you all inquiring about Ma Liang’s whereabouts, and intending to obtain justice for him?”

“Now that you know that Ma Liang was killed by me, how are you planning to settle this debt?” asked Chu Feng.

“Milord, this is a misunderstanding, a misunderstanding.”

“We truly had no idea that Ma Liang had died. We were merely using his disappearance as a random excuse. We truly didn’t come to attack you, Milord,” said the Cloud Paradise’s headmaster.

“A random excuse? In that case, did you know that the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster is my friend?” asked Chu Feng.

“I had no idea. I truly had no idea.”

The Cloud Paradise’s headmaster became extremely nervous. The Lord Headmaster, a grand existence in the Seven Suns Mountain Range region, was so terrified that he was about to pee his pants.

It wasn’t that he lacked courage. Rather, he truly did not want to die.

He also knew very well that the person before him was someone that he could not afford to offend.

“Forget it. I will not make things difficult for you, you can stand back up.”

Chu Feng waved his hand.

“Thank you Milord. Thank you Milord.”

The Cloud Paradise’s headmaster nodded and bowed repeatedly. He kowtowed to Chu Feng for a very long time before finally standing up.

After standing up, he wiped the cold sweat off his face repeatedly. Even now, his body was still trembling. He was truly terrified.

“Headmaster Yang, you are truly unkind and insincere. If you had told me that such a grand existence was backing you up, I, Yun, would never have dared to cause trouble for you,” said the Cloud Paradise’s headmaster.

“What are you...” The Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster didn’t know how to respond to those words.

He was feeling very wronged. After all, he hadn’t known that Chu Feng was so powerful either. Besides, he didn’t know Chu Feng very well at all.

Besides, even if he told the Cloud Paradise’s headmaster that, would he possibly believe him?

If the Cloud Paradise’s headmaster hadn’t witnessed Chu Feng’s strength with his own eyes, he would not be reacting in such a manner.

“Headmaster Yun, now that you know about the relationship that the Watermirror Paradise and I have, are you still going to cause trouble for them in the future?” asked Chu Feng.

“I wouldn’t dare. I wouldn’t dare. Milord, even if you are to give me a hundred times the nerve, I would still not dare,” said the Cloud Paradise’s headmaster.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled. Then, he said, “Headmaster Yun, I will ask you a question.”

“Milord, please ask away,” said the Cloud Paradise’s headmaster.

“How long has your Cloud Paradise existed?” asked Chu Feng.

“Milord, our Cloud Paradise has existed for forty-three thousand eight hundred years exactly. Over these forty-thousand plus years, we have had a total of fifteen headmasters,” the Cloud Paradise’s headmaster answered in full detail.

“Listen carefully. You’d best behave yourself properly from today on. Not to mention not bullying the Watermirror Paradise, you are not allowed to bully people from any powers.”

“Otherwise... I will have your Cloud Paradise’s continued existence cease in your generation.”

“Understand?” asked Chu Feng coldly.

“Understood. Understood.”

The Cloud Paradise’s headmaster nodded his head repeatedly. The sweat that he had wiped away had once again covered his face. In fact, there was even more sweat than before.

What Chu Feng had said was no threat. Instead, it was a warning.

Killing intent had appeared in Chu Feng’s eyes as he said those words. That killing intent was the most intense and most terrifying killing intent he had ever seen.

In that instant, he saw the scene of his Cloud Paradise being completely extinguished.

Thus, he knew that Chu Feng was most definitely not lying. If he dared to commit any misdeeds, this seemingly ordinary-looking fellow would really bring ruin upon his Cloud Paradise.

“Enough. You can scam,” said Chu Feng.

“Milord, I’ll take my leave then.”

The Cloud Paradise’s headmaster hurriedly brought the people from the Cloud Paradise with him and left.

They left very quickly. However, their appearance looked very sorry.

“Sssss~~~”

Luo Zhi and the others that were hiding in the shadows and observing everything were unable to keep themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Earlier, they'd witnessed with their very eyes the person that they considered to be a peak grand expert shivering in fear, kneeling and begging Chu Feng for forgiveness.

That scene had an enormous effect on their hearts. It left an indelible shadow in their hearts.

They had always dreamed of being able to get close to the Cloud Paradise's headmaster or the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster.

However, At a short while before, an existence even more powerful than the Cloud Paradise's headmaster was right beside them; addressing them as brothers.

As for them, not only did they not cherish that opportunity, but they instead only planned to harm that person.

It was only at that moment that they realized how foolish they were.

"Brother Asura, you're still here?"

"There seemed to be a fight earlier. I was very worried for you, are you alright?"

Luo Zhi walked out from the private room he was hiding in and walked to Chu Feng with a look of cordial eagerness on his face. He seemed like he'd seen his close friend of many years.

Luo Zhi was trying to mend the pen after the sheep were lost. He wanted to seize the opportunity to better his relationship with CHu Feng.

Even if he failed to establish a relationship with Chu Feng, he wanted to use the title of 'Chu Feng's close friend' to establish good relations with the Watermirror Paradise. Should that happen, it would definitely be an enormous profit for him.

"Brother Asura, are you alright?"

"Why are you still there?"

Seeing Luo Zhi showing himself, the others also learned from his behavior, and ran over to Chu Feng attentively.

Even Wang Lian shamelessly ran over.

However, even though they acted so eagerly attentive, Chu Feng paid absolutely no attention to them. He acted as if he had not heard their shouts.

That said, those people were simply thick-skinned to the extreme. Even though he was ignoring them, they still inquired about Chu Feng's well-being nonstop.

Seeing that the situation seemed amiss, Yang Shenshen asked, "Senior Asura, do you know them?"

"It would be better to ask your Watermirror Paradise's disciples whether or not I know them."

Chu Feng looked to the several Watermirror Paradise disciples kneeling nearby.

Those people were Miao Yu's lackeys. All of them were present when Miao Yu had captured Li Chuchu.

Thus, they'd all witnessed the scene earlier.

"Milord, how should we respond?"

After witnessing how powerful Chu Feng was, he was already a living god of death in their eyes.

They felt endless fear towards Chu Feng. They were even more afraid of him than their Lord Headmaster.

When Chu Feng's gaze turned to them, they thought that he was planning to kill them. Thus, they truly did not know how to answer him.

"What happened earlier and what you all saw earlier, just tell them as they happened," said Chu Feng.

"Senior Asura is asking you whether or not these people are his friends."

“Speak, and honestly! Why ask all these questions?!” Yang Shenshen shouted in annoyance.

Chapter 3796 - Thank Your Mother

“No, they’re not. That’s what they said themselves earlier.”

“Earlier, Miao Yu captured senior Asura’s friend. Senior Asura and these people came in together.” n-(o)-V-(e/-L//b-.l)n

“No, it’s that guy who came in first. In the beginning, senior Asura didn’t come in.” A Watermirror Paradise disciple pointed to Luo Zhi.

“What are you...” Luo Zhi’s expression changed. He cried out in his heart.

Seeing that the situation was bad, Luo Zhi intended to leave.

However, he was grabbed by Yang Shenshen.

“Before things are clear, none of you shall leave.” After Yang Shenshen finished saying those words, she looked to that disciple and said, “Continue.”

“They wanted to take that young lady and leave. However, when they discovered we were disciples from the Watermirror Paradise, they became afraid, and began to apologize to us.”

“Later on, it was senior Asura who stood forth and saved that young lady. Furthermore, senior Asura gave Miao Yu a beating.”

“After senior Asura beat up Miao Yu, those people began to kneel and beg us for forgiveness. They said they didn’t know senior Asura at all.”

“In the end, they were just afraid that we would find them and make trouble for them. That was why they tried their hardest to deny all relationships with senior Asura.”

“That’s what happened,” said that disciple.

“So that’s the case.”

Hearing those words, Yang Shenshen and the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster both came to a realization.

It wasn't that those people didn't know Chu Feng. Instead, they were merely a gang of scoundrels.

"Senior Asura, these people are a scourge to society. How do you wish to handle them?" Yang Shenshen asked Chu Feng.

"Wang Lian, you can go out." Chu Feng pointed to Wang Lian.

Hearing those words, Wang Lian walked away from Luo Zhi and the others.

As for Luo Zhi and the others, they were all scared witless. They all knew what awaited them wasn't going to be good.

At that moment, they were all filled with regret. If they'd known such a thing would happen, they would not have gone to find Chu Feng. Instead, they would have remained in hiding.

What they didn't know was that even though they were hiding, Chu Feng had been able to see all their movements.

"You scourge to society, don't act as if you're being wronged, okay?" Chu Feng said to Luo Zhi and the others.

"Brother Asura, there must have been some sort of misunderstanding between us in the past. It was most definitely a misunderstanding."

Luo Zhi and the others actually started crying.

"Misunderstanding?" Chu Feng let out a cold laugh. Then, he said, "You tried to make me drink poisoned tea, do you think I didn't know that?"

"There's no such thing. How could there be poisoned tea? Brother Asura, what you drank was clearly a sacred tea," Luo Zhi defended himself.

"Sacred tea? I merely transformed the tea with my world spirit techniques. Did you really think those were effects from the tea?" Chu Feng smiled coldly.

Then, he said, "I can ignore the matter of you all attempting to poison me. However, your plan to use tea to knock out Song Ge and then rape her afterwards, that is absolutely intolerable."

"Ah?" Hearing those words, Song Ge was immediately surprised.

Luo Zhi and the others were even more alarmed. They had clearly only spoken about those things through voice transmission; how could Chu Feng know about them?

Indeed. Since they had conversed through voice transmission, it should be impossible for Chu Feng to know about it. Thus, as long as they refused to admit to it no matter what, they would be fine.

Thus, Luo Zhi and the others began to refuse to admit to Chu Feng's claims.

Facing the denying Luo Zhi and others, Chu Feng shook his head.

"It doesn't matter whether or not you all admit to it."

"I, Asura, will not bother with principle and reason with people like you all."

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng looked to the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster. He said, "Headmaster Yang, I will hand these scum to your Watermirror Paradise to punish. That said, you don't have to kill them. It would do as long as you keep them alive."

"Senior Asura, please rest assured. I will definitely handle this matter properly," said the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster. Then, he turned around and looked to the people from the Watermirror Paradise. "Depose all these people of their cultivation. Then, bring them back to the Watermirror Paradise and send them to the Law Enforcement Hall to be imprisoned for life."

"Furthermore, send letters to the powers that they belong to. Tell them that they are being held by our Watermirror Paradise, and we will handle the evildoer disciples that they've failed to manage."

The Watermirror Paradise's headmaster spoke very fiercely. This made Luo Zhi and the others realize how miserable of an end they would receive.

Thus, they began to kneel and beg for forgiveness. They were asking Chu Feng to pardon them, and give them another chance.

However, Chu Feng paid absolutely no attention to them. He acted as if he could not hear and see them begging for forgiveness.

Then, Chu Feng gestured at the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster and left with Song Ge.

Originally, the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster wanted to invite Chu Feng over to his Watermirror Paradise as a guest. However, he was refused.

Chu Feng's actions had made them realize that he was truly a grand expert. Thus, since Chu Feng did not wish to proceed to the Watermirror Paradise, they did not dare to nag him to do so.

In fact, Chu Feng had already helped the Watermirror Paradise enormously.

Not only had he killed a Supreme Elder of the Cloud Paradise, but he had also wiped out their ambitions.

Likely, no one amongst the Seven Suns Mountain Range's local powers would dare to become an enemy of the Watermirror Paradise anymore. The Watermirror Paradise would take the throne of the number one local power in the Seven Suns Mountain Range region.

Originally, Chu Feng had wanted to leave directly with Song Ge. However, they had only walked for a short while before a figure appeared before them. That person knelt before Chu Feng.

It was Wang Lian.

Wang Lian was completely covered in tears. Upon seeing Chu Feng, she began to kowtow to him repeatedly.

Her complexion was deathly pale. That complexion of hers was not caused by her crying. Instead, she had been frightened pale.

"Thank you for not killing me, Milord. Thank you for not killing me, Milord."

Wang Lian repeated those words as she kowtowed to Chu Feng.

Likely, she was grateful that her life had been spared after seeing what had happened to Luo Zhi and the others. It was all thanks to Chu Feng giving her lenient treatment.

"There's no need to thank me. I'll repeat what I told you before, you should be grateful that you have a good mother."

“Properly show filial piety toward your mother.”

“It is all thanks to her that you’re able to remain alive today.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng left with Song Ge.

Chu Feng did not even bother to help Wang Lian back up because he knew that she was too fake of a person.

Earlier, Wang Lian had been hiding in the shadows with Luo Zhi and the others so that she could see him suffer and take joy in his misfortune. Chu Feng knew all about it.

Truth be told, if it wasn’t to give face to Wang Lian’s mother, Wang Lian would’ve received the same end as Luo Zhi and the others.

Chapter 3797 - A Forced Marriage?

“Asura.”

Song Ge suddenly called out to Chu Feng enroute.

“What’s the matter?” asked Chu Feng.

“It’s nothing. I am merely calling out to you.”

Song Ge shook her head. However, her little face was smiling brilliantly.

She sighed. “This is simply like a dream.”

Suddenly, Song Ge moved her head to the side and her face upward. Even her footsteps became somewhat mischievous.

“Girl, what is wrong with you?” asked Chu Feng.

“I’m happy.”

“I already knew that you were very powerful. However, never did I imagine you to be this powerful.”

“Even the Watermirror Paradise’s headmaster and the others must address you as senior respectfully. Yet, I am able to address you by name. I truly feel

like I am even more amazing than the Watermirror Paradise's headmaster and those other grand characters," Song Ge said proudly.

"You will become more amazing than all of them in the future," said Chu Feng.

"You don't have to comfort me. I know very well how capable I am," said Song Ge.

"What I said is the truth," Chu Feng spoke with great determination.

After all, Song Ge was Old Freak Tang's daughter. Her own talent had also been fully revealed. She had inherited Old Freak Tang's talent.

"Forget it. You really don't have to comfort me. Although I am incompetent, I am already very content to be able to know you."

"That said, Asura, where do you live? Can you give me your address?" asked Song Ge.

"I am not from here. I am merely passing by this place. Soon, I will be leaving again. Thus, you don't have to search for me. If the opportunity presents itself in the future, I will come see you," said Chu Feng.

"Very well. That said, Asura, I am truly sorry, but I have some things that I need to take care of. Thus, I might have to leave first." Song Ge had a face filled with reluctance as she said those words.

"That's fine. Go ahead and do what you need to do."

"Oh, that's right. Are you free in two days' time?" asked Chu Feng.

"I am," Song Ge replied immediately.

"In that case, go to your Void Cleanse Monastery's Fate-changing Bell in two days and wait for me. I need you for something," said Chu Feng.

"The Fate-changing Bell? Why must I go to the Fate-changing Bell? Wouldn't other places be fine?" asked Song Ge.

"What's wrong? Are you unwilling to go to the Fate-changing Bell?" asked Chu Feng.

Even though Song Ge did not expressly display her reluctance, Chu Feng was able to determine from her reaction that she did not wish to go to the Fate-changing Bell.

“It’s nothing. You’re going to find me in the Void Cleanse Monastery? That would truly be great.”

“Very well, I will see you at the Fate-changing Bell in two days,” said Song Ge.

Then, Song Ge left. Chu Feng did not journey with her. Instead, he secretly followed her.

To Chu Feng’s surprise, after Song Ge parted with him, her joyous expression was soon replaced with a worried frown. Grief filled her face.

The grief she expressed was not from parting ways with Chu Feng. Instead, it was due to something else.

Furthermore, Song Ge also did not return to the Void Cleanse Monastery. Instead, she returned to Autumnfall Village.

She returned to her home.

At that moment, Chu Feng came to a sudden realization.

It turned out that Song Ge had already learned that her mother was terminally ill, and would not be able to live for much longer.

Song Ge wanted to spend as much time with her mother as she possibly could. Even when she’d went to the city earlier, she had only done so to purchase some things that her mother liked.

The scene of Song Ge accompanying her mother was also completely witnessed by Old Freak Tang.

Chu Feng arrived at the smithy and found Old Freak Tang.

At that moment, Old Freak Tang seemed to have a dying flash, and appeared particularly spirited.

He was even smiling as he looked at Song Ge and her mother.

It was as if he was also standing there and having a reunion with them.

“Senior, why must you wait two more days? Why don’t you go and meet Song Ge now? Isn’t it better for your family to reunite sooner?”

Chu Feng felt that since Old Freak Tang and Song Ge’s mother were both going to die soon, it would be better for them to be reunited sooner, and make up for the regrets of the past.

“Two days is a short period of time that will pass very quickly.” Old Freak Tang smiled. Then, he looked to Chu Feng with a look of appreciation.

“Senior, why are you looking at me like that?” Chu Feng felt extremely uncomfortable being looked at with such a gaze.

“Did you know why I cursed you that day?” asked Old Freak Tang.

“Did senior not do that to warn this junior?” asked Chu Feng.

“Of course not. That curse of mine had a testing effect. After being cursed, you entered a semi-conscious state. During that period of time, I did some tests on you.”

“After testing you, I’ve discovered that you, brat, truly possess a good moral character,” said Old Freak Tang.

“No wonder I felt like someone was questioning me when I was unconscious. Strangely, I was conversing with that person, yet do not remember anything I said, and also have no idea what that person said to me.”

“Turns out, the person conversing with me was actually you, senior.”

At that moment, Chu Feng came to a sudden realization.

“Haha. Of course it was me.”

Old Freak Tang burst into loud laughter.

“Chu Feng, my daughter is pretty decent, no?” Old Freak Tang asked.

“She is pretty decent,” said Chu Feng.

“Then what do you think about taking her as your wife?” asked Old Freak Tang.

“Ah? Senior, that wouldn’t do, no?” said Chu Feng.

“What’s this? You don’t fancy my daughter, don’t think that she’s a match for you?” asked Old Freak Tang.

“Senior, that is not this junior’s implication at all. Song Ge is a very good woman. She is also very outstanding. However, I’ve only considered her a friend and have never had that sort of feeling for her,” said Chu Feng.

“Feelings are things that can be nurtured with time,” said Old Freak Tang.

“Senior, for some feelings, they are determined the moment people meet. They are very difficult to nurture,” said Chu Feng.

“If you are to marry my daughter, I will teach you the curse techniques that you wish to know.”

“Trust me. No matter what sort of curse your friend might be inflicted with, as long as you learn my curse techniques, you will be able to lift that curse.”

“You should also be able to tell that I am going to die soon. I am unable to personally go and lift the curse on your friend. Furthermore, I also do not have a successor to my techniques.”

“The best method would be for you to personally learn my curse techniques and lift your friend’s curse on your own,” Old Freak Tang said to Chu Feng.

“Senior, this sort of thing cannot be forced,” said Chu Feng.

“You’re refusing? In that case, you can scram, the farther the better. Before my death, I will destroy my curse techniques. Don’t think that you’ll be able to gain them after my death.” Old Freak Tang turned hostile faster than the flip of a book’s page.

“Senior, although I am unable to marry Song Ge, I am... able to take Song Ge as my older sister,” said Chu Feng.

“Take your grandma and fuck off! Scram immediately!”

Old Freak Tang’s face turned purple with anger. Then, he waved his sleeve and unleashed his oppressive might.

He actually used his oppressive might to force Chu Feng out of his smithy.

Chapter 3798 - Song Ge's Rival

Chu Feng sat outside the entrance to the smithy with a look of worry written on his face.

He had put forth so much effort and did all those things because he wanted Old Freak Tang to help him remove Bai Liluo's curse.

However, Chu Feng truly did not have any romantic feelings for Song Ge. It was even more of an impossibility for him to marry her for the sake of obtaining curse techniques. If he were to do that, he would be harming both Song Ge and himself.

However, with Old Freak Tang's personality, he might really end up destroying his curse techniques.

This made things very difficult for Chu Feng.

He sighed. "I can only hope that Old Freak Tang is not that stubborn; hope that he doesn't destroy the curse techniques, and instead teaches them to Song Ge."

Chu Feng felt very helpless. Submitting to fate was the thing he detested doing the most. However, at that moment he had no choice but to do so.

As such, Chu Feng could only wait...

He could only wait for Old Freak Tang and Song Ge to meet in two days.

Two days later. Chu Feng arrived at the Void Cleanse Monastery ahead of time.

"Is this Fate-changing Bell actually this famous?"

When Chu Feng arrived at the location of the Fate-changing Bell, he was somewhat flabbergasted.

The reason for that was because the plaza the Fate-changing Bell was in was completely packed with people. It seemed like all the elders and disciples of the Void Cleanse Monastery had arrived there.

There stood a woman before the Fate-changing Bell.

That woman was somewhat good-looking. However, she had a slightly crafty look to her face, and did not belong to the type that Chu Feng was fond of.

That woman was also an elder of the Void Cleanse Monastery. Her age was similar to Song Ge's. Her cultivation was also identical to Song Ge's; that of a rank one Heavenly Immortal.

She stood before the Fate-changing Bell and seemed to be waiting for something.

She gave off a very imposing air, and seemed like the queen of the entire Void Cleanse Monastery.

From the discussions of the bystanders nearby, Chu Feng learned that the woman was named Zuo Ying.

Like Song Ge, Zuo Ying was an influential figure in the Void Cleanse Monastery due to her good looks and exceptional talent.

She was also Song Ge's rival.

In recent days, she had been competing against Song Ge for the Void Cleanse Monastery's outer sect's head elder position.

Originally, Song Ge and Zuo Ying were completely equal in terms of both martial cultivation and ability. The Void Cleanse Monastery was also unable to make a decision between the two of them.

Feeling helpless, they could only consider other alternatives. As for the alternative they had decided upon, it was by means of a popular vote.

Although Song Ge and Zuo Ying were completely equal in all other aspects, Song Ge was much more popular than Zuo Ying.

Although Song Ge was also an ice-cold beauty in the Void Cleanse Monastery, she was willing to help others in all sorts of things. Because of that, the crowd was more fond of her.

However, at the moment when the outcome was determined, Zuo Ying's father suddenly arrived at the Void Cleanse Monastery.

It turned out that Zuo Ying's father was a Martial Immortal-level expert. Furthermore, he possessed the cultivation of rank three Martial Immortal.

Most importantly, Zuo Ying's father did not belong to any sect, and was willing to join the Void Cleanse Monastery as a nominal elder.

However, Zuo Ying's father gave a condition. That is, he demanded that his daughter become the outer sect's head elder.

One should know that the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster was only a rank four Martial Immortal-level cultivator.

A rank three Martial Immortal-level cultivator was willing to join their Void Cleanse Monastery. Naturally, that was something that the Void Cleanse Monastery sought.

Thus, after Zuo Ying's father gave the demand, the Void Cleanse Monastery did not hesitate in the slightest, and handed the position of the outer sect's head elder to Zuo Ying.

Furthermore, they decided to publicly recognize Zuo Ying as the outer sect's head elder on that particular day.

Furthermore, the person appointing Zuo Ying her title was none other than her father.

This was the reason why there were so many people gathered here.

The Void Cleanse Monastery was giving face to Zuo Ying's father, and deliberately ordering their people to be there.

Upon learning about the matter, Chu Feng realized why Song Ge was somewhat unwilling when she learned that he wanted to meet her there.

It turned out, such a special event was occurring there on the same day.

At the same time, Chu Feng understood why Old Freak Tang insisted on recognizing Song Ge as his daughter at that place and time.

Old Freak Tang must've known about this matter. That was why he wanted to stand up for her.

"Look! Isn't that Song Ge?"

Suddenly, a disturbance occurred among the crowd. Song Ge had appeared.

“She actually came? I’d thought that she would not come here today.”

“Alas. Elder Song Ge’s tolerance is truly strong. If I were in her shoes, I would definitely not come. After all, it will be truly too sullen to be here today.”

“There’s nothing that can be done. After all, Elder Zuo Ying has such a powerful father.”

The crowd immediately engaging in spirited discussions upon Song Ge’s arrival.

There were people that were sympathetic toward Song Ge and also people that ridiculed her. All sorts of things were said nonstop.

As for Song Ge, perhaps because she was afraid that Chu Feng would not be able to see her, she had deliberately stood at a very obvious location.

Even when rumors were assailing her ears like a torrential storm, she remained unmoved, and continued to resist everything.

Although Song Ge was unaffected by the crowd’s discussions, the place where she stood was simply too eye-catching. Because of that, Zuo Ying became displeased.

“Elder Song Ge, you are truly impressive. Those who don’t know might even believe the main character here today to be Elder Song Ge,” Zuo Ying said to Song Ge with a mocking tone.

“Elder Zuo Ying, congratulations.”

Song Ge did not refute Zuo Ying. Instead, she smiled at her.

Facing such a Song Ge, Zuo Ying felt that her ruthless punch had landed on a pile of cotton. This caused her even greater displeasure.

However, as Song Ge had even offered her congratulations, it was unsuitable for her to say anything else.

Thus, she could only forcibly swallow the displeasure in her heart.

She thought to herself, ‘In the future, I will be the outer sect’s head elder. As for you, Song Ge, you will only be a common elder of the outer sect. Since

you'll be working for me, prepare to suffer. I will slowly settle our previous debt with you.'

After thinking that, Zuo Ying's feeling of displeasure eased a lot.

"Elder Zuo Ying, why did you arrive so early? It's still not time yet."

Suddenly, a voice was heard.

Following that, a group of people appeared from the sky and landed in the plaza.

Seeing those people, everyone present felt deep veneration.

The reason for that was because those people were the upper echelons of the Void Cleanse Monastery. As for the person who had spoken earlier, he was the Void Cleanse Monastery's strongest expert, their headmaster.

Normally, as he was the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster, he simply did not have to greet an elder from the outer sect.

However, not only had the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster greeted Zuo Ying, but his tone was also very good-natured.

The people from the Void Cleanse Monastery all knew that their headmaster was not normally such a good-natured person. novE-lb(1n

Furthermore, they also all knew that it was all due to Zuo Ying's father that their headmaster was acting in such a manner.

Chapter 3799 - Useless Loyalty

"Lord Headmaster, Zuo Ying would not dare neglect such a major event."

"Because of that, I've come very early," Zuo Ying replied with a clasped fist.

"Very well. Sure enough, our choice was correct. It is our Void Cleanse Monastery's blessing to be able to obtain a talent like Elder Zuo Ying," the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster said.

"Everyone, you've waited a long time."

Right at that moment, a resounding voice suddenly exploded in midair. Then, a figure descended from the sky and landed in the plaza.

That person was Zuo Ying's father.

"Elder Zuo, we haven't waited long. It is actually still not time yet. If we insist on being precise, you've also arrived early."

"However, that is fine. Since you've arrived, we can begin ahead of time," said the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster.

"Headmaster, I seem to remember that I still haven't agreed to become your Void Cleanse Monastery's nominal elder?"

"Thus, it shouldn't be up to me, an outsider, to appoint Zuo Ying as the outer sect's head elder. Instead, you all should be making the appointment yourselves," said Zuo Ying's father.

Once he said those words, the expressions of the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster and elders all changed somewhat.

"Elder Zuo, what are you talking about? Weren't you the one who stated that you would join our Void Cleanse Monastery?"

"Furthermore, I've also personally handed you our Void Cleanse Monastery elder's title plate," the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster said with great confusion.

"If accepting the title plate is equivalent to agreeing, then I will return this title plate to you."

Zuo Ying's father raised his hand, and a title plate was tossed towards the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster.

That title plate was precisely the Void Cleanse Monastery's elder's title plate.

"What are you...?"

At that moment, the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster was completely at a loss. At the same time, he found himself in a very awkward situation.

It was clearly a day of celebration. Why would things turn out this way?

Had it been before, he would've burst into a rage already. However, their Void Cleanse Monastery needed Zuo Ying's father to strengthen their battle power. Thus, he decided to restrain himself.

However, this matter must be settled. Merely, he was confused as to what the problem was.

Feeling helpless, the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster turned a questioning gaze to Zuo Ying.

"Father, what are you doing?"

Zuo Ying felt slightly unhappy. Even she was confused as to why her father had done such a thing.

What her father had done would make things very difficult for her in the Void Cleanse Monastery. ~~novE)l(1n~~

"Zuo Ying, your father will not become an elder to a sect that bullies you," said Zuo Ying's father.

"Bully? Elder Zuo, what are you talking about? Could there be some sort of misunderstanding? No one in our Void Cleanse Monastery has ever bullied Zuo Ying." said the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster.

"No one?"

"Humph. Are you all planning to discriminate in favor of that woman that much?"

Zuo Ying's father let out a sneer. Then, he pointed a finger at Song Ge.

"Me?"

It was not only the bystanders that were completely puzzled. Even Song Ge herself was completely puzzled.

"That woman and my daughter are both elders of your Void Cleanse Monastery."

"My daughter showed great concern and care for her, and considered her a close friend. Yet, she plotted against my daughter multiple times using all sorts of despicable means behind her back."

“My daughter has suffered this sort of bullying, yet you all pretend that you don’t know about it?”

“You actually dare to ask me if it might be a misunderstanding?”

Zuo Ying’s father pointed to Song Ge as he questioned the Void Cleanse Monastery’s headmaster.

“Senior, when did I ever bully your daughter? Where did you hear such things?” Song Ge asked Zuo Ying’s father.

“You shut up! This is no place for you to speak!”

Zuo Ying’s father angrily shouted down Song Ge.

His powerful oppressive might pushed Song Ge back repeatedly. In the end, she lost her balance and fell to the ground.

Seeing that, Chu Feng immediately clenched his fists.

However, he did not reveal himself.

Chu Feng knew that it was still not time. At the very least, this was not the day for him to stand up for Song Ge.

.....

After pushing Song Ge down, Zuo Ying’s father turned his gaze to the Void Cleanse Monastery’s headmaster again. “I am asking you, are you all going to handle this matter or not?”

Hearing those words, the Void Cleanse Monastery’s headmaster came to a realization.

He was not the only one that reached a sudden realization. Many others present also came to a realization.

Zuo Ying’s father was putting forth a demand.

He was actually strong enough to become a Supreme Elder of the Void Cleanse Monastery.

However, he had a condition: taking care of Song Ge.

Everyone knew what sort of person Song Ge was. Although she was very cold and detached, she would always be there if she was truly needed, and would help with any sort of problem.

Disregarding everything else and considering merely her identity as an elder, Song Ge was most definitely a very good elder in the eyes of the people of the Void Cleanse Monastery.

Since many people knew what sort of character she had, they knew that Zuo Ying's father was deliberately creating trouble.

However, no one dared to expose him.

After all, compared to Song Ge, the status of Zuo Ying's father was simply much too strong.

"Elder Zuo, this is indeed our Void Cleanse Monastery's negligence."

"Say, how do you wish to punish this person?" the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster asked.

"Punish?"

Hearing that, Song Ge was immediately stunned. Disbelief filled her eyes.

The Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster was actually planning to punish her?

But she clearly didn't do anything.

"Lord Headmaster, I, Song Ge, joined the Void Cleanse Monastery at the age of ten. I've been a disciple of the Void Cleanse Monastery for all these years, and have remained faithful and true to the Void Cleanse Monastery the entire time. Never have I once done anything wrong."

"Are you really going to punish me today after hearing the words of an outsider without any proof?"

"I am an elder of the Void Cleanse Monastery. Shouldn't you be protecting me instead?"

"He has wrongly accused me. Yet, not only did you not speak out for me, but you're actually going to punish me?"

Song Ge's eyes were watery as she asked those questions.

Wronged. She felt truly wronged.

However, she did not cry. She was still resisting her tears. She was still trying to set herself to be a model. Thus, she must show that she was strong.

"Look at this! She has clearly done all sorts of evil, yet she's still pretending as if she's the one suffering the grievance!"

"However, she is still a woman. Thus, it is best to not be too excessive with her. That said, I believe that someone like her is unworthy of being an elder of the Void Cleanse Monastery." Zuo Ying's father said.

Hearing those words, the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster closed his eyes.

After a while, he opened his eyes again and asked Zuo Ying's father, "Elder Zuo, are you willing to join our Void Cleanse Monastery if we punish this person?"

"If Lord Headmaster is capable of distinguishing right from wrong, I, Zuo, am willing to serve the Void Cleanse Monastery for the rest of my life." Zuo Ying's father actually bowed respectfully to the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster as he said those words.

Even his attitude had changed from one of rudeness to one of respectfulness.

"Men! Retrieve Song Ge's title plate and expel her from our Void Cleanse Monastery!" the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster said loudly.

Before interest, the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster had made his decision decisively. He had decided to give up on Song Ge.

Once his words were spoken, someone immediately arrived before Song Ge and forcibly retrieved her title plate.

Chapter 3800 - The Arrival Of An Utmost Exalted

"Move aside. Get away from me. I've done no wrong. Why are you all doing this? Why?"

Song Ge struggled violently. However, her struggles were completely useless. Her hands were completely held by that person. She was powerless to stop him from taking the Void Cleanse Monastery's title plate from her.

Finally, Song Ge was unable to contain herself. The tears in her eyes began to flow, flooding her cheeks.

She truly felt wronged. She was a genius. Over the years, there were countless sects that had sought her out and asked her to join them.

However, regardless of which sect they were, all of them were declined by Song Ge.

She believed that as long as she devoted herself to the Void Cleanse Monastery, they would definitely not let her down.

However, what happened at that moment had broadened her horizons and opened her eyes.

It turned out that her loyalty and devotion were completely worthless compared to the Void Cleanse Monastery's self-interest.

"Why? Why? Why are you all treating me this way?"

Song Ge shouted herself hoarse. Weeping sounds filled with the grievance of injustice resonated throughout the plaza.

Hearing Song Ge's cries, Chu Feng felt very pained. In addition to Chu Feng, many elders and disciples of the Void Cleanse Monastery also felt extremely pained.

However, they were all powerless to change anything. Furthermore, no one dared to try to change it. In fact, no one dared to even plead for leniency for Song Ge.

"Why? Because you've done all sorts of evil deeds."

"Men! Drive her out!" the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster said loudly as he pointed to Song Ge.

"I shall see who dares touch her!!!"

Suddenly, a voice exploded in the sky.

"Rumble~~~"

After that voice was heard, the surroundings started to tremble violently.

Many people found themselves unable to stand firm. One by one, they fell to the ground, rolling repeatedly.

“What was that? What just happened?”

Merely a furious shout managed to frighten many of the people present to the point where they turned pale.

Even though they'd all managed to hear that voice clearly and understood the intention behind those words, the might displayed by that voice was simply too terrifying.

Because of that, they felt that voice to not be the voice of a person, but rather a voice signaling the arrival of doomsday.

“Buzz~~~”

The next instant, thunder began to rumble as violent winds swept forth. An extremely powerful oppressive might emerged from the sky.

When that oppressive might appeared, the people present all felt as though they'd fallen into hell.

Too powerful. That oppressive might was simply too powerful.

The disciples, elders and even the Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster and Zuo Ying's father were all able to sense how terrifying that oppressive might was.

That oppressive might not only surpassed the Martial Immortal realm of cultivation, but it seemed to have even surpassed the Exalted Realm.

They were able to tell that the person who possessed that oppressive might was capable of destroying all of them, body and soul, with a single thought.

Most importantly, a figure had appeared together with that oppressive might. That person landed on the plaza. It was Old Freak Tang.

“We pay our respects to Milord.”

“Our Void Cleanse Monastery had no idea that Milord would arrive, and failed to properly receive you. I hope that Milord will forgive us.” The Void Cleanse Monastery's headmaster immediately knelt upon seeing Old Freak Tang.

Seeing that, the others from the Void Cleanse Monastery also knelt uniformly. Even Zuo Ying's father did the same.

In fact, even Song Ge was so terrified that she promptly knelt as well.

Like the others, she had never experienced such a powerful oppressive might in her entire life.

However, right after Song Ge knelt, a powerful arm forcibly helped her up.

She turned around and saw that it was Chu Feng.

“Asura?”

“Asura, you’ve come?”

Song Ge immediately revealed a joyous look on her face after seeing Chu Feng. She hurriedly wiped away her tears, fearing that Chu Feng would discover that she had suffered grievance.

“You should leave quickly. Someone extraordinary has arrived in this place.”

Soon, Song Ge pushed Chu Feng away and urged him to leave quickly.

She was afraid that he would be implicated by the unexpected crisis.

“Don’t be afraid. Take a close look at who that person is. Do you not know him?” Chu Feng said to Song Ge.

Hearing those words, Song Ge revealed a look of puzzlement.

After all, she knew very well that she simply did not know someone that powerful.

Though confused, Song Ge still cast her gaze over.

“Uncle Tang?”

Upon looking, Song Ge’s expression changed enormously.

That person was also a resident of Autumnfall Village. He was someone who had seen her grow up. It was impossible for her to not know about Old Freak Tang.

“What? Uncle Tang?”

“Song Ge, do not be rude!”

The Void Cleanse Monastery’s headmaster immediately berated Song Ge upon hearing her address Old Freak Tang as Uncle Tang.

“You shut up!”

Right after the Void Cleanse Monastery’s headmaster said those words, he received a furious shout from Old Freak Tang.

The furious shout brought forth a strong gale that blew the Void Cleanse Monastery’s headmaster several meters away.

Even though the Void Cleanse Monastery’s headmaster was uninjured, he was shivering all over and did not stand back up. Instead, he directly knelt and began to kowtow to Old Freak Tang. “Milord, please spare me, please spare

me. This lowly one had no intention of offending you. Milord, please spare me.”

“Listen carefully, since she is no longer someone of your Void Cleanse Monastery, none of you are qualified to berate her.”

“Furthermore, even if she were still someone from your Void Cleanse Monastery, none of you would be qualified to berate her.”

Each and every word spoken by Old Freak Tang was thunderous. His voice was so strong and powerful that it ripped through space and the void.

The people from the Void Cleanse Monastery all shivered in fear.

In fact, it was not only the people of the Void Cleanse Monastery. Even Song Ge had turned pale with fright.

She had never seen such powerful oppressive might in her entire life.

She felt that Old Freak Tang simply did not resemble a human. Instead, he was more like a god.

A god that could determine the life and death of another person with a single expression, a single thought.

Even though that was clearly the Uncle Tang she'd known for many years, she no longer dared to speak to him.

It was only at that moment that she realized that Old Freak Tang was actually such a terrifying existence.

“Ge'er, don't be afraid. I'm here today to uphold justice for you.”

“No one will be able to bully you again.”

“After all, I, your father, am an Utmost Exalted.”

“Not to mention this bunch of trash, no one in the entire Reincarnation Upper Realm will be able to bully my daughter.”

Old Freak Tang walked over to Song Ge. He appeared to be very emotional. As he spoke, tears could be seen seeping out the corners of his eyes.

However, his tone was very gentle. He was afraid, afraid that he might injure his daughter.

“Utmost Exalted? He's an Utmost Exalted?”

“Heavens! He's actually a legendary Utmost Exalted-level expert?!”

The people from the Void Cleanse Monastery became even more terrified upon hearing the words 'Utmost Exalted.'

To them, Utmost Exalted-level existences were simply akin to gods.

"Thank you, Uncle Tang..."

Seeing that Old Freak Tang had come to stand up for her, Song Ge was pleasantly surprised, and overwhelmed by his favor.

However, all of a sudden, her expression turned stern. She stood there dumbstruck with her eyes tightly focused on Old Freak Tang.

"Uncle Tang, what did you say earlier? You said... you are my what?" Song Ge asked with a trembling voice.